

Chapter 1101 - The Saint Look

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The spatial power was not irresistible. Once the opponent's power was strong enough, it could shake the space and resolve the spatial attack.

The spatial structure in the Blue Dragon Void World was fragile, so Zhang Ruochen could take advantage of it.

After the Giant Blood Formation being torn up, some strong cultivated Half-Saints retreated right away from the broken space.

Zhang Ruochen located the Ninth Level Half-Saint and followed him. He played the Luo Water Fist Technique.

“Heavenly River Break Up.”

After the fist, thunder and wind rustling was heard in the whole oasis. The more than hundreds of meters long river of Holy Qi gushed out and hit the back of the Ninth Level Half-Saint after revolving around Zhang Ruochen.

Bang!

The blood wings of the Ninth Level Half-Saint's back immediately broke and splashed blood.

Moaning was heard in his mouth. He fell from mid-air. All bones on his back were crushed and organs broken, but he didn't die.

The higher an Immortal Vampire's cultivation was, the stronger his life would be and the less likely it was that he could be killed.

Holy Qi flowed on Zhang Ruochen's body. He chased after him like a killing god and threw the second fist to smash the Ninth Level Half-Saint's body. And at last, he killed him.

Then, Zhang Ruochen moved on to rush to the blood pond. While he fought, the swollen feeling faded out. He was extremely excited.

He had a feeling that if he kept this condition, he would soon crack his state.

The other three Giant Blood Formations revolved quickly and stopped Zhang Ruochen from three different directions.

Prince Qingtian frowned and passed three sound waves to stop the commanders of the three Giant Blood Formation, asking them to retreat and not confront Zhang Ruochen.

The hard lesson which caused dozens of powerful figures of Qingtian Tribe made Prince Qingtian realize that it cost them dearly to use the Giant Combined Formations to deal with Zhang Ruochen in the Blue Dragon Void World.

If Zhang Ruochen ripped the space again to go through the Blood Formation, it would upset Prince Qingtian.

Gui Wu saw that Prince Qingtian was upset and stood out to say, "Your Highness, I want to fight."

The big man with two heads and four arms, Chang Wan, also stepped forward and said, "I also want to meet the so-called Time and Space Descendant."

Prince Qingtian nodded and said, "You two fight together and be careful. Zhang Ruochen could stop a dozen beast kings. He is not weak."

It's better to use powerful figures of his state to deal with Zhang Ruochen. In this case, the cost would be cut down to the lowest.

Gui Wu and Chang Wan were both powerful figures on the Half-Saint Outer Rank. One ranked No.92, the other No.154.

The power of the two powerful figures had surpassed beast kings and could fight some weak lower saints and didn't fail after dozens of rounds.

“Zhang Ruochen has used the power of time and space to resist the beast kings. If confronting them, the beast kings could have smashed him into pieces with one move.” Chang Wan didn’t take Zhang Ruochen seriously.

Ranking No.154 on the Half-Saint Outer Rank, Chang Wan was surely a figure who could fight anyone under the state of saints.

Only the top ten super powerful people on the Half-Saint Rank and the Half-Saint Outer Rank would make him scared.

All Giant Blood Formations and Small Blood Formations retreated and made an area of more than 300 meters wide.

Hundreds of top figures of Immortal Vampires stood inside the Formation. They formed a circle to envelope Zhang Ruochen in its center.

Above the three Giant Blood Formations, three Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons hovered over each one of them. The three strands of Destruction of the Thousand-patterns given out had cut down the escape of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the center and saw thick blood mist in the surrounding like four walls of blood red mist, connecting the earth with the sky.

Zoom!

Chang Wan walked out one of the mist walls. He was about 3 meters tall and had two heads and four arms. With each step, the earth quaked violently and rings of blood light spread up.

“There is a road to heaven and no door to hell, but you choose to intrude into the hell rather than go to heaven. Zhang Ruochen, do you really think that nobody could kill you?”

Chang Wan’s front arms picked two black lances. He walked to Zhang Ruochen’s opposite with powerful Qi.

Zhang Ruochen glimpsed at Chang Wan and said slightly, “You are not strong enough to fight me. Only your Prince of Qingtian Tribe is qualified. Let him out.”

“Wanting to fight His Highness? You don’t deserve it. You can’t even pass me.”

Chang Wan was one of the top figures of Qingtan Tribe, strong enough to fight saints. Being looked down on by Zhang Ruochen irritated him.

After he finished his words, Chang Wan made the move. The two black lances were almost alive, putting on thick scales and gushing out lightning and blood light.

Neither of the lances was an ordinary battle weapon. The power that exploded was close to that of a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen didn't look down on Chang Wan. After all, Chang Wan ranked higher than Sikong One and Sikong Two on the Half-Saint Outer Rank. He was not weak.

A little contempt would cause his failure.

Zhang Ruochen transferred all his Holy Qi to both his arms. All 72 apertures inside his body gave out Holy light to form a mysterious pattern.

Far away, Prince Qingtian was a little surprised. He said to himself, "He is working on his body and has made such a progress."

The reason why Prince Qingtian exercised his body was that he had gotten an ancient technique, which told him to take in blood and strengthen his body in order to sanctify his body.

To sanctify his body, it would be much harder for a human than for Prince Qingtian.

Bang.

Zhang Ruochen displayed the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. When he played the Ninth Palm, he had struck Chang Wan away.

Chang Wan landed on the ground again and slid back for dozens of meters, leaving a long track.

"How can you...be so powerful..."

Chang Wan found it hard to believe. The opponent's palm was extremely powerful, which almost broke his arms. His ten fingers were even too painful to hold the lances tight.

He had refined a human saint before and had a strong body himself. Why did he fail so quickly?

Outside the oasis, Red Ant Beast King and Shizu Bird Beast King looked into each other's eyes and felt shocked, too.

“Compared with last time, Zhang Ruochen's power improved greatly again. I can't take many strikes of him either,” said the Red Ant Beast King.

Shizu Bird Beast King spit a long breath, and said, “Maybe only Lord Demonic Dragon, Kui Bull Beast King or Golden Armor Scorpion Beast King could suppress him.”

“If I had passed the Third Trial of Pre-Saint and obtained the Saint Look, maybe I could fight him,” said Red Ant Beast King.

Shizu Bird Beast King shook his head slightly and said, “Zhang Ruochen hadn't used Way of Sword now and the mysterious Time Power. If he gave a full strike, how powerful could he be?”

Red Ant Beast King fell into silence. After counting carefully, it finally found out that even if it passed the Third Trial of Pre-Saint and displayed the Saint Look, it couldn't win against Zhang Ruochen.

All human monks felt thrilled.

“With Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he could fight some weak lower saints,” Wan Huayu said silently.

In the oasis.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly felt the strong danger. The feeling was like being stared at by a venomous snake. Once it bit him, he would die definitely.

Zoom!

Displaying Spatial Move, Zhang Ruochen slid to his right for 60 meters.

At the same time, a cloud of black mist flew out from the ground. It wielded the sword to chop the shadow of Zhang Ruochen in two.

“Invisible Concealing Art.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes sank. He touched the Spatial Ring and picked out the Ancient Abyss Sword. He patted on the sword and threw it out.

With Zhang Ruochen’s current state, a random strike would be terrible enough to explode the power of Sword Five.

The Ancient Abyss Sword penetrated the black mist like a black light.

Puff!

Drops of blood came out from the black mist.

Gui Wu made a dumb sound and showed his real body. He looked scared and retreated quickly to keep a long distance from Zhang Ruochen.

The Ancient Abyss Sword had passed through his belly, leaving a bloody hole and turning the whole belly blood red.

He had wanted to assassinate Zhang Ruochen, but he was hurt by Zhang Ruochen. Zhang Ruochen was terribly quick and could fight him back.

Chang Wan stood up again and turned his body to face Zhang Ruochen with the other head.

The head was very old. Both the face and the arms were bony and yellowish brown, containing no water.

But it was the body of a human saint. It could burst saint power.

The way Chang Wan could rank No.154 on the Half-Saint Outer Rank was he had refined the body of a saint and could burst part of his strength.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’ve enraged me,” Chang Wan scolded.

Zhang Ruochen said, “So what? You can’t fight me.”

“You dare to look down on me. I have to show you my real power.”

Blood red threads gushed out from Chang Wan’s body. They connected with each other like cobwebs and finally condensed

into a more than 100 meter tall saint look.

The shape of the Saint Look was the same as Chang Wan's look, having two heads and four arms.

But the Qi given out by the Saint Look was holy, like statues placed in temples, urging people to bow to it.

“You have exercised the Saint Look.”

Zhang Ruochen looked grave at last. He called the Ancient Abyss Sword back and pinched in his hands.

Only after a monk passed the Third Trial of Pre-Saint could he display a Saint Look.

Once the Saint Look was completed, it would only take the monk a little longer to become a saint.

In other words, Chang Wan had reached the good end of the Pre-Saint and was definitely going to become a saint. He only needed to take the last step.

When the Saint Lady edited the Half-Saint Outer Rank, Chang Wan hadn't yet passed the Third Pre-Saint, so he had ranked only No.154.

And now, the rank of Chang Wan must be enough for him to be among the Top 50 on the Half-Saint Outer Rank.

Chapter 1102 - The Fight between Two Crown Princes

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Chang Wan must have passed the Life-Death Trial of Pre-Saint and practiced the Saint Look. Zhang Ruochen is in danger now!”

Human monks outside the oasis all worried about Zhang Ruochen.

The Three Trials of Pre-Saints, “Four-Nine Trial, Eight-Nine Trial, Life-Death Trial,” were more dangerous one after another.

Especially the last Life-Death Trial. More than half the people would die from it. Without the strong accumulation, who dared to try to pass it?

After Chang Wan passed the Life-Death Trial, he would have broken the last limit and would become a saint.

All living creatures envied him and found him lucky to become a saint and rise above them.

“The Saint Look is made of the Rules of Saintly Way, Zhang Ruochen can’t resist it,” said Red Ant Beast King.

Red Ant Beast King once fought a Pre-Saint who had practiced the Saint Look. A strike of it almost killed it.

The more than 100-meter-tall Saint Look gave out dazzling blood red brilliance, like a Giant Deity King landing on the Blue Dragon Void World.

Space shook violently around the Saint Look, making layers of invisible ripples.

“Go to hell.”

Chang Wan condensed a handprint and attacked the head of Zhang Ruochen.

The Saint Look also reached out a thick arm to pat down like a blood red mountain of five fingers, landing from the sky with thick Rules of Saintly Way.

Even the living creatures standing outside the oasis felt the Qi of icy coldness blowing them backwards.

Zhang Ruochen shrank his eyes. He held the Ancient Abyss Sword in his hands and poured Holy Qi in it to activate the thousands of inscriptions in the sword and the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns.

After the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns burst out, energy waves were formed and spread up.

Luckily, the three Giant Blood Formations arranged by Immortal Vampires had activated their own Destruction of the Thousand-patterns to stop the energy wave of the Saint Look and the Ancient Abyss Sword. Otherwise, the whole oasis would have been gone.

Zhang Ruochen waved the Ancient Abyss Sword to crack into the palmprint of the Saint Look.

Boom.

The earth underneath Zhang Ruochen’s feet broke into pieces. Large amounts of dust gushed up, and the powerful Qi spread out to shake the four blood red mist walls.

Chang Wan scolded, “Do you think that you can use the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns to stop my Saint Look? With your strength, how many times can you display Destruction of the Thousand-patterns?”

The Saint Look condensed power again. It pinched its fingers into a fist to hit below.

Fire came out of the fist, giving off burning energy like a falling aerolite. Before it fell on the ground, the power waves bursting from it shook the ground.

Zhang Ruochen transferred spatial power to chop a spatial crevice with one hand and hit the fist thrown by the Saint Look.

Bang!

The strong collision cracked the spatial structure.

With the spatial crevice at the center, some thin patterns appeared like broken glass.

The space collapsed.

Now Zhang Ruochen could no longer control the spatial crevice, he had to retreat, in case he would be involved in the void.

After a breath, the broken space became complete again.

Normally, Chang Wan couldn't break the space, even in the Blue Dragon Void World.

But his palm print of Saint Look had hit the spatial crevice, which was the weakest spot of the space, and cracked it.

Seeing this, surprise flashed in Prince Qingtian's eyes. He smiled and said, "I see."

Through the fight between Chang Wan and Zhang Ruochen, he finally found the way to crack Zhang Ruochen's spatial moves.

"Chang Wan, come back."

Prince Qingtian rose from his seat slowly. All 122 apertures of his body were opened, giving off bright light, as if there was a starry sky inside his body.

He stepped on a long bridge of blood Qi and walked above Zhang Ruochen, Chang Wan and Gui Wu, giving out brilliant Qi, as if the world was under his control.

Chang Wan said, "Your Highness, give me more time, I will surely take Zhang Ruochen."

Prince Qingtian shook his head slightly, and said, "We can't wait that long and must end this fight shortly. Let me deal with him!"

Prince Qingtian had figured out Zhang Ruochen's intention. Human monks and savage beasts outside the oasis should have passed the word out. In a short time, beast kings and Pre-Saints would come here to deal with Qingtian Tribe.

He had to kill Zhang Ruochen before it happened.

Gui Wu and Chang Wan retreated to two critical spots. If Zhang Ruochen wanted to escape, they would run and stop him at once.

Wan Huayu stared at Prince Qingtian standing in midair, taking a breath. "I've heard that Prince Qingtian almost sanctified his body. I don't expect that he has sanctified 122 apertures."

It was always a legend that human bodies could be sanctified. After the Middle Ages, few people could accomplish it.

It was said that once the human body became sanctified, it would be more powerful than Sword Saints, who were called the best at attack.

Wan Huayu knew a little about "body sanctified," as her father, Wan Zhaoyi had practiced the sanctified body and was undefeatable in his state. It was a secret that people didn't know.

Only the other four people on the Five Heroes List could compete with Wan Zhaoyi. Few of the rest of the saints of his state could take one move of Wan Zhaoyi.

Prince Qingtian had sanctified 122 apertures. His power must be unimaginable. Maybe only Master Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon could win against him with body strength.

"It has become like this. Why doesn't Zhang Ruochen retreat? What's he doing there?"

All human monks felt confused. Zhang Ruochen had a chance to flee before...why did he stay in the camp of Qingtian Tribe?

Now he was totally surrounded. If he was caught by Prince Qingtian, even if he wanted to retreat, he couldn't.

What they didn't know was that Zhang Ruochen had reached a critical moment of improving his state. Holy Qi operated around his whole body rapidly, and rumbling noises sounded in his lower abdomen.

But it was always a little from cracking the last gate.

“I can't retreat. I have to fight. Only if I can push myself to the extreme can I cultivate the potential of my body to reach the Eighth Level Half-Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth. Flames gushed out from his pores to envelope his whole body.

Chi Chi.

Soil couldn't stand the high temperature of Zhang Ruochen's body and turned dark, beginning to melt.

“Zhang Ruochen, I don't know why you didn't run away. But now that we've come here, you can stay here forever!”

The voice of Prince Qingting was indifferent. But in the next moment, the Qi of him turned cold and ruthless. He turned into a blood red shooting light which fell from the sky, and hit above Zhang Ruochen's head.

Ah!

Ho!

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms to show the giant shadows of Blue Dragon and Blue Elephant, as if the Taigu Divine Dragon and Hell Divine Elephant showed up and collided with the palm of Prince Qingtian.

Bang.

The handprint of Prince Qingtian was very powerful and left a 30 meter long handprint in the ground.

The handprint sank in the earth and pushed Zhang Ruochen in it as well.

Looking from the ground, only a black handprint pit could be seen.

Nobody knew how deep the pit was.

Immortal Vampires, humans, and savage beasts were all shocked. Luckily, all living creatures onsite were powerful figures. Otherwise, they would have been frightened to lay their bellies on the ground.

Wan Huayu used her spiritual power to detect, and found that Zhang Ruochen and Prince Qingtian had sank more than 100 meters deep. The two strands of power still collided with each other.

There were crevices showing in the dozens of kilometers long oasis. The whole ground was about to crack.

More than 130 meters deep, Zhang Ruochen still raised his arms to resist Prince Qingtian's palms. His feet stood in the hard rocks, and finally he stopped falling.

Zhang Ruochen's organs were severely hurt and he kept spitting blood.

"You are powerful as you can resist my strike."

Prince Qingtian used his palm power to suppress Zhang Ruochen, then poured Holy Qi to his eyes. His pupils turned into two scarlet red fireballs.

Two fire columns gushed out from the pupils and hit Zhang Ruochen's head.

At the critical moment, Zhang Ruochen shook off Prince Qingtian's suppression and displayed a spatial move to rush to the ground.

Chi Chi.

Two light columns hit the rock layer in the bottom and melted the rock into boiling magma.

"He can display an art move like spatial move. It seems my suppression wasn't great enough."

Prince Qingtian smiled and used a body move to run out of the ground.

When Prince Qingtian was about to get out from the ground, Zhang Ruochen ripped the space. He played three dozens of meters long spatial crevices and chopped him.

Prince Qingtian didn't move, but stepped forward. He threw both his palms and left two giant palm prints to collide with the three spatial crevices.

Boom.

The two hand prints and three spatial crevices broke at the same time and smashed the space around into a chaotic belt.

Even Zhang Ruochen had to retreat in such a situation.

“Your spatial attack won't work on me, Zhang Ruochen.”

Prince Qingtian made his way around the broken Spatial Belt and appeared on top of Zhang Ruochen. He hit another palm and made a series of explosive sounds. His speed was nine times faster than the speed of sound, leaving no chance for Zhang Ruochen to display his spatial move.

Zhang Ruochen had to reach out his arms to take the strike.

Bang.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he was hit by an iron mountain. He couldn't stop himself from sinking backwards. He kept falling until he hit the rock at the bottom, more than 100 meters deep.

Mud kept piling up on the ground, and soon formed a small mountain.

Outside the oasis, all human monks' faces lost color. They realized that the worst thing might have happened. Was Zhang Ruochen still alive?

Prince Qingtian was too strong. Even if an army launched a fight on him, he would destroy them as well.

Chapter 1103 - Kill Anyone In The Way

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Immortal Vampires of the Qingtian Tribe all laughed in excitement. They thought that the result was set. The human Time and Space Descendant would definitely die.

They might even be able to drink his blood and improve their physical bodies.

“A legendary human is about to die. I really anticipate how delicious his blood must be.”

Princess Yanxin licked her red lips. Her pretty eyes burned brightly.

Blood Saint Zuotian had his arms behind his back casually. Smiling, he said, “As expected, only Your Majesty can kill Zhang Ruochen cleanly.”

Chang Wan lifted his arms. Every inch of his skin shone with bloody light. “If I had more time, I could suppress Zhang Ruochen too,” he muttered.

Princess Yanxin glanced at Chang Wan with disdain. “You’re shameless enough to say that? You’ve already gone through the Saint Trials three times, but you can’t even take down a Seventh Level Half-Saint. You were personally named as the future king by Blood Emperor Qingtian, but you can’t even do that?”

If others dared to humiliate him like this, Chang Wan would definitely punch them. However, this was Princess Yanxin. He couldn’t attack. Princess Yanxin had a huge background, but merely her abilities were enough to instill fear in him.

Chang Wan felt speechless inside too. After all, when he was a Seventh Level Half-Saint, he could kill human Ninth Level Half-Saints too. However, now he'd gone through three Saint Trials and was only a step away from the Saint Realm, but he still couldn't take down a Seventh Level Half-Saint.

Was there anything more humiliating than this?

“Why are there still waves of vitality from underground? Did he not die yet?” Blood Saint Zuotian sensed something was wrong. His forehead furrowed deeply.

Chang Wan was very confident in Crown Prince Qingtian. “With the Crown Prince's abilities, killing Zhang Ruochen is as easy as butchering a pig. There's nothing to worry—”

Kaboom!

A loud explosion came from underground. The entire space shook violently. Then a figure with an arched back flew out from the ground. He shot hundreds of feet into the air before stopping.

Everyone looked over. When they saw the figure, they were all shocked. It was Crown Prince Qingtian.

There was blood on the corner of his lips. His stomach had a bloody footprint. It was obvious that he'd been kicked into the air.

Who was strong enough to be able to hurt Crown Prince Qingtian and kick him away?

Zhang Ruochen?

Crown Prince Qingtian stood in the air with serious eyes. He stared at the dark hole below.

Five-colored light flooded out of the hole. It grew stronger until the entire oasis was filled with the chaotic five-colored light.

Footsteps sounded.

Zhang Ruochen walked calmly out of the hole. He was covered in blood, but the bloodstains were all covered by the colorful light.

Without wasting more breath, the 122 apertures of Crown Prince Qingtian all shone with brilliant light. It was like a starry sky. He unleashed all his power and slammed down with both hands at once.

Instead of dodging, Zhang Ruochen actually shot upward while uttering in his mind, Dragon Traveling Nine Days.

Roar!

A deafening dragon's roar spread for thousands of miles. An extremely long dragon shadow appeared around Zhang Ruochen. It overlapped with his palm print and crashed against Crown Prince Qingtian's handprint.

Boom!

The dark dragon shattered Crown Prince Qingtian's handprint while Zhang Ruochen's hit against him. He was thrown into the air again, tossed even higher up.

Crown Prince Qingtian spat out fresh blood. He was heavily injured.

The entire space sank into deathly silence. Everyone gaped at this scene. It was too shocking!

Crown Prince Qingtian, seventh on the Outer Rank, actually spat out blood from the hit. How did Zhang Ruochen suddenly become so powerful?

He stood calmly on the ground, but all the Vampires retreated in fear. He completely looked as if he was undefeatable. All the smiles on the Vampires' faces disappeared, replaced with looks of fear.

The Blood Ant Beast King and Shizu Bird Beast King inhaled sharply. Their scalps went numb. They immediately led their beasts to 300 miles away.

Zhang Ruochen now gave them as much pressure as the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon. If they didn't retreat far enough, they might not be able to escape once Zhang Ruochen started killing.

Wan Huayu was also shocked, but it quickly dawned on her. Smiling excitedly, she said, "I see now! Zhang Ruochen

attacked the Qingtian Tribe alone because he wanted to use Crown Prince Qingtian's pressure to reach a higher cultivation realm. Now, it seems that he's succeeded and the situation will turn now."

After learning that Zhang Ruochen had reached a new realm, all the humans were extremely excited. This meant that, other than the few Heirs, the humans had another top fighter that could terrorize the savage beasts.

Crown Prince Qingtian finally steadied himself and landed on the ground. Half of his yellow robe was torn up and his hair was messy. He no longer had the elegant and graceful composure. Eyes turning red, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, you used me as your whetstone to help you reach a higher realm. Are you feeling proud now?"

Zhang Ruochen stood across from Crown Prince Qingtian, his expression like still water. "It's not like I've suddenly become a Saint. There's nothing to be proud of. I can only say that I can finally fight with you. Hurry and use your true abilities. I don't believe that the 7th place on the Outer Rank is this weak."

"Alright! I'll give you what you want."

Before Crown Prince Qingtian acted, the power of a composite formation from the Ninth Level half-Saints within the bloody array of the Immortal Vampires controlled a tripod-shaped Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. It flew out, activating the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns and pressing down on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen glanced to the side. He gradually controlled all his Holy Qi and slapped forward. His palm crashed against the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon.

Boom.

The Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon flew sideways. It hit a blood pool in the near distance, shattering the pool. There were around 100 Vampires cultivating around the pool. When hit by the energy wave, they all let out pained cries.

Dozens of them died on the spot.

Using bare hands to force a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon away and overlook the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns was something only the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon could do before.

Everyone was terrified by this shocking scene.

“Act together and help the Crown Prince suppress Zhang Ruochen.”

Chang Wan shone with saintly light. He formed a 300-foot-tall saint image. Lifting two black spears, he attacked Zhang Ruochen first.

Next, Blood Saint Zuotian, Princess Yanxin, and Gui Wu all attacked as well.

Blood Saint Zuotian’s sleeve curled. He swept up the Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon in the blood pool. Holding it in his palm, he activated the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns and attacked Zhang Ruochen.

A red-hot furnace hovered above Princess Yanxin’s head. It also surged with the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns. The yellow-gold trees in the oasis were destroyed instantly. It became a wilderness with spewing flames.

Gui Wu’s body scattered into a cloud of black fog. He rushed into the ground and vanished. No one knew when he would rush out again and perform a fatal strike on Zhang Ruochen.

Each of the four strong figures of the Qingtian Tribe were able to counter lower Saints. It was incredible if they fought together. Even Crown Prince Qingtian would have to retreat.

Chang Wan’s attack arrived first.

His two spears had become as thick as pillars. They surged with electricity and bloody light. They stood like divine pillars in the sky and pressed down on Zhang Ruochen.

“Looking for death,” Zhang Ruochen uttered.

The Abyss Ancient Sword had appeared in Zhang Ruochen’s hand at some point. He cut down, leaving a long trail of light, and hacked the spears apart with a boom. The sharp Sword Qi continued flying out. It tore apart Chang Wan’s saintly image

and fell onto him. It left a deep gash on his chest, almost cutting him in half.

Chang Wan was extremely shocked. He repressed his injury and immediately escaped.

“Where are you going?”

Zhang Ruochen stomped on the ground. The power of space burst from his feet, shattering all the space within hundreds of feet.

Princess Yanxin and Blood Saint Zuotian’s attacks all vanished when they entered the shattered space. They couldn’t hurt Zhang Ruochen at all.

Gui Wu, who’d been hiding underground, immediately ran out and escaped into the distance.

Princess Yanxin and Blood Saint Zuotian put away their Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. They immediately used physical techniques to put distance between them and Zhang Ruochen. They were afraid of getting swept into the shattered space.

Chang Wan couldn’t escape. A spatial crack blocked his escape route.

“Damn it, how can Zhang Ruochen suddenly reach a new level and become so strong?”

Chang Wan was in a panic. He wanted to escape, because he knew that Zhang Ruochen could kill anyone in his way now, even a god or Buddha. Chang Wan wasn’t his match at all.

“Sword Five!” Zhang Ruochen’s voice came from behind Chang Wan. He was getting closer.

Sensing danger, Chang Wan put up his saintly image. But before he could attack, a beam of sword light flew over and stabbed both him and the saint image simultaneously.

Poof, poof.

Dense sword veins appeared all over Chang Wan. Then he exploded like porcelain into a cloud of bloody mist. He left spatters of blood on the ground.

Holding the bloody sword, Zhang Ruochen walked out of the mist. He looked very cold. To the Immortal Vampires, he was like the god of death.

Chang Wan, who'd gone through three Saint Trials and would've become a king, had fallen. Who else dared to go against Zhang Ruochen?

All the Vampires looked down at Crown Prince Qingtian. Perhaps only he could stop this god of death.

But could he really?

Chapter 1104 - Joining The Rank Of Top Fighters

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The powerful killing methods impressed all the humans. They were clear that the Time and Space Descendant had matured. It wouldn't be easy for the imperial court to capture him anymore.

Similarly, there were practically no creatures in the Blue Dragon Void World that could overpower him.

Only Crown Prince Qingtian could remain composed. Firelight shot out of his eyes as his energy waves kept strengthening. "Zhang Ruochen, don't you want to see my true abilities? Let me show you now."

He stretched his arms open. Blood Qi rolled out, forming a huge circle. The word "fire" formed in the center.

This one word shone with burning light. It seemed to evolve into a sun; its light dyed the entire place red. Some of the human Half-Saints were a hundred miles away, but they still felt like they were standing in boiling water.

The high temperature of the air was enough to steam someone.

Looking at the hovering "fire," Zhang Ruochen uttered, "Nine Word God-killing Technique."

"It is indeed the Nine Word God-killing Technique of the Suanni race."

Crown Prince Qingtian flew to stand below the "fire" word. Behind him, an ancient Suanni's apparition appeared.

The Suanni was an ancient divine beast. In the legends, it could carry tens of thousands of mountains, fill the oceans, and construct land. The Nine Word God-killing Technique was a saint spell of the Suanni race. Apparently, in ancient times, the ancestor of the Suanni race had really used this spell to kill gods.

The spell also became famous due to this.

The Suanni Race had gone extinct long ago. Only these legends remained. However, when Blood Emperor Qingtian traveled the world years ago, he'd reached the Southern Suanni State. In the legends, this was a land created by the Suannis. It couldn't compare with Kunlun's Field, but it was very vast as well.

There, Blood Emperor Qingtian had captured a Suanni that had just become a Saint. It was a descendant of an ancient race.

Later, Blood Emperor Qingtian gave the Suanni's blood to Crown Prince Qingtian and the beast soul to the Second Prince. He also gave the bones to the Third Prince. In addition to the portion of power, the three also received the Suanni Race's heritage.

The Suanni blood was undoubtedly the most precious part. Crown Prince Qingtian had comprehended the Suanni Secret Spells technique from the blood and started cultivating his physical body.

The Suanni Secret Spells surpassed the saint guides. They were divine cultivation techniques.

Of course, Crown Prince Qingtian wasn't a true Suanni. He'd only refined the blood and understood a remnant of the spells. It was less than one-tenth of the true Suanni Secret Spells.

It wasn't Zhang Ruochen's first time seeing the Nine Word God-killing Technique. The Second Prince of the Qingtian Tribe had used the same spell before.

The Second Prince had only reached the pictographic level of the technique. This was nothing compared to what the crown prince could do.

Each level of the Nine Word God-killing Technique was exponentially more powerful than the last.

“Nine words kill gods; fire burns the sky.”

Crown Prince Qingtian hit the “fire” word forward to Zhang Ruochen. The huge fireball seemed to take up a quarter of the sky. It was like the sun plummeting, making all the creatures feel suffocated.

The Immortal Vampires had clearly been warned by Crown Prince Qingtian beforehand and retreated far away.

Zhang Ruochen pointed in the sky. The space above immediately shattered. It formed a hole the exact same size as the fireball and caved in quickly. There was nothing inside the spatial hole. It swallowed the “fire” word with strong magnetic force.

Crown Prince Qingtian’s ancient saint spell vanished immediately. Furrowing his brow, the crown prince struck with the “water” word. It formed a crashing river. The river shone with silver light, hanging in the sky like the Milky Way.

However, Zhang Ruochen still collapsed the space with a relaxed finger and dissolved the “water” spell.

“Your Nine Word God-killing Technique is indeed powerful,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly. “It can destroy the world, but it can’t harm me.”

Earlier, Crown Prince had said something similar when he’d found a way to resolve Zhang Ruochen’s spatial attacks. He didn’t expect Zhang Ruochen to use spatial attacks again and resolve his strongest attack.

At that moment, they both understood that neither spatial attacks nor the Nine Word God-killing Technique could hurt each other.

“You’ve already attacked so many times. Shouldn’t you take my hit now?”

Zhang Ruochen hefted the Abyss Ancient Sword above his head. He instantly reached the Man Sword realm and activated Sword Five.

The man and sword shot into the air like a beam of light.

Whoosh!

This strike had boundless power. Beams of chaotic Sword Qi appeared in the sky.

Four golden wings sprouted from Crown Prince Qingtian's back. Next, a golden spherical shield formed around him. He took out a translucent crystal scepter at the same time and hit forward with a blood-red pillar of light.

Boom.

The Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through the golden shield, hitting the sword tip and crystal scepter. A ring of intersected black and red energy waves flooded out.

Evidently, Crown Prince Qingtian's crystal scepter wasn't a simple item. The inside was covered in runes. The red light that shone from it was like a human's veins.

Crown Prince Qingtian had very sharp senses. Feeling that the flow of time changed around him, he sensed danger and immediately sank down. He dropped to the ground.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen used the Scales Sword Technique. The sword cut past Crown Prince Qingtian's neck, cutting down a shred of hair.

The crown prince landed on the ground. There was a thin mark on his neck; a drop of blood slid down. So close, he thought inside.

Such fast reaction speed. Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed that he didn't behead Crown Prince Qingtian.

If he'd succeeded, he would've been able to use the crown prince's head to dominate all the Immortal Vampires in the Blue Dragon Void World. However, Crown Prince Qingtian must have many skills since he could be seventh on the Outer Rank. It wasn't easy to kill him.

"Two people fighting is boring. Can I join?"

An earthshaking dragon's roar came from afar. A mass of black demonic clouds flew quickly toward the Qingtian Tribe's camp.

Zhang Ruochen and Crown Prince Qingtian quickly looked toward the cloud, frowning. The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was here!

“We'll fight another day.”

Zhang Ruochen put away the Abyss Ancient Sword and used the Great Spatial Move. He was miles away instantly, leaving the ravaged battlefield.

He was hurt and couldn't fight for too long. Plus, he'd just entered the Eighth Level. His realm wasn't stabilized yet. If Crown Prince Qingtian and the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon worked together, he would be at a disadvantage.

Thus, he chose to retreat.

“Your Majesty, should we stop Zhang Ruochen?” Blood Saint Zuotian looked darkly at Crown Prince Qingtian for his opinion.

Zhang Ruochen was too big of a threat. He must be taken out. If Crown Prince Qingtian said the word, Blood Saint Zuotian would undo the seal within him, even if it meant dying, to use a Saint's power to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Crown Prince Qingtian obviously knew what Blood Saint Zuotian wanted to do. Looking in the direction that Zhang Ruochen left in, he shook his head lightly. “No need to risk your life. We haven't reached that point yet. I have another trump card. If it really is a battle to the death, I will definitely not be the one dying.

“However, Zhang Ruochen has officially become one of the top fighters below the Saint Realm. He has just entered the Eighth Level. His cultivation and abilities will improve drastically now. I must hurry and cultivate to saintify some more apertures. Otherwise, I may be at a disadvantage during our next fight.”

The Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and many Beast Kings were hurrying over. Crown Prince Qingtian didn't want to stay

here for too long either. Thus, he led the cultivators of the Qingtian Tribe away.

Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo stood atop a mountain. They gazed at the fast cloud of blood over the distant desert. The Vampires of the Qingtian Tribe were inside that cloud of blood. It had formed because their Blood Qi was too strong.

“Why didn’t you use the Wuliang Divine Fire?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Huh?” Qing Mo was taken by surprise and actually looked a bit cute. “You didn’t tell me to use it.”

“It shouldn’t be too late if you use it now.” Zhang Ruochen smiled, eyes crinkling.

Qing Mo lured the Wuliang Divine Fire out. It dropped down like fiery rain, falling onto the Immortal Vampires within the cloud of blood.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Even a tiny spark could melt a large patch of sand into red liquid if it fell onto the ground. A moment later, the Qingtian Tribe was covered in boiling lava. Many pained cries sounded. Countless Immortal Vampires burned to ashes from the Wuliang Divine Fire.

Even the blood pool evaporated from the fire and dried up. Furious roars sounded within the cloud of blood.

“Who is it?”

Even the composed Crown Prince Qingtian was extremely enraged. He flew into the sky to find the bastard that set the fire and rip him to shreds.

Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo had already left and were hundreds of miles away. Hearing the crown prince’s furious roar behind them, Qing Mo ducked her head in fear. She felt guilty and was afraid of being discovered.

Zhang Ruochen was in a good mood though. Smiling, he said, “You’re so strong. Why are you still so scared?”

“Courage and abilities aren’t exactly related. Plus, I’m only the princess’ servant who does chores. I don’t dare to do these killing things.” Qing Mo was still very frightened. She even kept her voice down when she spoke.

“Zhang Ruochen!” a girlish yell sounded in the near distance.

Qing Mo was so frightened. Thinking that Crown Prince Qingtian was here, she immediately hid behind Zhang Ruochen, curling into a ball.

Zhang Ruochen looked over to see Princess White Li descending like a fairy. She was covered in saintly white light. Next, the two Pre-Saints of the White Li Cat Clan also arrived. The old man and woman stood behind Princess White Li, staring at Zhang Ruochen unkindly.

“Zhang Ruochen, what is your motive? Why did you steal my memories?” Princess White Li demanded. She stood across from him with her hands on her waist, sticking out her chest and biting her lip.

She knows something now? Zhang Ruochen thought.

The current Princess White Li had a completely different temperament from how she’d been before losing her memories. Before, she was an intelligent, elegant, noble, and cold beauty. Now, she was like a little girl with a temper.

Qing Mo stuck her head out. Looking at Princess White Li, she grew suspicious and asked with caution, “Lord Zhang, why did you steal her memory?”

Her eyes were very troubled. She suspected that Zhang Ruochen had done something that offended her princess. Otherwise, why would he steal such a beautiful girl’s memories?

There must be a problem—a big problem.

Chapter 1105 - Rumor

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“What are you thinking?” Zhang Ruochen glanced at Qing Mo and shook his head.

Qing Mo grew even more suspicious, thinking that Zhang Ruochen had a problem. “I was just asking. Why are you getting nervous?”

He wasn't nervous! Zhang Ruochen felt speechless.

He could face Crown Prince Qingtian cleanly without furrowing his brows, but this little girl gave him a headache.

“Let's leave this place first. Someone will tell you the reason when we return to the scroll world.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Princess White Li. Without saying anything else, he used the Great Spatial Move and brought Qing Mo away.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and the other Beast Kings were all nearby. If he got into a conflict with Princess White Li, he would definitely lure them over. It would be very difficult to leave by then.

With Zhang Ruochen's current abilities, it wasn't necessary to continue using Princess White Li to stop the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon. It was best if they went separate ways and never interacted again.

As for Princess White Li's memories, Zhang Ruochen didn't plan on giving them back. If he did and she recovered, he would have another strong enemy.

Princess White Li was from an ancient race. She'd absorbed Chaotic Qi and essence of the world before. She wasn't weak.

Blackie was also from the Nine Li Cat Clan and had once been an ancient race. If it hadn't been sealed within the Spiritual Universe Map by Monk Xumi, turning into a weapon spirit, it would also be a powerful and cruel beast.

It was obvious from this that Princess White Li wasn't just anyone. Even if she couldn't be compared to Blackie, she was still a top-level figure in her own realm.

After using the Great Spatial Move seven times, Zhang Ruochen was hundreds of miles away. He'd left the region and could no longer see Princess White Li and the other two Pre-Saints.

Qing Mo was very curious. Cocking her head, she asked, "Lord Zhang, since you're not nervous, why did you escape as soon as that woman appeared? You shouldn't fear her with your cultivation. Is there some unspeakable secret between you two?"

"I didn't escape," Zhang Ruochen replied straightforwardly. "I didn't want to cause trouble."

"Why didn't you return her memory? You wouldn't have trouble if you did." Qing Mo didn't understand. She was stubborn and just felt like Zhang Ruochen was being abnormal. He must be hiding something.

"Zhang Ruochen, return the memory pearl to me. You won't get away!"

Princess White Li's voice floated over from afar. A curvaceous figure walked through the air with shocking speed and quickly appeared before Zhang Ruochen.

This fast?

Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move once again. He swept up Qing Mo and disappeared from the spot.

Princess White Li used one of her clan's Saint spells, the Short Distance Poles Apart Pace. She could cross 1,000 miles in one step. She hurried over, leaving the two elders far behind.

"Princess, do not keep chasing. You aren't his match." The white-haired elder was very anxious, worried that Princess

White Li would be in danger.

He was serious. Zhang Ruochen could now hurt Crown Prince Qingtian, seventh on the Outer Rank. He was truly a fierce figure now. The consequences were unimaginable once he was angered.

However, the white-haired man and woman hadn't completed the Short Distance Poles Apart Pace. They couldn't catch up to the princess and quickly lost track of her.

“Zhang Ruochen, don't think about escaping. Why did you steal my memory? Aren't you going to explain? Is the Time and Space Descendant this despicable?”

Princess White Li pursued while her moving voice filled the air. Some of the creatures passing by felt her horrifying aura and immediately ducked into the ground to hide. They didn't climb back out until Princess White Li left.

A human Half-Saint wiped his sweat and said fearfully, “Zhang Ruochen actually stole Princess White Li's memories? What is he trying to hide?”

Everyone immediately thought that Zhang Ruochen must have done something he shouldn't have to Princess White Li. He'd wiped her memories so he wouldn't be responsible.

There were many conspiracy theorists in this world.

“Zhang Ruochen's character isn't that great!”

“This will probably create a big commotion. The Nine Li Cat Race is quite powerful in the Savage Barren Territory. They won't forgive anyone who mistreats the princess.”

“Princess White Li has a Beast King behind her. She's very talented herself too. Zhang Ruochen has really caused trouble this time!”

...

It wasn't only the humans. The savage beasts thought this too. That human Time and Space Descendant must have taken away Princess White Li's innocence and didn't want to take responsibility, so he did something so shameless.

“What a beast! Princess White Li is the most beautiful pearl of the Savage Barren Territory. Only the Demonic Dragon qualifies for her. I didn’t expect a lowly human would dirty her first.”

“No wonder the Demonic Dragon was willing to use a Saintly Source as the reward to tracing Zhang Ruochen. I didn’t expect there would be such a deep reason.”

As the news kept spreading, it grew more and more exaggerated. It had long strayed from the truth. One beast even claimed that he saw Princess White Li with a swollen belly and was asking Zhang Ruochen if she should keep it.

“It’s 100% true. I saw it with my own eyes,” the half-human beast claimed, raising his hand to swear. “Princess White Li indeed had a swollen stomach, but it wasn’t that big. It was just a bump. Clearly, she’d just become pregnant recently. She asked Zhang Ruochen if she should keep it, but he shook his head. He abandoned her cruelly.”

Once this news spread, it created a huge storm, shocking the various beast tribes and humans. The entire Ingmar Desert was in chaos.

That day, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon also heard similar news. He felt unprecedented humiliation and fury. He stopped pursuing the Qingtian Tribe and yelled at Zhang Ruochen from far away, “Zhang Ruochen, you will die even if you escape to the edge of the earth!”

Then he ordered, “Everyone, listen. Anyone who can report to me Zhang Ruochen’s whereabouts will receive an ancient weapon, in addition to the Saintly Source.”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon’s voice made many of the humans and beasts who doubted the news believe it firmly.

When Wan Huayu heard this, she froze. “Zhang Ruochen really did something like this?” she mumbled to herself. “It’s really unlike him.”

Thousands of miles away in a vast desert, the beast that spread the rumors looked in the direction that the Qingtian Tribe had gone in. “Once this rumor spreads, it will definitely anger the

Demonic Dragon and Beast Kings. They'll start to target Zhang Ruochen. This way, the Crown Prince and my brethren will be able to escape successfully.”

Whoosh.

Cracks opened up on the beast's body. Red mist spread out of the cracks and then the body shattered. The beast's skin cracked apart. A pair of blood-red wings sprouted out. It transformed into an Immortal Vampire.

This beast was a spy from the Immortal Vampires. He had purposely spread the rumor to help the Qingtian Tribe escape. It was clear that his rumor had been very useful. It hit the Demonic Dragon's weak spot, successfully angering him.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was hurrying toward the blood-red gobi. He didn't know about the shocking rumor regarding him and Princess White Li.

The Great Spatial Move was very fast, but Princess White Li's spell was powerful too. She was right behind Zhang Ruochen and didn't lose track of him.

I've really underestimated her. Her speed is fast enough to be in the top five below the Saint Realm.

He couldn't keep getting chased by her. Zhang Ruochen sank into deep thought, wondering if he should return the memory pearl. In the end, he still shook his head. He couldn't create a new enemy just because his heart had softened.

Princess White Li was strong now, but she wasn't very smart. She didn't count as a strong enemy. After she recovered her memory, she could totally summon the strongest beasts with her status and influence. It would be a great disadvantage for Zhang Ruochen.

He finally reached the blood-red gobi. Blackie was already waiting there with the Spiritual Universe Map. When it saw him and Qing Mo return, it smiled immediately. “See! I said that they wouldn't be in danger. Zhang Ruochen is the Time and Space Descendant. He has the Divine Sky-connecting Tree and bald donkey Xumi's Qi fate. He can't be killed that easily.”

Huang Yanchen stood beside Blackie. She was very tall and her blue hair fluttered in the wind. When she saw Zhang Ruochen and Qing Mo, a faint smile appeared on her icy cold face.

Qing Mo streaked toward Huang Yanchen. Expression strange, she whispered something to Huang Yanchen as if telling a secret.

“Oh?”

Huang Yanchen’s eyes hardened. She looked at Zhang Ruochen with a suspicious expression.

Zhang Ruochen naturally guessed what Qing Mo had said, but he was still calm. Smiling, he said, “Don’t listen to her nonsense. Blackie knows the truth. It can tell you why I did it.”

“It’s not nonsense. You did something shameless. Otherwise, why did you escape in panic when you saw that woman?”

Qing Mo was instantly more confident when she was beside Huang Yanchen.

Huang Yanchen bit her lips softly. There was a pitiful look in her eyes as if she’d been hurt badly.

Zhang Ruochen glared at Blackie. “Hurry and explain to them.”

“Explain what?” Blackie asked. “I don’t know what you’re talking about.”

Closing his eyes, Zhang Ruochen said calmly, “About Princess White Li.”

“Zhang Ruochen must have done something unspeakable to Princess White Li,” Qing Mo immediately added. “She went to find him, but he didn’t dare to face her. Instead, he escaped with me. He must be guilty of something!”

“What?” Blackie yelped. Its hair shot out like needles and pounced on Zhang Ruochen. “I will fight you! I found it strange how you snuck out alone. So you have your eyes on Princess White Li? Don’t you know that she’s my empress now? Are you bullying me for not having a physical body?”

Zhang Ruochen used a physical technique and shot to the side to get away from Blackie. It was getting more complicated. He couldn't explain at all.

Whoosh!

A speck of white light flew over from the blue sky. It grew bigger and bigger. When it was closer, the light revealed Princess White Li's figure.

She landed atop a boulder and glared at Zhang Ruochen. "Zhang Ruochen," she said angrily. "You shameless man... Why? Today...you must...must explain to me clearly..."

Huang Yanchen looked at Zhang Ruochen quizzically too. She really wanted to know what had happened.

Chapter 1106 - Seven- Colored Lights

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

This was very hard to explain. Zhang Ruochen didn't plan on explaining either, so he summoned Sikong One and Two from the scroll world.

The two monks were quite reliable and finally explained everything that had happened.

“So that's what happened?” Qing Mo stuck her tongue out with an apologetic expression. She didn't dare look Zhang Ruochen in the eye.

Princess White Li stood to the side the entire time, listening to Sikong One and Two's explanation. It dawned on her and she nodded. “Zhang Ruochen, since you did this to stop the fight between the beasts and humans, it's a good thing. I am not an unreasonable person and can understand your motive. If you return my memory pearl, I will forgive all your offenses.”

“I will return your memory pearl after we leave the Blue Dragon Void World,” Zhang Ruochen said. “As for now, I can't.”

Princess White Li's brows knitted tightly. After thinking carefully, she finally agreed. “Okay, but I must be with you in the Blue Dragon Void World so you don't back out and escape.”

She was forced to agree. Zhang Ruochen had more people and each one was a strong cultivator. She definitely wasn't their match, so she had to give in.

“Yes! I support you staying, hehe!” Blackie was the first to raise its hands. It also sent a telepathic message to Zhang Ruochen, Don’t worry about your secret being exposed. You can wipe her memory again before leaving the Blue Dragon Void World.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Not wanting to respond to Blackie and Princess White Li, he stepped into the scroll world.

“Wait for me.” Princess White Li immediately chased over and followed Zhang Ruochen through the spatial door, entering the scroll world.

Once inside the scroll world, Zhang Ruochen immediately sent the six high-level Half-Saints of the Murong Clan out to investigate. He really wanted to know if the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and the Beast Kings had already killed all of the Qingtian Tribe.

At the same time, everything was changing within the Blue Dragon Void World. Big events occurred at any given time. Zhang Ruochen had to have first-hand information so he could react beforehand.

After giving out the orders, Zhang Ruochen went to the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to begin fortifying his realm.

Princess White Li chased after him and reached the tree as well. She was immediately attracted by the leafy divine tree and let out a shocked expression.

Blackie walked out from behind Princess White Li and stood up like a human. “This is the legendary Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Isn’t it impressive?”

“Yeah!” Princess White Li nodded.

“Cultivating under it is definitely more miraculous than in any other saintly or spiritual mountain. You can comprehend the most advanced saintly rules and cultivate more than ten times faster. Do you want to cultivate here?” Blackie smiled.

“Of course!”

With that, Princess White Li walked over to Zhang Ruochen. She sat down cross-legged and operated a very advanced technique. She entered the cultivation state immediately.

“Uh...”

Blackie had wanted to move step by step and use the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to tempt Princess White Li in staying in the scroll world forever. It didn't expect the princess to act so comfortably and start cultivating immediately. She didn't even give Blackie a chance to continue speaking.

Half a month later.

A fragrant smell floated over from the distance. Zhang Ruochen and Princess White Li woke up in shock. They stood up and looked toward the northwest.

The sky was filled with shreds of seven-colored light. The strange fragrance came from within the light.

Zhang Ruochen reached out and grasped a beam of the light. “Such heavy Pill Spirit.”

“This is Pill Spirit?”

Princess White Li was shocked. She'd never seen such thick Pill Spirit. From where she was, she saw that the entire sky was covered in the seven-colored light. It was too shocking.

“Blackie's pills must be done now.”

Zhang Ruochen flashed and vanished from the spot. A moment later, he arrived at the mountain that burned year-round. Blackie produced the pills at the mountaintop.

The seven-colored light was coming out of the furnace at the top. This colored the clouds above the mountain too. The scene before his eyes was so brilliant. He could vaguely see bolts of purple lightning within the clouds too with rumbling noises.

Since there's such a big commotion, did he produce a divine pill? Zhang Ruochen was quite surprised.

This kind of shocking phenomenon only appeared when a divine pill was born. A pill trial may even occur.

Divine pills were very rare. It was practically impossible to get even one.

The Divine Origin Pill was the most basic type of divine pill. Even so, a single Divine Origin Pill had such a high price that the typical Half-Saint wouldn't be able to afford it at all.

This phenomenon was very shocking. It was evident that a pill more valuable than the Divine Origin Pill had been made. It filled everyone with anticipation.

Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Zhao Shiqi, Sun Dadi, Sikong One, and Sikong Two had hurried over to the Flame Mountain. They each took a place near the top and were using techniques to suck in all the Pill Spirit in the air. Even the spirit that leaked out was beneficial to them.

Princess White Li also hurried over. When she reached the middle of the mountain, she took a deep breath. Thousands of beams of Pill Spirit entered her body. Her skin slowly started glowing with seven-colored light. She turned translucent as if her body was made out of glass.

Zhang Ruochen reached the top of the mountain and asked Blackie, "How much longer until the medicine will become a pill?"

"At least two more days."

This furnace of medicine used the saint flower that carried the Saintly Source Spring. The dew from the Seven Star Sacred Tuber was also a major ingredient. It also included 28 types of auxiliary saintly and spiritual medicine and finally showed signs of becoming a pill after countless months in the scroll world.

They'd already waited for months, so two more days wasn't much.

How shocking would the effect be if so many precious ingredients were used for the pill? Zhang Ruochen had asked Blackie before, but the cat said that it didn't know the final effect either.

It was its first time making it. It couldn't find any saint flowers or divine dew before either, so Blackie had to rely on their

effects to determine how much to use and create a new divine pill.

“Don’t have too much hope. It’s my first time creating it. I may very well fail.”

Blackie was worried that it would fail after the dramatic commotion and it would be embarrassing, so it told them the worst case scenario.

...

Eight hundred miles away from the Flame Mountain was a vast prairie. However, it was now covered in ice 90 feet thick. It spread for 300 miles in radius, turning the grassland into a mass of white.

Now, the scroll world even had some beasts and creatures. Blackie had led the monster ape and Elephant-swallowing Rabbit to capture the beasts and bring them here. At the moment, a huge black eagle reached the edge of the Iceland.

Crackle.

It froze instantly and dropped down to the ground. It shattered into pieces of ice.

The next moment, a black shadow broke through the ice in the center. She flew hundreds of feet into the air before stopping. Standing atop the clouds, she muttered to herself, “I’ve finally completed the Extreme Yin Body.”

Whoosh—

The black figure streaked across the sky and quickly landed below the Flame Mountain. The moment she arrived, the flame that never extinguished was snuffed out quickly. It became a pitch black mountain of stone.

“Greetings, Your Majesty.” The figure lowered onto one knee and bowed to Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Murong Yue who was below the mountain and smiled. “Judging from your current state, you must’ve succeeded in cultivating the Extreme Yin Body.”

“I haven’t completed it yet,” Murong Yue said.

“All types of bodies need to reach the Saint Realm to be completed,” Zhang Ruochen said. “It’s already great that you can reach this step now. Rise!”

“If you didn’t give me the great amount of dew, I would never be able to succeed with the Extreme Yin Body.”

Murong Yue stood up slowly, collecting the cold Qi into her body. Even so, the land hundreds of feet in radius from her was still covered in white frost. Regular cultivators would turn into ice statues if they approached her.

Not only did refining the dew help Murong Yue cultivate her Extreme Yin Body, it also helped her overall cultivation improve. She was now a Seventh Level Half-Saint.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen would supply her the respective Divine Origin Pill in every realm. Otherwise, she wouldn’t have improved so quickly.

“Oh no, the disastrous thunder is here!”

Just then, Sun Dadi, who’d been absorbing the Divine Spirit, suddenly opened his eyes. Red flames flared through his entire body. An explosive force burst from his body. Then he charged out of the mountain, flying toward the Iceland that Murong Yue had been cultivating in.

Halfway there, a black thundering cloud appeared above his head. Dozens of purple lightning bolts snaked through the clouds, emanating a suffocating aura of destruction.

Crackle! Crack!

A lightning bolt dropped from the sky, striking above Sun Dadi’s head. It extended to his feet, shattering the ground below him and turning it into a black ditch. Soon, a second bolt appeared, striking his head again.

...

Booms kept sounding in their ears; thunder and fire kept falling, melting the Iceland.

Princess White Li was shocked back into reality. Looking at the thunderous cloud, she asked, “What’s happening?”

Zhang Ruochen narrowed his eyes and looked at Princess White Li in shock. “He has already reached the limit of the Ninth Level and activated the first Pre-Saint Trial, the Four Nine Trial. Don’t you know this? Have you not gone through it yet?”

Princess White Li pointed above her with a pale finger. “I’m afraid... I’m going to go through my first Pre-Saint Trial too!”

A thunderous cloud really did appear above her. The destructive aura coming from it was even more terrifying. Each lightning bolt was two times thicker than Sun Dadi’s. They were like dozens of electric dragons.

Chapter 1107 - Four Nine Trial

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Pre-Saint Realm was part of the nine levels of the Half-Saint Realm. However, it was also above them in a way, getting infinitely close to the Saint Realm.

Thus, others would have difficulties seeing how many trials one had gone through even if they had strong Spiritual Power. They could only estimate it from their combat ability.

Princess White Li was strong enough to fight with some weaker Saints, so Zhang Ruochen always thought that she'd already gone through one or two Pre-Saint Trials. He didn't expect that she was only a Ninth Level Half-Saint.

If she was already this strong, how much stronger would she become once she underwent the first Saint Trial? Clearly, the stronger one was, the stronger the saintly rules one cultivated would be. The thunder trial activated would be stronger too.

Sun Dadi wasn't weak. He hadn't reached the Pre-Saint Realm, but he could already fight with Beast Kings for a short period. He was a top figure among the humans. His body was stronger than a saint body too.

However, Princess White Li's thunder was twice as thick as his. What did this mean?

"As expected of an ancient race," Zhang Ruochen sighed. "No matter how excellent later descendants are, they can't compare." He gazed at the two black clouds in the distance.

Roar!

Sikong One and Two roared one after another. The two monks shone with dazzling Buddhist light, white and black respectively. The sky above the mountain was split into day and night.

Immense hymns sounded within them, attracting a circular trial cloud. Within it, black and white lightning bolts intersected like a huge yin yang symbol.

They were going to undergo their first Pre-Saint Trial too. They'd also attracted a very strange trial. The two clouds were actually connected and intertwined, unable to be separated. The destructive aura was even stronger than Princess White Li's cloud.

Sun Dadi's trial cloud was only 20 miles long. Princess White Li's cloud was close to 30 miles long.

Sikong One and Two's cloud, though, reached 40 miles. It covered a large patch of land, casting a huge shadow on the ground. If they fought alone in the same realm, Sikong One and Two weren't Princess White Li's match at all. However, the two monks together could unleash power terrifying enough to defeat Princess White Li.

Usually, two cultivators could only increase their combat ability 50 or 60 percent even if they cooperated seamlessly. Reaching 70 percent was extraordinary.

It was practically unheard of to multiply their combat ability like Sikong One and Two.

"Are they twins?" Murong Yue asked out of curiosity.

"Do they look like twins?" Zhang Ruochen shook his head, chuckling.

"Perhaps they're not even human," Blackie said. "They might be some mutant creature."

"Mutant spirit? A plant?" Murong Yue was astonished.

"Plants are regular creatures, not mutants." Blackie put on a wise and sagacious expression. "The so-called mutant creature is a broad term. For example, if a divine pill has a high enough grade and someone awakens it, a consciousness can be born. It

can cultivate the Saintly Way just like humans, comprehend saintly rules, cultivate a human body and become a top figure.”

“Other than that, flames can cultivate human bodies. So can stones, wind, rain, thunder, lightning, instruments, books, and even paintings. Of course, they may cultivate a beast’s body too.”

“All in all, there are many types of mutant creatures. There are types that you’ve never imagined or seen before. However, there aren’t many of them. A regular cultivator might not even see one in their lifetime.”

“Why?” Murong Yue asked in confusion.

“A mutant that can cultivate a human body must originally be a precious item,” Zhang Ruochen said. “For example, if a divine pill cultivates a human body, how precious must its original form be? How many strong cultivators will try to capture and refine it?”

Blackie nodded. “Even a rock that can cultivate into a human means that it must have been a very special material. It’s definitely material for refining weapons. Thus, each mutant creature will try to hide their identity so they won’t be hunted down. This is why there might be the same amount of mutant creatures as ancient races, but it’s very hard to see them.”

Then Blackie added, “There are many mutant creatures on the Outer Rank. Two or three of them are at or around Crown Prince Qingtian’s level. These two monks are going through their first Pre-Saint Trial. The trial might force their original form out.”

Whether Sikong One or Two were mutant creatures or not, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t hurt them. Of course, he was still curious if the two were mutant creatures. And if they were, what kind were they?

He opened the Heavenly Eye in the center of his forehead and looked toward the two monks below the black and white cloud, hundreds of miles away.

The first Pre-Saint Trial was also known as the “Four Nine Trial.” This meant that they had to go through 36 thunder trials. Only then could they pass into the First Trial Pre-Saint Realm.

Sikong One and Two stood below the cloud. One sat and one lay down. They withstood the tempering of the lightning in different Buddhist poses.

Sikong One’s body seemed to be made from white jade. He was translucent. The lightning didn’t cause any damage when it struck him. Sikong Two, on the other hand, was pure black, like cosmic iron.

One white and one black but from the same source, Zhang Ruochen thought. Such a pure and natural Qi radiates from them. It’s completely different from the blood Qi of humans. They are definitely mutant creatures.

He still couldn’t guess what kind of mutant creature they were though.

The two monks were shrouded in fog, hiding their true figures. Not even the Heavenly Eye could penetrate it. Some apex figure must be protecting them, using a secret spell to cover their true forms.

Sun Dadi, Princess White Li, Sikong One, and Sikong Two had all reached the pinnacle of the Ninth Level. Thus, after absorbing the Pill Spirit, they were able to break through the limit and start the saint trial.

Huang Yanchen had just reached the Ninth Level. Her cultivation was rising steadily, gradually climbing to the peak. It would still take some time before she could try for the Pre-Saint Realm.

Sun Dadi passed through the first Pre-Saint Trial. He was scorched black and worm-like electricity still flowed through him, sizzling. Right now, he was very excited.

Putting his hands on his waist, he tilted his head back and laughed. “With my current cultivation, I should be able to enter the top level of the Half-Saint Rank.”

Zhang Ruochen flew over. Standing around 30 feet above the ground, he put his hands behind his back and smacked Sun Dadi with the cold, hard truth. “You’re still very far from the top level of cultivators. It’ll be hard to enter the Half-Saint Rank too, but you should probably get into the top 500 of the Outer Rank.”

“How is that possible? I’ve already gone through the first Pre-Saint Trial. I can flatten a Beast King with one hit.” Sun Dadi wasn’t convinced. He felt that Zhang Ruochen was underestimating him.

“The path of cultivation is like going against the tide. If you don’t forge ahead, then you are pushed back,” Zhang Ruochen said. “You’re improving and the others are too. Do you think that the prides of the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank are just stepping in place?”

“Your current speed of improvement has definitely surpassed them and left many of them in the dust. However, if you don’t continue working hard, they’ll catch up and squeeze you out of the Outer Rank.”

The Blue Dragon Void World had produced countless treasures. A cultivator’s level could skyrocket as long as they found one. Then they would become a top figure and leave many people behind them.

Even Zhang Ruochen didn’t dare to relax. He had to work very hard to maintain his current advantage. If he became arrogant and proud, then he would quickly be squeezed out of the top level and fall down.

This was why Zhang Ruochen came out to give Sun Dadi a cold-hearted hit. He hoped Sun Dadi could continue working hard and further the distance.

Sun Dadi was quite optimistic. Smiling, he said, “No matter what, I’ll be able to fight several rounds if I meet another Beast King. I won’t have to escape anymore. Plus, I’ve just reached the First Trial Pre-Saint Realm. I still have a lot of space for improvement. In the near future, I’ll be able to defeat them completely.”

The Four Nine Trial wasn't that dangerous. Most Half-Saints could pass it successfully. Only a few who hadn't accumulated enough would die in it.

Princess White Li, Sikong One, and Sikong Two all passed the Four Nine Trial, reaching the Pre-Saint Realm.

Princess White Li's cultivation improved greatly. She glanced at Zhang Ruochen with her round eyes and then shook her perky behind.

Slap!

A white tail curved in the air and struck out. It grew longer and longer until it hit Zhang Ruochen, hundreds of feet away. Icy Qi radiated from the white tail. Sharp blade-like snowflakes solidified in the air, flying out with the tail.

Zhang Ruochen was on high alert. As soon as Princess White Li shook her behind, he used the Spatial Move and disappeared.

The next moment, he was before Princess White Li, the tip of the Abyss Ancient Sword pointed between her brows. "Do you want to die?" he asked coldly.

"I just wanted to test if I've become a top fighter after reaching the Pre-Saint Realm. Why are you so mean?" Princess White Li put her tail away. Pursing her red lips, she said, "If I used all my might, I wouldn't use such a slow move. You should know that I'm not slower than you. You were only a bit faster than me because you used the Spatial Move. Hmph!"

She wanted to convince Zhang Ruochen because she didn't want to die from what she'd just done.

She knew that this guy was bipolar. He was kind and jovial with his friends, but merciless and inhumane to his enemies. The beasts that he'd killed could be piled into a mountain.

Chapter 1108 - Information From The Outside World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Princess White Li stayed beside Zhang Ruochen to try and steal back her memory pearl. This went without saying.

If her cultivation level was far above Zhang Ruochen, she would definitely try to forcefully steal the memory pearl, instead of begging like now. No matter what, keeping Princess White Li nearby was like carrying a ticking bomb. There were too many uncertainties.

Blackie rushed over to stop Zhang Ruochen. "Give her to me. I'll watch over her."

The two Sikongs put their hands together and said, "Amitabha! Senior Uncle, please forgive White Li this one time. I believe she isn't an evil demon. She really didn't use all her might and must have really been testing what level she'd reached in the Pre-Saint Realm."

Princess White Li was annoyed, feeling that Zhang Ruochen was being unreasonable. "You're so inhumane. No woman will like a man like you."

Zhang Ruochen stared deeply at her and put away the Abyss Ancient Sword. "You better be obedient," he said coldly. "Otherwise, my sword won't hold back."

With that, he turned to leave.

It wasn't that Zhang Ruochen was being overly-sensitive. It was mainly because Princess White Li was too strong. Now that she'd entered the First Trial Pre-Saint Realm, she'd joined

the ranks of the true top figures. It wouldn't be easy for Zhang Ruochen to defeat her.

If she started killing in the scroll world, the Sacred Sect would suffer great losses. This was why Zhang Ruochen had to be careful and couldn't have any missteps.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen still didn't see Princess White Li as a part of them.

“Such a cold-blooded animal.” Princess White Li stuck her tongue out, making a face at Zhang Ruochen's back.

Huang Yanchen finished cultivating and walked down the mountain. “He actually isn't cold-blooded and he's quite easy to get close to. Treat him well and he'll treat you multiple times better.”

“Really?” Princess White Li doubted Huang Yanchen's words. She felt from the start that Zhang Ruochen was hard to get along with. He was very strange.

Huang Yanchen nodded and followed after Zhang Ruochen.

Her cultivation had now reached the pinnacle of the Ninth Level. It was hard to improve even if she continued absorbing the Pill Spirit. For now, she needed more accumulation and fortification.

Catching up to Zhang Ruochen, she said, “Princess White Li has a high status in the Nine Li Cat Clan. She's now reached the pinnacle too. If you can lead her into the Sacred Sect, it'll definitely strengthen our sect. Having a good relationship with the Nine Li Cat Clan is also completely beneficial to you.”

“I understand, but she's only this innocent because she lost her memory. What about after she recovers?”

“As long as she feels like she belongs in the Sacred Sect now, the feeling will remain even after she recovers her memories.”

“Perhaps you're right,” Zhang Ruochen said.

There were at least two days before the pill was mature. Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen went to the city where the Sacred Sect disciples were gathered to give lessons.

The six high-level Half-Saints of the Murong Clan and Blackie would often help answer questions from the Sacred Sect disciples. Zhang Ruochen, the sect leader, very rarely appeared.

All the disciples hurried over to listen to his lecture. Nowadays, Zhang Ruochen was like a god to them. Everyone revered him.

Two days later, the six Murong Clan Half-Saints returned to the scroll world and reported to Zhang Ruochen what had happened in the Blue Dragon Void World.

“The Vampire spy among the beasts spread a rumor about you and Princess White Li,” Murong Chengfeng said. “This angered the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, making it target you once again. Crown Prince Qingtian and the Qingtian Tribe were able to escape. We heard that they’ve already left the Ingmar Desert, entering the territory of the Blue Dragon Dynasty.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon isn’t stupid. It won’t risk its life against the Qingtian Tribe. It doesn’t matter if it can destroy them or not. Even if it can, it can’t offend the entire Immortal Vampire tribe.”

“The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon has already become the mortal enemy of the humans. If it becomes a great enemy of the Immortal Vampires too, it won’t have a good end no matter how strong it is. I’m just an excuse. In my opinion, it would rather have the humans go after the Qingtian Tribe so it can just reap the benefits.”

Murong Chengfeng nodded. “Your Majesty, you are correct. I believe so as well.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly thought of something, so he asked, “What exactly is the rumor?”

Murong Chengfeng’s expression turned strange. Glancing at Huang Yanchen who was standing nearby, he told Zhang Ruochen the popular rumor telepathically.

After hearing this, Zhang Ruochen froze and finally laughed. “People really...believe this kind of rumor?”

Huang Yanchen's pretty eyes scanned him and Murong Chengfeng, but she didn't ask anything. She just stood there quietly.

"This will harm your reputation," Murong Chengfeng said.
"Will you step out to explain?"

"Whatever. The more I explain about these things, the more people will believe them. Those who are innocent will always be innocent. Just let it go!" Zhang Ruochen was very calm. He didn't care what others thought of him. He would just be himself.

"From what I know, the Blue Dragon Void World hasn't been at peace these days," Murong Chengfeng continued. "There has been a string of large battles. Some unknown figures rose up in the battle, reaching the top ranks."

Only those who could kill a Beast King and didn't fear their desperate last attempts could be in the top rank. There were less than ten humans who could do this. Each one would cause a commotion if they appeared anywhere.

A top rank figure was synonymous with being undefeatable in the Blue Dragon Void World. They could cause great damage and kill a group of Half-Saints alone. It was also practically impossible to kill a top rank figure too. There was only a chance if three or four other top rank figures worked together.

They were very rare. How could three or four be gathered?

"It's because a few legendary items were produced," Murong Chengfeng continued to say. "That's why more top rank figures were created. It's said that a Grade Six beast in the eastern sea region of the Blue Dragon Void World dug out a giant dead clam. There was a five-colored pearl that was 100,000 years old. After swallowing the pearl, the Grade Six beast instantly became a top rank figure. It fought with the prince of the Kun Clan, sixth on the Half-Saint Rank, for two days and one night, without losing."

"A swordsman from the Moon Worship Demonic Clan that had some fame recently charged into the Huangtian Tribe's camp, one of the ten Immortal Vampire tribes, and killed

hundreds of Vampires. The Huangtian Tribe's empress had to come out personally to force him away.”

“In addition, many unknown figures from the natives of the Blue Dragon Void World, Immortal Vampires, dead spirits, and mutant creatures all made their names known through a shocking battle. They became the newest top rank figures.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and sighed. “It seems that many nice things have been produced in the void world. We can't keep staying inside the scroll world. We must go out and look for opportunities.”

“There's something else,” Murong Chengfeng said. “A while ago, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon underwent its first Pre-Saint Trial. The trial cloud covered more than 50 miles in radius and the destructive ability was so shocking. Almost half of the desert melted into a sea of lava. I felt my saint soul quaking even though I was thousands of miles away.”

Zhang Ruochen's temple pulsed. “It had only reached the pinnacle of the Ninth Level a while ago and hadn't gone through much accumulation and settling down. Isn't it afraid of getting struck to death by going through the first trial so impatiently?”

Huang Yanchen was confused too. She'd just reached the pinnacle and she hadn't dared to try for the Pre-Saint Realm. She was worried that she hadn't accumulated enough and would run into problems during the trial.

“I heard that the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was indeed injured during the trial,” Murong Chengfeng said. “It almost died. Later, I continued investigating and finally learned the reason.”

“What is it?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“It didn't attract the Pre-Saint Trial voluntarily. Instead, it faced a very strong enemy and was hurt by it. It was forced to take the risk and try for the Pre-Saint Realm.”

“There's a creature here that can hurt the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't really believe this. He thought it might be a rumor. After all, the dragon was third on the Half-Saint Rank. Even Monk Lidi, who was higher up, would find it hard to defeat it.

Could there really be a creature that could force the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon to risk its life and go through a Pre-Saint Trial to save itself?

Unless... Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye worked together or the Crown Princes and Empresses of the Immortal Vampire allied, then it would be possible.

Murong Chengfeng had only heard some gossip, so he didn't know the truth. He wouldn't know who the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon was hurt by either.

Of course, no matter the reason, the fact that the dragon had passed the first Pre-Saint Trial was horrible news. It had already been the strongest creature in the Blue Dragon Void World without going through the first trial. How terrifying must it be now?

Whoosh—

Pill Spirit spewed out from the Flame Mountain. The seven-colored light shot into the air, spreading for thousands of miles.

Pill fragrance spread out, making all the creatures throughout the land breathe greedily.

“The furnace is about to produce the pill.”

Zhang Ruochen was happy. Along with Huang Yanchen and the six Half-Saints of the Murong Clan, they flew toward the seven-colored rays as eight streaks of light.

Chapter 1109 - The Influence Of The World Spirit

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The mountain was thousands of feet high. A furnace hundreds of feet tall stood on the edge of the cliff. Huge flames billowed under it while seven-colored light beamed out of the furnace. The place seemed very divine.

Everyone had already reached the foot of the mountain. They stared attentively at the red-hot furnace. Bolts of purple lightning appeared above the furnace. It crackled, exploding in the air.

It didn't form a pill trial. There were only some signs of a pill trial. It was still a step away from a true pill trial.

One must know that only extraordinary pills could lead to a pill trial. They would definitely be at the top level.

This furnace of pills could lead to signs of a pill trial. This meant that it already had a shockingly high grade and far surpassed the Divine Origin Pill.

"Once this pill is produced, it'll definitely help all of us improve. It must not fail." Sun Dadi was really excited. He'd waited for this furnace for such a long time. He hoped that all his anticipations wouldn't come to nothing.

Blackie's eyes weren't confident. It didn't have much hope. After all, it was its first time producing it, so there was a high chance of failing.

"Don't have too much hope," Zhang Ruochen said. "It's possible that the pill couldn't become shaped. It'll already be good enough if it can produce some liquid."

The furnace gradually stopped spewing out seven-colored light and cooled down.

Sikong One sniffed nervously. “What happened? Even the fragrance disappeared? Did the production really fail?”

Everyone furrowed their brows, feeling very disappointed. If the divine pill could have worked, the light would grow brighter, the fragrance would grow stronger, and clouds of Pill Spirit would even appear.

Now, the entire furnace was deathly silent and cooled down. It was obvious that it must have failed!

Sun Dadi stared at Blackie, wanting to beat it up. “The saint flower and dew are both rare treasures. I told you all that you can’t give it to a cat. Now look, we wasted a pot of divine medicine.”

“Monkey, what are you saying? Blaming me? I wanted to maximize the effects of the flower and dew. It’s not like I purposely failed.”

Blackie was upset too. Its claws glinted coldly.

“Don’t blame you?” Sun Dadi asked. “The saint flower is so precious. It represents eight chances to compete for the World Spirit. Now you’ve destroyed it. Where can we go to look for another saint flower? Do we have to just watch as the others take away the World Spirit?”

Blackie and Sun Dadi got closer to each other and almost started fighting.

Zhang Ruochen immediately separated them. “Since the production has failed, we must accept this truth. Plus, it’s not like we didn’t benefit at all. At least you all have absorbed the Pill Spirit and entered the First Trial Pre-Saint Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen’s words were effective. He calmed down Sun Dadi and Blackie, as well as comforting the others.

Then he continued, “It’s not the time to find who’s to blame. We should leave the scroll world and work on finding the Saintly Source Spring and fighting for other saint flowers.”

Sun Dadi was unsatisfied. With bloodshot eyes, he rushed to the mountaintop and stood beside the furnace.

“Even if it has turned to scraps, I’ll still eat it all.”

Sun Dadi pressed on the furnace’s top and used all his might to open the lid.

A strange thing occurred...

Sun Dadi lifted the entire furnace but couldn’t open the lid.

“Fat cat, what the heck? Did you fail because your furnace’s quality is too low?” Sun Dadi angrily threw the furnace onto the ground.

Just as the furnace landed, a strange noise was emitted.

Hearing this, Blackie’s furry ears shot up. With a whoosh, it charged up the mountain, roaring, “Be careful!”

Sun Dadi was shocked too. Tensing, he stood in place. “What do you mean?”

Blackie landed below the furnace. Black light flowed out of its round eyes and it stared at the furnace’s wall. Then it pressed its ears against the side to listen carefully.

Seeing how nervous Blackie was, the others climbed to the top of the mountain too.

“What’s going on?” Sikong One asked. “Did you not fail?” He licked his lips, seemingly very nervous.

The others were filled with anticipation too. They wondered if there could be a plot twist.

A moment later, Blackie’s ears flattened. It looked over to everyone and laughed. “I understand now! Haha! I see.”

Sun Dadi’s eyes gleamed. “The pill succeeded?” he asked excitedly.

Blackie shook its head. “No.”

“Then why you so excited? F*ck...Amitabha.” Sikong One was so angry that he swore. Realizing he’d lost his composure, he put his hands together, closed his eyes, and started chanting a hymn as if nothing had happened.

By now, everyone was so angry that they all wanted to beat Blackie up.

Puffing up its chest, it said, "I found the reason why I failed."

So what if it found the reason? Everyone was only interested in the end result, not the process and reason.

"Psh, let's go! We were played by this fat cat. I'll never believe it again."

Sun Dadi knew that he wasn't Blackie's match in the scroll world, so he tried hard to control his emotions. He planned on finding the opportunity to punish Blackie after they went outside.

Looking at their backs, Blackie continued, "Don't you want to know the reason? Actually, this furnace didn't exactly fail. There's still a chance to save it."

No one believed it and they kept going down the mountain. Only Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen stayed.

Zhang Ruochen patted Blackie's head and said meaningfully, "Blackie, ruining a furnace of pills isn't that big of a deal. After all, anyone can fail, but from now on, please be more reliable."

With that, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen prepared to leave as well to discuss the next plan.

Blackie was so angry that it was about to explode. Stopping Zhang Ruochen, it said, "The pill failed because of the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World."

"What do you mean?" Zhang Ruochen stopped.

"The World Spirit can control everything in the world, representing the Celestial Way, fate, reasons and ends. If you want to become a Saint here, you must receive permission from the World Spirit. Wanting to produce a divine pill is the same as a cultivator wishing to become a Saint. You must receive permission from the World Spirit too."

"So you're saying that the divine pill couldn't form because we didn't receive permission from the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World?"

“That’s right.”

Zhang Ruochen mostly understood what Blackie meant. “But we’re inside the Universe Spiritual Map, not inside the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Blackie shook its head. “The saint flower used contains a shred of Qi from the World Spirit. If we don’t receive its recognition, the Pill Spirit won’t be able to form. Of course, if the World Spirit of the scroll world is far stronger than the void world’s World Spirit, it can take over and not be affected.”

“But as of now, the scroll world’s World Spirit isn’t strong enough. It can at most counter the Blue Dragon Void World’s spirit, but can’t defeat it.”

The scroll world’s World Spirit was actually the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Blackie was also a messenger of the World Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen grew thoughtful. “I understand! You’re saying that if we had produced the pill in Kunlun’s Field, it’s very likely that we would’ve succeeded because the World Spirit of Kunlun’s Field is much stronger than that of the Blue Dragon Void World. Nothing in Kunlun’s Field will be affected.”

“That’s right,” Blackie said.

Sun Dadi and the others who’d walked down the mountain had perked up their ears to eavesdrop on their conversation. They still had some hope for the pill.

“Earlier,” Zhang Ruochen said, “you said that the pill didn’t fail and it can still be saved. What does that mean?”

Blackie chuckled. “The medicine within the furnace hasn’t been destroyed. It has just cooled down. If we enter the Blue Dragon Void World and sacrifice to the World Spirit, it’s possible that the medicine can become a pill.”

“Then what are we waiting for?” Sun Dadi said excitedly, flying back up the mountain. “Let’s go grab some beasts now and sacrifice them. If I ingest this divine pill, I might be able to directly go through the second Pre-Saint Trial or maybe even the third.”

Blackie rolled its eyes. “Sacrifice isn’t that simple. First, we must find an altar with a great history. Then we have to find the place closest to the World Spirit.”

“The Blue Dragon Void World is so big. Where do we go to look?” Sun Dadi kept scratching his head anxiously.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. “The Blue Dragon Dynasty,” he said.

Before entering the void world, Zhang Ruochen had carefully read a book about it. The biggest native civilization was the Blue Dragon Dynasty. Its territory was wide and vast, taking up half of the Blue Dragon Mainland. It was brilliant and had many Saints. Its history stretched for 40,000 years.

For the past 300 years, the Ministry of War had sent many strong cultivators into the Blue Dragon Void World without being able to destroy the Blue Dragon Dynasty. It was evident how powerful they were.

Of course, it wasn’t that the Ministry of War couldn’t destroy them. It was because they knew that the Blue Dragon Void World would collapse soon. They didn’t dare pressure them too much in fear that the World Spirit would commit suicide with them. The Ministry of War didn’t use all their might because they didn’t want to suffer too many losses.

Many juniors of the Ministry of War had also entered the Blue Dragon Void World long ago to train. They were waiting for the void world to collapse so they would have a bigger advantage in getting more treasures.

Clearly, the Blue Dragon Dynasty was a civilization blessed by the World Spirit. Their capital would be the closest to the World Spirit too. It was known to be under god’s foot and was where all the spiritual meridians were gathered.

When the Blue Dragon Void World was completely destroyed, the World Spirit may very well come out of the capital.

Many of the human forces, savage beasts, and some other creatures had already gone toward the Blue Dragon Dynasty. That was where the World Spirit blessed. It would definitely

have more treasures than the Ingmar Desert. Competition would be fiercer as well.

Chapter 1110 - Arrive at Blue Dragon Dynasty

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The blood-red Gobi looked more beautiful under sunshine. Each stone was shining like a blood agate.

However, everything was crumbling.

Hua La.

The space crack kept being enlarged deep in the Gobi desert, and it kept spreading out, forming one chaos zone after another. The continents kept collapsing toward the hollow space.

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, White Li Princess and Sikong Two were all standing around the Gobi desert, looking at what was happening, exclaiming.

“The space structure is collapsing. After a while, the entire Ingmar Desert will be in ruins and chaos,” Huang Yanchen said.

The space kept collapsing, and more space saint jades showed up. Zhang Ruochen collected them all, storing them in his Spatial Ring.

Hong Long Long.

Dust ascended in the northwestern direction.

A group of forceful savage beasts rushed out of the blood-red dust, and their forces were tainted with blood.

There were more than ten Mud Deer Savage beasts, and all of them were level-six upper-class savage beasts. Their defense

power was at the same level as level-seven human half saints. Those with the best attacking power were as good as level-eight human half saints. Those who were the fastest were as fast as level-nine half saints.

Blackie, Sun Dadi, Sikong One and Zhao Shiqi all rode their Mud Deer Savage Beasts and rushed in that direction.

Sun Dadi started to roar in the distance, “Great gain! This is definitely a great gain! Mud Deer Beast race has collected lots of valuables, saintly springs, saintly stones, saintly jade, four saintly herbs and two saintly trees.”

Blackie sat on the back of Mud Deer Beast King, throwing Universe Spiritual Map to Zhang Ruochen. It said, “I’ve planted saintly herbs and saintly trees in the divine medicine garden.

Zhang Ruochen’s original plan was to go to Blue Dragon Dynasty.

However, Blackie knew about the treasure land of Mud Deer Beast race from Mud Deer Beast King.

Sun Dadi, Sikong One and Zhao Shiqi were all excited. They felt that they must do something big before they left. They tried to take all the valuables Mud Deer Beast race had collected.

That was a collection of valuables by a beast race, which was more than the wealth of a saint clan.

Hence they followed Blackie and Mud Deer Beast King to rob the treasure land of Mud Deer Beast race completely. All their spatial rings and spatial bracelets were filled.

Besides, Blackie and Zhao Shiqi also used their beast tamper skills to control all the upper-class level-six savage beasts and to turn them into beast pets.

Blackie was the reason why they could succeed.

If it wasn’t for Blackie who used an ancient beast tamper inscription to control Mud Deer Beast King, they wouldn’t have found the treasure land of Mud Deer Beast King.

Zhang Ruochen took the Universe Spiritual Map and injected it with a trace of his mind power. He saw four saintly herbs and two saintly trees planted in the divine medicine garden.

It was almost impossible to find a saintly herb, even in Kunlun's Field. Some of the saint clans without solid foundation only had one to two saintly herbs.

However, lots of saintly herbs and saintly trees were born in Blue Dragon Void World. One saintly herb or one saintly tree was enough to greatly improve someone's cultivation.

For both saintly herbs and saintly trees, the older they were, the stronger the effects were.

Which was why Blackie planted saintly herbs and saintly trees in the divine medicine garden to nurture them. In the future they could pick some leaves and refine them into divine medicine pills, which would be more effective.

Zhang Ruochen didn't care about the valuables other than saintly herbs and saintly trees, as those were the valuables they obtained with their own power.

"Let's head to Blue Dragon Dynasty now."

Zhang Ruochen led everyone into Space Transfer Formation.

More than ten mud deer beasts shrank their bodies, standing around the edge of Space Transfer Formation.

Zhang Ruochen was standing at the center of the transfer formation, locating the direction of Blue Dragon Dynasty. Space Transfer Formation slowly transferred them, giving out brighter purple light.

Hua.

The light shook.

Everyone, including those savage beasts, disappeared.

After a short while, the space crack spread in the deep area of the blood-red Gobi, making ear-piercing cracking sounds, tearing the space transfer formation into pieces, and they were annihilated with the continents around it.

Around three hundred thousand miles away, there was a green lake, and there weren't even ripples on the water. A group of white herons were flying on top of the lake, travelling within the mist. It looked like a beautiful painting.

Unlike the Ingmar Desert, this place was spectacular.

Hua.

A circle of energy ripples spread above the lake, terrifying the white herons. They lost their abilities to fly temporarily, and they all fell into the lake, making a thumping noise.

Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen and others all showed up at the center of the energy ripples. They flew to the ground and gathered around the edge of the lake.

Sun Dadi was still amazed by what had just happened. He said, "Space Transfer Formation is magical. We're now in some oasis tens of thousands of miles away from Ingmar Desert, right?"

"We're three hundred thousand miles away, according to my positioning. We're already in the territory of Blue Dragon Dynasty," Zhang Ruochen said.

Everyone was thrilled.

Someone could transport them hundreds of thousands of miles away using a formation. This was totally a mythical skill.

"There is a war going on in a human city seven hundred miles away," Zhao Shiqi said.

Zhao Shiqi's mind power was already at level forty-nine. He was a half saint with top-tier mind power.

Just now, he had spread his mind power and inspected fierce Holy Qi ripples, and he saw the war seven hundred miles away. He saw many creatures fighting each other, and the entire city was overwhelmed by the war.

"Let's go and have a look."

Zhang Ruochen jumped up on the back of Mud Deer Beast King and rushed forward riding the beast king.

The body of Mud Deer Beast King gradually became larger, and in the end, it became a gigantic beast hundreds of feet long, giving out holy blue light like an ancient divine beast. It could easily step across mountains and rivers.

Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, White Li Princess, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Zhao Shiqi, Sun Dadi and Blackie all jumped up on their own mud deer beasts and followed him.

It was an ancient city. It was grand and magnificent, and the city wall itself was spectacular. It was like a giant stone beast lying between two mountains.

Many evil spirits from the outer realm entered Blue Dragon Void World, which led to countless slaughterings. The aboriginal people all flooded the city to seek refuge, which greatly increased the population of the city to five million.

When Zhang Ruochen arrived, the city had already been conquered.

There were bodies everywhere outside the city, and the blood had been shed like a river. It was a tragic war, as many commoners who didn't practice martial arts were also slaughtered.

Most of those who got killed were aboriginal people in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Apparently, creatures from Kunlun's Field slaughtered all these people, but they were not sure which power was responsible for this.

“Amitabha!”

Sikong One and Sikong Two jumped off the mud deer beast, standing under a mountain of bodies, closing their eyes and mumbling scriptures for incarnation.

“How tragic!”

Sun Dadi looked solemn, and he felt heavy in his heart.

The slaughter here was more miserable than that in Yingsha City, as there were bodies of children and women, which made people sorrowful.

White Li Princess and Qing Mo walked to the body of a girl, looking at her, and they couldn't help tearing up.

Only Huang Yanchen looked apathetic as there didn't seem to be any emotions on her face.

She said, "This is the law of nature, and it couldn't be more normal. If Kunlun's Field is invaded in the future, we will also be slaughtered, and nobody will pity us."

"Why are you more indifferent than Zhang Ruochen?" White Li Princess said furiously.

Huang Yanchen didn't want to argue with her. She said, "The entire Blue Dragon Void World will be destroyed in the near future, and they'll still die after that. If you want to survive, stop being so empathetic. Don't let unnecessary sympathy blind you."

Huang Yanchen got into the ancient city, riding the mud deer beast.

The ancient city had just been conquered. There were still sounds of killing, fighting, crying and agony. All the different sounds were mixed together, composing a sad musical piece.

White Li put her hands on her waist, grinding her teeth, and said, "Zhang Ruochen, your fiancée couldn't be more selfish. I think you'd better divorce her as soon as possible."

Zhang Ruochen didn't respond to what White Li Princess said. He was still sitting on the back of the mud deer beast, looking into the distance at the dark green clouds above the ancient city.

They were ghostly clouds with thick wicked forces.

"It's the ancient ghost cultivation race and ancient necromancer race."

Zhang Ruochen sensed some familiar forces in the city, such as the princess of the ghost cultivation race, Feng Yinchuan, and the descendent of the ancient necromancer race, Yin Xuanji.

It wasn't outsiders like Zhang Ruochen who collected the most valuables. Instead, it was the aboriginal people in Blue Dragon

Void World.

There was countless wealth and resources in just one city.

It took the ancient ghost cultivation race and ancient necromancer race more than half a month and lots of energy to break the guarding formation of the city.

At this moment, they were slaughtering the people in the city and robbing them of their valuables.

Zhang Ruochen took out his Abyss Ancient Sword, and a massive sword intent spread out. He said, “Stop weeping, everyone. Let’s go to the city and force them to give us all the valuables. It’s dirty wealth anyhow, so better we take it than leave it to the ancient ghost cultivation race and ancient necromancer race.”

Sun Dadi, Sikong One, Sikong Two and Zhao Shiqi were all dazed. They wondered when Zhang Ruochen had become such a robber.

“He wants to fight fire with fire.” Blackie squinted his eyes and smiled.

White Li Princess stamped her foot and sneered, “Every man is for himself. No one is good.”

From her perspective, aboriginal human beings were already in agony, so Zhang Ruochen should help them defeat the ancient ghost cultivation race and ancient necromancer race and return all the valuables to the aboriginal people. That was what real heroes did.

What Zhang Ruochen did disappointed her deeply, as he behaved like a gangster.

Chapter 1111 - Arrival!

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Inside the ancient city were streets, castles and buildings in good order. It could be told that this was a once thriving and bustling city.

Yet at this moment, black ghost fog permeated the entire city, making shrill and terrifying screams, rushing over the street, leaving a trail of bodies behind.

The fire was burning, and the smoke billowed.

The ancient city with a long history was immediately engulfed in fire, turning into ruins and the playground for dead souls and battle corpses.

At the center of the ancient city were great beings from Ancient necromancer race and Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race led by Feng Yinchuan and Yin Xuanji, encircling the residence of the city leader.

The residence of the city leader looked like a castle.

The most powerful aboriginal monks all went back to the city leader residence, trying to use the guarding-residence formation to resist the outer-realm evil demons to save their lives.

“You outer-realm evil demons. You’re robbers and murderers. You’ve committed such crimes. You’ll certainly face a painful death.”

Someone cursed inside the city leader residence.

Outside the city leader residence.

Yin Xuanji, who was the descendant of Ancient necromancer race, was bandaged with a white shroud, and his body looked like a mummy with only his eyes revealed.

The white shroud was a priceless valuable as it used to be the shroud of a supreme saint.

Winding it around his body, Yin Xuanji could absorb the immense amount of power from the shroud, improving his strength drastically.

Yin Xuanji had a hoarse voice. He said, “No need to talk to them. Let’s make attacks together and destroy the defense formation and kill all the aboriginal monks. Remember, don’t ruin their corpses. I need them to make battle corpses.”

The powerful beings from Ancient necromancer race immediately performed hand print secret techniques, controlling the battle corpses behind them, attacking the residence of the city leader.

“Hong!”

“Hong Long!”

...

The energy ripples from some of the battle corpses were so powerful that they could match those of beast kings. Each strike could shake the entire guarding formation.

And then, Feng Yinchuan also gave an order that those from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race join and attack the defense formation.

After a short while, the defense formation was destroyed.

Both the ancient races combined sent twelve battle corpse kings and Unusual King, dashing forward and crushing the aboriginal monks.

Among the aboriginal monks was a martial king with six dragon shadows around him. He yelled, “Are you really going to kill us all?”

“So what?”

Yin Xuanji put on a wicked smile and said.

“Then we’ll die together.”

The eyes of the Six-dragon martial king turned red. He shouted, performed a sacrificial ancient technique, stamped on the ground and raced toward Yin Xuanji and his people from Ancient Necromancer Race.

The ancient technique he performed could exert destructive power by sacrificing himself before he died, which could annihilate all the creatures around him.

A monk who could refine six dragon shadows was called ‘martial king’ in Blue Dragon Void World, and it was a powerful being as strong as a beast king.

That six-dragon martial king had been severely injured, which was why he resorted to sacrificing himself.

He exploited all the energies in his body and ran fearlessly in his fastest speed.

“Interesting. He wants to drag me down with him.”

Yin Xuanji curled his lips, smiled wickedly. He then pointed with his fingers, hitting out Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, hitting the chest of the six-dragon martial king.

A cluster of ghostly clouds gushed out of Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, and the power from the ghostly clouds overwhelmed that of the six-dragon martial king, knocking him back.

“No!”

That six-dragon martial king yelled in agony. His heart was filled with bitterness. Unfortunately, his body exploded in the end, and the destructive power emanating from his body levelled the entire residence of the city leader.

The ultimate technique he performed to perish together with his enemies didn’t hurt the exotic-realm evil demons at all, instead, it killed a large number of aboriginal monks.

As for the aboriginal monks, some of them were injured while some of them got killed. They lost all the power to resist.

“Shame. He could’ve been a great battle corpse.”

Yin Xuanji took his Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble back, strolling it in his palm.

Because of the impressive ghost weapon, Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, Yin Xuanji was able to resist the ultimate savage counter-attack from that six-dragon martial king.

If it weren't for Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, he wouldn't have been able to make it back to Kunlun's Field from the netherworld.

Yin Xuanji then recalled Zhang Ruochen.

His eyes were filled with glumness, hatred and belligerence.

If he met Zhang Ruochen again, he would definitely make him a corpse slave, rendering him a slave of Yin's family forever.

An aggressive voice came from afar, "Everyone from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race, listen up! Give me all the valuables you have, otherwise, I'll kill you all."

All the monks from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race were infuriated by that.

"Who's being so arrogant?"

Yin Xuanji looked glummer. He looked to the direction where the voice came from.

A red-haired monkey was holding an iron rod and riding a Mud Deer Beast, walking toward the residence of the city leader.

It was Sun Dadi.

"What an arrogant bastard. Die!"

An elder from Ancient Necromancer Race manipulated a battle corpse wearing a black armor and hit toward Sun Dadi.

Sun Dadi waved his iron rod and crushed that battle corpse that was as powerful as a half saint, crushing even his bones and the iron armor.

And then, Sun Dadi held his iron rod over his head, exhaling sound wave ripples, shaking the space around him, "Anyone

who stands against me will die!”

The elder from Ancient Necromancer Race was terrified as he realized that red-haired monkey was not easy to fight against. He immediately retreated.

At another direction, Sikong One rolled up his sleeves and showed his thick arms. He was holding a golden staff, pointing at the monks from the two ancient races. He said, “Just behave and don’t do anything stupid. We just want valuables, not your lives.”

Sikong One didn’t look like a Buddhist monk at this moment, instead, he looked like an evil monk who came from a gang.

On a wide road in the east, Blackie and Zhao Shiqi led around ten mud deer beasts and crushed tens of members from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race, disabling them.

Blood-curdling scream came from the street.

Blackie stood up, put its claws behind its back and said, “The seniors from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race, you’d better behave yourselves and not resort to violence. If you anger me, I’ll make sure you bleed like hell today.”

Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo were also riding a mud deer beast in the west. The powerful forces from them forced the monks from Ancient Necromancer Race to keep retreating.

Great beings kept showing up at all directions, so apparently they were from the same team and wanted to rob Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race. Didn’t they know the power of these two ancient races?

Not only the monks from the two races were dazed, the aboriginal human beings in the city were also confused.

Yin Xuanji spotted Huang Yanchen and recognized her. She was a disciple of Empress Chi Yao, one of the nine heirs and fiancée of Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yinchuan, instead, looked to Sikong One and identified that monk. She pondered him for a while, and then, she looked

to the ancient city where ghost fog was tumbling as if she were looking for something. She then laughed like a bell, “Zhang Ruochen, now that you’ve arrived, why don’t you just show yourself?”

“What? Zhang Ruochen is here?”

“No wonder they’re so tyrannical. They work for Zhang Ruochen.”

...

The monks from Ancient Necromancer Race and Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race were all terrified.

Although the monks from the two ancient races had been staying in Blue Dragon Dynasty, they had also heard of the extraordinary achievements Zhang Ruochen had in Ingmar Desert, and they knew that he had become a top-tier great being.

He fought nineteen beast kings and Qingtian Tribe alone.

Anyone would be intimidated by him.

“Ao!”

Followed by a deafening beast roaring, Mud Deer Beast King walked through layers of ghost fog, arriving at the center of the ancient city. The force from the beast king was so strong that it terrified all the aboriginal people in the city.

Zhang Ruochen stood straight on the back of Mud Deer Beast King and said, “Now that you know I’m here, it’s time for you to leave all the valuables you collected and leave. At least you can save your life in this way.”

Yin Xuanji smiled contemptuously and said, “Zhang Ruochen, everyone is saying that you’re now the top of your peers and look down upon everyone at your age. I didn’t believe that at the beginning, but now I think you really are arrogant and believe that you’re invincible now.”

“You can try whether I am invincible or not.” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Great! You brought yourself to me, then I don’t need to go look for you anymore. Today, let’s settle our feud once and for all.” Yin Xuanji said.

Yin Xuanji didn’t underestimate Zhang Ruochen, instead, he treated Zhang Ruochen as a powerful enemy seriously.

Zhang Ruochen was able to domesticate a beast king to be his ride, which meant he might’ve actually become a top-tier great being.

“Young master, let me go test his power first.”

A pre-saint from Ancient Necromancer Race was worried that Yin Xuanji might be injured, so he went forward first.

That pre-saint was called Yin Xian, and he was three generations older than Yin Xuanji. He had passed two pre-saint trials, which made him one of the top ten great beings in Ancient Necromancer Race. He was a great power.

Yin Xian didn’t get close to Zhang Ruochen, instead, he used a secret technique hand print to control four silver-armored battle corpses to form a corpse formation, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Each silver-armored corpse had the power of a first-trial pre-saint.

The formation comprised of four silver-armored battle corpses was more powerful than a battle corpse king.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, hitting out his heir stamp and mobilizing Emperor Qi. The heir stamp that looked like a jade-made palace dived.

That one strike alone destroyed the corpse formation.

“Peng Peng.”

Following continuous cracking sounds, the forces from the four silver-armored battle corpses were annihilated, and the corpses became lumps of flesh.

Even Yin Xian was hit by the force from the heir stamp. He spit out blood as he was severely injured. He kept retreating until he got to the back of Yin Xuanji.

That force was definitely as powerful as a full-strength strike from a saint

Fortunately, Yin Xian was only hit by the repercussion of the heir stamp, otherwise, he would've been completely annihilated.

The monks from both ancient races were terrified as their legs shook.

Was that the power of a top-tier great being?

Besides, Zhang Ruochen looked calm. Obviously, he didn't even use all his power.

Chapter 1112 - Blood Of The Corpse Emperor

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Yin Xuanji was surprised. He had to re-judge Zhang Ruochen's abilities. If they fought one-on-one, he might very well lose.

"I must admit, you are indeed strong and have the qualifications to be arrogant. But can you really sweep everything by yourself?"

Yin Xuanji's eyes shone darkly. He took out a bell and shook it lightly.

Ding, ding.

Wind started blowing. Instantly, six Battle Corpse Kings flew out of the city manor and stood around Yin Xuanji.

Battle Corpse Kings were similar to Beast Kings. When the six Battle Corpse Kings were gathered together, shocking evil Qi emanated from them. It formed rings of black mist below Yin Xuanji's feet.

Some other Necromancer cultivators also controlled Battle Corpses to surround Zhang Ruochen. In addition to the six Battle Corpse Kings in the ancient city, there were dozens of Silver Armor Battle Corpse. They were as strong as First Trial Pre-Saints.

There were close to 1,000 Half-Saint Xuan Armor Battle Corpses too.

The Ancient Necromancer and Ghost Cultivation Races had very rich heritages. Their history reached even further than the

Taichi Way, Buddhist Way, and Confucianism Way, reaching all the way to the Ancient Wizard Way.

In a way, the Necromancer and Ghost Cultivation Races were branches of the Ancient Wizard Way.

The brilliant Ancient Wizard Way had disappeared in history while the two ancient races had lasted until today. In their golden era, they could be compared to the Immortal Vampires.

On the surface, they weren't as powerful as before. However, very few people knew just how much they'd hidden. Anyway, they were difficult to measure.

“You think two mere Battle Corpse Kings can stop a top-tier fighter?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. Holy Qi surged from his palm and entered the Heir Stamp. Rings of light pulsed from the stamp.

“Zhang Ruochen doesn't need to attack. I alone can make them go ashes to ashes, dirt to dirt.”

Sikong One chuckled. He slammed his gold cane into the ground. Sparks flew. With a boom, the entire ancient place shook. A wide crack opened up in the center of the vast street, splitting the city in half.

The cultivators of the two races were all shocked. Gasps rose amongst them.

“Another terrible figure.”

They all stared at Sikong One in terror. Majestic Buddhist chants came from the distance. A monk was reciting a hymn.

Various gazes looked in the direction of the chanting. They saw a monk sitting cross-legged in the air. Buddhist light shone from him. He was reciting the Kṣitigarbha Sūtra to send the evil spirits to peace.

The ghostly clouds shrouding the ancient city gradually purified. The blue sky and white clouds were exposed again.

That monk was Sikong Two. The Buddhist hymn spread throughout the city. The chanted words formed various golden characters that flew in the sky.

The dead and evil spirits of the Necromancer Race were all wailing. Some weaker ones dissipated into black fog as soon as they were hit by the Buddhist words.

Feng Yinchuan's expression turned serious. "The Ksitigarbha can send dead souls off. It's used specifically against the Necromancer Race. Sikong Two's knowledge in it has reached a very advanced level. I must take our cultivators away. Otherwise, we will suffer great losses."

Yin Xuanji was in trouble too. It wasn't hard if he went against only Zhang Ruochen. However, the cultivators with him were all top figures. Once they started battling, the Necromancer and Ghost Cultivation Races would suffer great losses even if they won.

Did they have to escape so pathetically?

Yin Xuanji was unwilling to do so, but his logic still defeated his impulse. He said to Feng Yinchuan, "Lead the Ghost Cultivation Race away. I'll follow with the Necromancer Race. If I can kill Sikong Two in the chaos, things might change. At that time, come back and we'll kill all of Zhang Ruochen's forces from two sides."

Feng Yinchuan didn't hesitate. She led the Ghost Cultivation cultivators to transform into black clouds, charging toward where Sun Dadi was. She could see that Sun Dadi's direction was the weakest. It was the fastest way to leave the city.

"You want to leave without giving us the treasure?"

Flames shot out from Sun Dadi's body. He fended off the ghostly fog. At the same time, he hurled his metal staff out. He sent dozens of Ghost Cultivation members flying back. They landed as ground flesh.

Just as the Ghost Cultivation Race was trying to break through, the Necromancers all attacked Zhang Ruochen and Sikong Two. Some of the Battle Corpses formed large formations, surrounding Sikong One, Huang Yanchen, Blackie, and Zhao Shiqi.

Close to 1,000 Half-Saint Battle Corpses attacked at once. The scene was shocking and a portion of the city caved in

immediately.

“Zhang Ruochen, it’s time to die!”

Yin Xuanji tossed the bell. It floated in the air and shook lightly. When the six Battle Corpse Kings heard the ringing, they picked up their black spears and attacked Zhang Ruochen.

They shone with brilliant golden light as if their bodies were made of gold. They were so powerful that their spears could shatter mountains.

Battle Corpse Kings were made from the corpses of Saints. After adding in some mysterious metal and letting them absorb Corpse Qi, they could keep evolving into a Saint Corpse King.

Zhang Ruochen struck with the Heir Stamp. He activated the Emperor Qi and crashed against two Battle Corpse Kings. However, the Battle Corpse Kings were very resilient. They didn’t disassemble. There was only a slight dent where the Heir Stamp hit them.

They quickly climbed out of the rubble. Screaming, they grabbed their icy spears and started attacking again.

Their flesh bodies are even harder than some lower Saint bodies, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Battle Corpse Kings were as skilled as Beast Kings, but their defensive abilities were shockingly strong. It was very hard to kill them entirely.

Yin Xuanji scoffed. “Zhang Ruochen, I will kill Sikong Two first and then come kill you. You think you came to steal the treasure. In actuality, you came to die.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen pulled out the Abyss Ancient Sword. He swept it across, leaving a crescent trail of Sword Qi. It sliced a Battle Corpse King’s waist.

With a rip, the Battle Corpse King was cut in half. Even when cut apart, it still tried to attack.

Zhang Ruochen struck again. Sword Qi flew out like a web and shattered the Battle Corpse King into hundreds of pieces.

Seeing this, Yin Xuanji lost his composure. “How is this possible? Battle Corpse Kings are made from the body of a Saint and contain deep sea gold. How can it be sliced apart so easily?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t answer. He attacked once again with a saint technique. He halved another Battle Corpse King. The two halves flew out to the left and right.

This was too terrifying. Two Battle Corpse Kings were killed in an instant. This kind of loss made Yin Xuanji want to spit out blood. He couldn’t go against Sikong Two. Instead, he lifted the Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble. It hovered above his hands.

With the current situation, he had to kill Zhang Ruochen first.

“Blood of the Corpse Emperor,” Yin Xuanji whispered.

Green light flooded out of the Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble, dyeing the entire city green. A drop of green blood flowed out of the marble, dripping onto Yin Xuanji’s forehead. It seeped into the cloth, melding with his body.

Whoosh!

Horrifying Corpse Qi radiated from Yin Xuanji’s body and he doubled in size. Blue fur covered the cloth around him. Right now, Yin Xuanji’s aura was even stronger than the six Battle Corpse Kings together.

“Die!”

He was so fast; he crashed against Zhang Ruochen in an instant. The two flew back at once, shattering the wall of the manor. Claws grew out of Yin Xuanji’s fingers. He swiped at Zhang Ruochen’s neck.

Boom.

A blue dragon flashed down Zhang Ruochen’s arm. He pushed a palm out, hitting Yin Xuanji’s chest and sending him flying.

Yin Xuanji flew back around 200 feet before dissolving Zhang Ruochen's palm force. With a boom, he landed on the ground, creating a spider web of cracks.

Zhang Ruochen stood up from the rubble and dusted himself. He suddenly felt dizzy and his vision went black. Icy cold strength came from his neck. It was corroding his body.

Yin Xuanji's claws had scraped past Zhang Ruochen's neck, leaving behind three shallow cuts. The cuts had already turned black and corpse hair grew out. It was spreading out too, reaching for his face and shoulders.

Such powerful corpse poison.

Surprised, Zhang Ruochen immediately started using the Emperor Ming Nine-Sky Scripture. He activated Holy Qi to circulate around him, finally dissolving the corpse poison.

The hair around his neck fell off. Even the three cuts healed completely.

Chapter 1113 - Corpse Emperor Arrives

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“A small marble contains the blood of a corpse emperor.”

Zhang Ruochen mumbled and looked confused.

The blood of the corpse emperor inside Green Eye Blue Blood Marble was strange. Yin Xuanji’s power surged after only absorbing one drop of it, and he was now at the same level as top-tier great beings.

“Howl!”

Yin Xuanji roared, and he dashed toward Zhang Ruochen rapidly like a trace of white light again.

This time, Zhang Ruochen had prepared himself for this. He took a step back with his right foot, lunging and holding his sword with both of his hands, reaching the status of Human Sword. He then rushed forward like a trace of light.

“Peng!”

The tip of Abyss Ancient Sword hit the chest of Yin Xuanji.

Instead of piercing through his body, it made the sound of a clash between gold and stones as if the sword struck an iron mountain.

Both of them bounced back at the same time, and they were hundreds of miles away from each other again.

Thin golden patterns emerged from the shroud enveloping Yin Xuanji, and they were intertwined with each other.

It was the shroud that resisted the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Yin Xuanji said with a hoarse voice, “I have the shroud from Emperor Tianming to protect my body, and I have the blood of the corpse emperor. You’re going to die today for sure.”

“I reckon you’re not strong enough to do that.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Yin Xuanji raised both of his claws, and a blue shadow of a corpse came into being behind him, emanating potent and ghastly power.

Zhang Ruochen kept infusing the Abyss Ancient Sword with Holy Qi inside his body, activating two thousand inscriptions in the sword.

He waved his sword again.

Destruction of Thousand-patterns was let out with Sword Qi, knocking Yin Xuanji away until he bounced tens of miles far, hitting the wall of the ancient city.

Even with the shroud to protect him, Yin Xuanji still couldn’t ward off that strike completely. Blood was spilled on the shroud.

After becoming a level-eight half saint, Zhang Ruochen’s Holy Qi was also improved to another level. Even if he used Destruction of Thousand-patterns several times, he still had abundant Holy Qi.

He performed Great Spatial Move, arriving at the top of the city wall and mobilized Destruction of Thousand-patterns again.

“Hua!”

The Abyss Ancient Sword dived like a light shuttle, falling on the ruins.

Sword Qi was too terrific, and the piercing power was too strong, leaving a black hole with a diameter of thirty feet.

Zhang Ruochen frowned as he could feel that he didn’t hit Yin Xuanji with that strike.

“Come back.”

Zhang Ruochen extended his fingers and pinched in the space.

Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of the abyss and fell back to his hand.

Ten miles away from Zhang Ruochen, Yin Xuanji rushed out of underground. He held his hands up, and Holy Qi gushed out of his palms, striking Green Eye Blue Blood Marble.

Blood-red inscriptions emerged from the marble. They gathered together, forming a ferocious ghost eye.

The ghost eye didn't open.

Even so, the creatures in the ancient city could feel a suffocating power emanating from Green Eye Blue Blood Marble.

“Terrific energy ripples. It's like the king of the hell is coming to the world.”

“What's happening? Are creatures from state of saint coming to Blue Dragon Void World?”

...

All the monks felt an invisible force as if the sky were falling and the ground were sinking. Their legs couldn't help shaking.

Zhang Ruochen was also moved. He wondered, “Is there a corpse emperor inside the blue marble?”

It was difficult for Yin Xuanji to support an entire Blue Eye Green Blood Marble as he didn't have enough cultivation. His arm kept shaking, and he yelled, “Open!”

The ghost eye on Blue Eye Green Blood Marble opened a crack and shot a trace of blood-red light toward Zhang Ruochen.

Instead of resisting it directly, Zhang Ruochen performed Great Spatial Move and dodged it.

Even so, his left shoulder was hit by the light, which wounded his shoulder and led to blood.

“Hua!”

The second trace of light was shot and hit toward Zhang Ruochen.

“Spatial twist.”

Zhang Ruochen let out a space domain, mobilizing the power of the space, forming six layers to twisted space.

However, the power contained in that beam was extremely powerful. It wasn't twisted much and flew across the right cheek of Zhang Ruochen, leaving a scar.

It almost pierced through Zhang Ruochen's head.

Yin Xuanji was also under lots of pressure. His cultivation wasn't strong enough to control the ghost eye. He could barely mobilize the power in Blue Eye Green Blood Marble.

Each hit made a cracking sound on his body, emanating a cluster of bloody mist.

They kept fighting each other, and each time, Zhang Ruochen could dodge the beam.

“Slash!”

Eventually, Zhang Ruochen seized a chance to rush to above Yin Xuanji and slashed a space crack.

“Pu!”

A left arm of Yin Xuanji was cut off, and he bled like hell.

The defense of the shroud was indeed impressive, yet it couldn't ward off the power of the space.

“No! I'll fight you again!” Yin Xuanji yelled.

Zhang Ruochen wielded his Abyss Ancient Sword again, and it slashed his body.

Yin Xuanji yelled in agony, and he wasn't able to continue manipulating the Blue Eye Green Blood Marble. He took tens of steps back, kneeling on the ground with one knee.

At another direction, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Sikong One, Blackie and Zhao Shiqi finally broke the corpse formation.

Without the corpse formation, the monks from Ancient Necromancer Race couldn't suppress them at all.

Huang Yanchen looked cold. She waved her divine sword, and every time she struck, there would be one monk from Ancient

Necromancer Race killed.

Sikong One was severely injured in the corpse formation.

He couldn't be more furious. He held the Buddha staff in his hand, disintegrating all the battle corpses.

After all, he was a real buddha monk, so Sikong One didn't decide to slaughter, otherwise, he would've killed those monks from Ancient Necromancer Race.

As the monks saw Yin Xuanji severely injured by Zhang Ruochen, they lost all their spirits and couldn't organize a formation to make attack anymore.

The monks from Ancient Necromancer Race were being crushed.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Blue Eye Green Blood Marble, knowing that it was an invaluable treasure of Ancient Necromancer Race, so he reached out his hand and tried to take it.

However, the Blue Eye Green Blood Marble shook, getting rid of the Holy Qi mobilized by Zhang Ruochen, and flew up in the sky.

Zhang Ruochen was shocked by what he saw.

Blue Eye Green Blood floated in the air, and the voice of a young man came out, "I can't believe I can find someone amazing like you in this era. Impressive."

It was a very young voice, yet it still felt a bit ancient and experienced.

And then, a young man who looked eighteen walked out of Blue Eye Green Marble, wearing a black cape.

That young man looked exquisite, and his sense organs were more delicate than those of a girl. He put his arms behind his back as he was the king of the world.

All the monks and battle corpses groveled and yelled, "Corpse Emperor, your majesty!"

The bodies of the aboriginal people also climbed up and kneeled down, groveling at the young man standing in the air.

All the corpses were groveling at him.

Corpse emperor?

“How is it possible? If someone like Corpse Emperor enters Blue Dragon Void Space, the entire world will crumble.”

Zhao Shiqi felt a chill on his back, and he couldn't even stand up on his feet.

Blackie was also scared. It said, “Perhaps he is indeed the Corpse Emperor, but I think this is only a human shape formed by the corpse Qi of Corpse Emperor instead of the real body of Corpse Emperor. The real body of Corpse Emperor might be hiding in that Blue Eye Green Blood Marble and can't get into Blue Dragon Void World.”

“Then why should we be afraid of him. Let's kill him now.”
Sikong One yelled.

Blackie shot him a glance and said, “Even if this is only a corpse Qi of Corpse Emperor, it's still much more powerful than us.”

Huang Yanchen rushed forward and stood beside Zhang Ruochen.

There was a faint smile on the face of Corpse Emperor. He said, “I died seventy thousand years ago, and I thought I could never be reborn again. Little did I expect was that my corpse gave birth to new consciousness under the nurturing of Blue Eye Green Blood Marble, and I have another chance to live again.”

“Seventy thousand years ago...”

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes. He reckoned a bit and figured out the identity of Corpse Emperor.

Someone major who died seventy thousand years ago. He could only think of one possibility.

“Hua!”

Corpse Emperor dived and rushed into the body of Yin Xuanji, trying to merge himself with him.

Yin Xuanji screamed in agony.

“Why are you swallowing my saint soul, Corpse Emperor?”

“Ever since you were born, you have been destined to be the carrier of me. Only after swallowing your saint soul and borrowing your flesh can I live again.”

“So, you gave me ‘Blue Blood Scripture’ just for today.” Yin Xuanji screamed in anger.

“Your original body is the best carrier, but you’re so weak that you left it in the netherworld. As for this body, I can make do with it.”

...

The roaring from Yin Xuanji kept fainting until it completely withered away.

And then, the left arm of Yin Xuanji grew out again, and the shroud was burst by a powerful force. It was shattered and the remains fell on the ground like white butterflies.

A young man who was around eighteen years old stood at the center of the clothes, and he looked marvelous. His long hair flickered in the wind like a waterfall. He had a nicely-built body with perfect skin. His eyes were gleaming with green light, and there was no corpse Qi on him, instead, he looked intelligent.

“Finally, I’m back.”

Corpse Emperor looked at his hands, mumbled and smiled elegantly.

Sikong One, Zhao Shiqi and the others all figured out who this Corpse Emperor really was. They looked terrified and couldn’t calm themselves down.

It was a great emperor who established a central kingdom. It had been seventy thousand years since he died, and now, he arrived on the earth again for a second chance to live.

Corpse Emperor wasn’t at his prime and he was a newborn. He hadn’t reached state of saint yet.

However, by barely standing there quietly gave everyone a lot of pressure, which destroyed the fighting will of everyone.

Perhaps only Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen still had the spirits to fight at any time.

Chapter 1114 - Reward

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Where’s the other Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble?” the Corpse Emperor muttered to himself. He looked up toward the outside of the city and reached out a white hand.

Outside, Princess White Li, Sun Dadi, and the Sikong Two were fighting intensely with the Ghost Cultivation Race.

Princess White Li had attacked because the bloodshed by the Ghost Cultivation Race had infuriated her. She wanted to teach them a lesson.

With the power of the three top figures, they actually stopped all the strongest fighters of the ancient race, making them unable to escape.

Whoosh!

A Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble flew out of Princess Feng Yinchan’s body. It passed over the towering city wall and landed in the Corpse Emperor’s hand.

The cultivators outside the city finally sensed the powerful aura coming from the Corpse Emperor. It was so terrifying that even Pre-Saints felt fear.

“What’s happening?”

Sun Dadi and Sikong Two sensed that there might be a huge change within the city. They stopped blocking the Ghost Cultivation Race cultivators. Like two beams of light, they rushed inside the city.

Princess White Li’s pretty eyes looked at the ancient city too. She retreated and used the Short Distance Poles Apart

technique, arriving at the city center even before Sun Dadi and Sikong Two.

“Who is it with such a strong and terrifying aura?” Sun Dadi was covered in goosebumps as soon as he entered the city.

A gust of cold Qi rushed into his head. He felt the urge to turn and run even before he saw the Corpse Emperor.

“The more terrifying the enemy is, the more we should hurry over. Senior Uncle and his few men probably can’t handle them.”

Sikong Two grabbed Sun Dadi and forged on. They didn’t stop until they were hundreds of feet away from the Corpse Emperor.

“Finally together!” The Corpse Emperor held a Green Eyes Blue Blood Marble in each hand and pressed them onto his eyes.

The marbles fit perfectly with his eyes. They grew translucent and brilliant, like two pieces of lively jade. Zhang Ruochen knew that the Corpse Emperor’s eyes were very dangerous. They could unleash the power to kill lower level Saints.

The Corpse Emperor’s eyes landed on Zhang Ruochen and he nodded softly. “I have always been inside the Green Eyes Blue Blood Marbles, but I’ve heard of your name before. Saint Monk Xumi chose you as his heir. This means that he believes you can replace him in managing the order of time and space in Kunlun’s Field.”

“You have met Saint Monk Xumi before?” Zhang Ruochen didn’t back off. He met eyes with the Corpse Emperor. His gaze carried sharp strength.

“I saw him once.” The Corpse Emperor was very graceful and had a classy and elegant temperament. “Because of Saint Monk Xumi, I won’t make it hard for you juniors.”

Despite his words, Zhang Ruochen still didn’t lower his guard. The Holy Qi within him was on high alert to respond to any sudden attacks.

The Corpse Emperor was very handsome. He strode forward powerfully, robe fluttering, and walked toward the city gates. The cultivators of the Necromancer Race fell into panic. Wouldn't they be unprotected before Zhang Ruochen once the Corpse Emperor left?

"Your Majesty, please take us with you!" a Necromancer Pre-Saint called out.

The Corpse Emperor clearly had something important to do. He didn't plan on taking the cultivators of the Necromancer Race. Without looking back, he said, "Zhang Ruochen, if you are let go, then let the others go as well. If we meet again, it will not be life-or-death either."

The voice grew thinner and thinner until it disappeared with the Corpse Emperor's figure.

Finally, Blackie let out a long sigh as if having received salvation. "I suspect that the Corpse Emperor doesn't really want to let us go. It's just that he was given a new life and wasn't confident in killing all of us."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. "Don't say it, even if you know it. Once you say it, we can only fight him to the death."

Without a doubt, the Corpse Emperor's abilities had surpassed the top-tier's level. However, Zhang Ruochen's group wasn't weak either. They couldn't be defeated so easily. Zhang Ruochen, Blackie, and Princess White Li were top-tier figures. If the two Sikongs worked together, they counted as top-tier as well.

With such a powerful force, even the Corpse Emperor would only have a 50% chance of winning if they started fighting. He wasn't stupid. He'd waited for 70,000 years to receive a new life and live again. How could he do something without much confidence?

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen didn't want to go up against the Corpse Emperor either. Once they fell into a life-or-death battle, they would suffer great losses even if they could force the Corpse Emperor back. More than half of them might die.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't take losses like this. Neither party wanted to fight or thought that it was necessary.

Sikong One rubbed his hands. "Emperor Tianming has been dead for 70,000 years and was reincarnated to live a second life. This world is becoming stranger and stranger. Could it be as my master said, that there must be a fall if one rises too far. There will be an enormous trial after the golden era?"

In his previous life, the Corpse Emperor had been Emperor Tianming—the first human emperor after the middle ages.

"In other eras, each one of the nine Heirs would be undefeatable within their generation," Sun Dadi said. "But in this era, there is a large group of people like them. Even those not from this era force themselves in. Is this truly a coincidence?"

As Sun Dadi spoke, he glanced at Zhang Ruochen meaningfully. Whether it was the ancient races among the savage beasts, or Emperor Tianming and Zhang Ruochen from the human race, none of them belonged to this era.

However, they'd all appeared now. This wasn't normal at all.

Blackie's expression was serious. "The Corpse Emperor must want to steal the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World. Only then can he reach the state he was in quickly."

"Then what are we waiting for? Let's depart as well." Sun Dadi was excited. He knew that the capital of the Blue Dragon Dynasty was where everyone was gathered and he couldn't wait to hurry over.

"No hurry. There is still some time before the World Spirit will show itself. There's no need for us to hurry over now."

Zhang Ruochen had wanted to reach the capital as soon as possible, but he changed his mind after seeing the Corpse Emperor.

A while later, there would be bloodshed in the capital. The stronger one was, the more advantages one would have. Zhang Ruochen decided to use all the divine medicine within the scroll world to raise everyone's cultivations.

He was also waiting for the blooming period of the Carnivorous Holy Flower to end. Once it bore a fruit, Zhang Ruochen would be confident in countering the Corpse Emperor even if they were alone.

Then Zhang Ruochen looked at the cultivators of the Necromancer Race.

“Boss, are we really letting them go?” Sun Dadi asked.

“There’s no need to offend the Corpse Emperor now,” Huang Yanchen said. “If we fight against the Corpse Emperor, it’ll only make it easier for the other forces.”

“Then, let them leave,” Zhang Ruochen decided. “However, they must leave behind all the treasures they found.”

“Hehe.”

Blackie, Sun Dadi, Sikong One, and Zhao Shiqi all smiled in excitement. They rushed into the crowd of Necromancers and started robbing them. A while later, there was a huge mountain inside the manor. It was all saint stones, jades, pill bottles, and saint weapons. Each piece could be sold for a great price in Kunlun’s Field.

Some Necromancer Half-Saints tried to fight back. Zhang Ruochen attacked without hesitation and killed them. Using them to make a statement, the other Necromancers all knelt down in fear. They didn’t dare to even think about protesting.

The three men and one cat were like bandits. They swiped everything from the Necromancer cultivators. Practically only their clothes were left.

The Necromancers were depressed. They felt extremely mistreated. They’d come to the Blue Dragon Void World and ran around everywhere, fighting everywhere. They’d shed so much blood, sweat, and tears to collect all these treasures.

Now, the treasures were all taken away, along with the treasures that they’d brought here with them.

“Okay, you can go now!” Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, signaling for them to leave.

The Necromancers gazed at the treasures piled up in the manor longingly. They couldn't move at all. They wanted to take back one or two.

“What are you looking at?” Sikong One yelled. “Stop thinking about things that don't belong to you. I've never seen people as greedy as you all.”

The Necromancers didn't dare to keep looking. They turned their eyes and hurriedly escaped from the city, afraid that Zhang Ruochen would change his mind.

Blackie hurried back from outside the city in a streak of light. It shook its head at Zhang Ruochen. “The Ghost Cultivation Race has already run far away. It's hard to catch up.”

“Then we won't deal with them. The treasures we've collected this time are already a lot.”

The Ghost Cultivation Race had left in a hurry. They didn't take that much away. Most of the treasures of the city were piled inside the manor. There was a rich variety; there were even dozens of divine medicines.

Zhang Ruochen put the saint stones, jades, and weapons into the scroll world. He also planted the medicine into the divine medicine garden. Then he divided the other treasures between everyone according to their contributions.

After all this, Zhang Ruochen sent Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi out. He ordered them to search for information in the Blue Dragon Dynasty's capital and have an idea of the situation.

After they left, Huang Yanchen walked out. “You put them beside you. This means that many people will guess that Gu Linfeng, Deity of the Blood God Sect, is Zhang Ruochen.”

“Gu Linfeng's identity is indeed still valuable.” Thinking for a moment, Zhang Ruochen decided, “After they return from the capital, I'll send them into the scroll world to cultivate.”

The Blood God Sect had a secret with the Bottomless Abyss. Zhang Ruochen still wanted to investigate it after returning to Kunlun's Field. It would be easier to use Gu Linfeng's identity.

After settling everything, Zhang Ruochen entered the scroll world. He isolated himself again to open the 36 meridians in his limbs.

At the same time, Blackie entered the divine medicine garden. It picked some divine leaves to produce a pill that could improve everyone's cultivations a bit more.

The final battle of the Blue Dragon Void World was about to come. All the forces hurried over to the Blue Dragon Dynasty. The stronger one was, the higher the possibility of stealing the World Spirit.

Chapter 1115 - Instigation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

What had happened would never be concealed. Everyone in Blue Dragon Void World knew about this war.

“Zhang Ruochen went to Blue Dragon Dynasty and led a forceful army to crush both Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race, robbing all the valuables they obtained.”

The news was spread, shocking all the powers.

According to the news, Zhang Ruochen suppressed the two ancient races with only a couple of people to help him, robbing all the valuables.

Ancient Necromancer Race and Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race were both powerful races, and the alliance they formed was the most powerful human alliance in Kunlun's Field.

However, such a powerful alliance was defeated by Zhang Ruochen and a small team led by him, which was surprising.

Zhang Ruochen was already stronger than they imagined.

All the powers who wanted to seize World Spirit were intimidated. If Zhang Ruochen decided to fight for the World Spirit, they would have a much lower chance.

A pre-saint from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race showed up outside the capital. He said, “Zhang Ruochen is like a sharp blade. His sword technique might have surpassed that of Xue Wuye, and his mind power is greater than that of Sui Han, and his body strength can outmatch that of Monk Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon. No one under state of saint can fight him anymore.”

That rumor alone made Zhang Ruochen four powerful enemies.

The monks from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race knew for sure that they were not Zhang Ruochen's match, so they tried to instigate others' hate toward Zhang Ruochen to destroy him with a borrowed sword.

People cared about their reputations.

Aside from few who were aloof, most people cared about their reputations at some level.

Xue Wuye was a descendant of Sword Emperor, and he was called the best sword master, and he was also an heir, yet someone now claimed that Zhang Ruochen was better at sword techniques than him.

What would Xue Wuye think about that?

Sui Han was born in Zither Clan, one of the four holy places of Confucianism and Daoism. His mind power could match that of Emperor Wen eight hundred years ago. He was ranked number one in the test and became the rising star of First Central Empire.

Now, someone claimed Zhang Ruochen had better mind power than him.

What would Sui Han think?

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Monk Lidi had the sturdiest body constitution under state of saint, and all the creatures wished to see them fight to decide who the stronger one was.

Now, someone claimed that Zhang Ruochen's body constitution was better than that of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Monk Lidi.

Even if Xue Wuye, Sui Han, Monk Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon didn't care about what other people thought, those who followed them would.

Monks from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race thought that a mere rumor was not enough to put Zhang Ruochen to death.

On the same day, the princess from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race showed up outside the capital city and said, “Zhang Ruochen’s personalities have completely changed. He’s become a cruel and bloodthirsty person, and he slaughtered many aboriginal people in the ancient city for the valuables. Almost one million aboriginal people were killed, and their bodies piled up like mountains. It was beyond tragic.”

What Feng Yinchuan said led to a great storm.

Not only the human monks from Kunlun’s Field were in shock, the aboriginal great beings in the capital city were also furious.

Savage beasts and immortal vampires did commit massacre in Blue Dragon Void World, turning cities into slaughter houses.

However, the aboriginal people were also human beings in Blue Dragon Void World.

The human powers from Kunlun’s Field didn’t want to be known for killing their own people as they feared that they might be criticized by their enemies.

Which was why they all had constraint on their behavior and didn’t kill any ordinary human beings.

However, Zhang Ruochen became a massive murderer. He not only killed ordinary people, but also slaughtered everyone in the entire city.

This was madness.

“If Zhang Ruochen dared massacre all the people in a city in Blue Dragon Void World, he’s definitely going to be crueller back to Kunlun’s Field.”

“Zhang Ruochen is the devil. As long as we can kill him in Blue Dragon World, we can’t let him get back to Kunlun’s Field.”

...

Powers who previously had grudges against Zhang Ruochen also emerged, spreading rumors and instigating people’s hatred against Zhang Ruochen.

Feng Yinchuan couldn't be happier to see this as Zhang Ruochen had made too many enemies before.

Three hundred miles away from the capital city was a tent where all the monks from Moon Worship Demonic Sect gathered here.

Mu Lingxi heard of the rumor. She immediately walked out of the tent and confronted Feng Yinchuan, "You Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race suffered from a huge defeat under Zhang Ruochen. You spread the rumor to provoke other powers to fight Zhang Ruochen with you because you know you're not his match."

Feng Yinchuan stood at the top of a mountain and responded, "My race indeed suffered from a huge defeat this time, and all the valuables we obtained were robbed by Zhang Ruochen. However, I'm the princess of my race, and I'm a person with integrity. I would never vilify him."

Feng Yinchuan said it on purpose that Zhang Ruochen took away the valuables owned by Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race.

After all, telling people that Zhang Ruochen had obtained an immense number of valuables intrigued most people.

An innocent man could get into trouble because of his wealth.

Actually, Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race didn't suffer from any losses. Zhang Ruochen only took away the valuables collected by Ancient Necromancer Race.

Mu Lingxi didn't believe what Feng Yinchuan said at all. She said, "Not long ago, Zhang Ruochen resisted nineteen beast kings all by himself in Yingsha City, saving countless lives of human monks. Now, you said that he's become bloodthirsty and slaughtered an entire city of people, and you expected me to believe that?"

Feng Yinchuan responded again, "What Zhang Ruochen did in the military base in Yingsha City was indeed amazing and worth praising. However, I just met him not long ago, and he's now a completely different person. He's so different from before, and I think it's possibly because he has gone mad practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm."

Gone mad because of practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm?

This wasn't some lie randomly made up by Feng Yinchuan. She gave it some thoughts before saying out loud.

After all, in the history of Thousand Buddha Way, many people had gone mad practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Death Zen Elder was the perfect example.

Six hundred years ago, Death Zen Elder used to be the peerless genius in Thousand Buddha Way. He was wholesome and had profound knowledges in Buddhist Way. Many people believed that he could be the second Emperor Buddha.

However, right after he completed the eleventh palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, the Masculine Qi inside his body could be suppressed anymore, and he went mad.

After a while, he betrayed Thousand Buddha Way and established Death Zen Sect, committing countless slaughtering in Kunlun's Field, which was a catastrophe in the human history.

Those with greater gifts would be more damaging when they went off the wagon.

“Will Zhang Ruochen become the next Death Zen Elder?”

“Perhaps he'll be more terrifying than Death Zen Elder.”

“I heard that Zhang Ruochen has already completed the tenth palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Perhaps something did happen to him when he was practicing the eleventh palm.”

“Zhang Ruochen seized the valuables collected by Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race. He must have lots of wealth now. If we can get that...”

Many people chose to believe Feng Yinchuan, after all, she was in a high social status in Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race as she was the princess. She might succeed to the throne.

An important person like that wouldn't spread rumors in general.

Besides, both Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race had both submitted to the imperial government already, so they were demi-official powers, which made what Feng Yinchuan said much more convincing.

Though Mu Lingxi didn't believe what Feng Yinchuan said, she was still worried about Zhang Ruochen. She was afraid that he might have actually gone mad when refining Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and got doomed forever.

She hoped that Zhang Ruochen could show up as soon as possible to break the rumors.

However, after several days of waiting, Mu Lingxi still didn't see Zhang Ruochen come to the capital city, which made her heart sink.

The rumor was spread more and more widely. The monks were running around, provoking people to encircle Zhang Ruochen to get the valuables from him.

Ten days later, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon led tens of savage beast races to the suburban area of the capital city. After hearing about Zhang Ruochen, he said, "If he dares come to the capital city, I'll be the one to kill him. He's not strong enough to outmatch me."

Monk Lidi also rushed to the suburban area of the capital city and mumbled, "If Donator Zhang really slaughtered all the aboriginal people because he went back by practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, I'll also fight him and bring him to Brahma Way."

The capital city of Blue Dragon Dynasty was at the intersection of the spiritual meridian in Blue Dragon Void World, and it also had the most solid fortress in the entire void world. Even the power from state of saint couldn't break it.

More than half of the top-tier aboriginal great beings now gathered in the capital city.

A seven-dragon martial lord stood on top of the wall, claiming that he would kill Zhang Ruochen to revenge those who were lost.

None of the powers from Kunlun's Field were able to break into the capital city. They could only wait in the suburban area, waiting for a great change to come, after which the guarding-city formation would be destroyed.

In the recent times, earthquakes kept happening in Blue Dragon Void World, leading to cracks that separated rivers and mountains. Lava burst out of some of the famous and beautiful mountains, turning the areas around them lifeless.

Blue Dragon Void World was very unstable, and it was going to crumble shortly.

After that, World Spirit would be born again.

...

Zhang Ruochen was refining divine blood in Scroll World, hitting the thirty-six apertures in his legs and feet.

There were two deity prints at the bottom of his feet. And they looked like a green luan and a red phoenix.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized the power of divine blood and infused it into the two deity prints. Gradually, the green luan deity print and the red phoenix deity print became clearer and clearer, and their sounds started to echo.

“Peng Peng.”

Using the power of the two deity prints, Zhang Ruochen opened all the forty apertures on his feet. There were seven apertures at the bottom of each foot, and they were arranged in the order of an astral picture.

It was way easier to open the fourteen apertures on his feet than to open the twenty-two apertures on his legs.

Zhang Ruochen kept absorbing divine blood and mobilizing the bloody Qi. After a short while, he opened all the thirty-six apertures.

Around half a year passed in Scroll World.

Zhang Ruochen sanctified all the thirty-six apertures on his legs and feet, and his cultivation had reached pinnacle level-eight half saint.

He stepped on the ground, mobilizing the bloody Qi inside his body. Suddenly, crimson fire started to gush out from the bottom of his feet, turning into two fiery clouds.

The fiery clouds looked like a green Luan and a red phoenix. From the distance, they seemed like two gigantic Taigu divine animals lying on the ground, holding a human being up.

“Finally, I’ve sanctified my legs and feet.”

The edge of Zhang Ruochen’s lips were curled up. He was in such a good mood and was content with his achievements. He thought. “I can suppress Qingtian Crown Prince who has sanctified one hundred and twenty-two apertures on body strength.”

Although Zhang Ruochen had only sanctified one hundred and eight apertures, his arms had refined dragon souls and elephant souls, and there were green Luan deity print and red phoenix deity print on both his feet. His body strength would only be more powerful than that of Qingtian Crown Prince.

Chapter 1116 - Heir Of The World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After reaching the pinnacle of the Eighth Level, Zhang Ruochen's abilities had skyrocketed.

Right now, he closed his eyes and sensed the newly acquired power while practicing the Luo Water Fist Technique.

The Dragon and Elephant Prajna Fist Technique was harsh and strong; the Luo Water Fist Technique was soft and gentle. Even if he only pushed his fist forward, he could create semi-transparent energy ripples in the air.

After finishing the 36 moves, the chaotic Masculine Qi within him calmed down. The flames around his feet were pulled back inside.

He let out a puff of white air. The breath transformed into a river of mist that stretched for miles. It hung in the air in its curvy form.

When Headmaster Luo Xu taught me the Luo Water Fist Technique, did he want me to use its softness to counter the Masculine Qi of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Fist?

At Luo Xu's cultivation level, he wouldn't say many things outright or explain in detail, but Zhang Ruochen remembered this favor. They'd only met once, but Luo Xu had taught him the Consummate Skill.

This kind of temperament and heart demanded respect.

Rustle, rustle.

The branches of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree shook lightly. A beam of Spiritual Power came from the trunk to communicate with Zhang Ruochen.

“The Blue Dragon Void World lasted a total of 12,960,000 years. It is perfectly 100 yuanhui years. This means that the World Spirit has passed through 99 minor trials and will soon go through the first major trial.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. He replied to the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree with his Spiritual Power, “Senior, are you trying to tell me something?”

“In the field of time, one yuanhui year is 129,600 years. Every one yuanhui year, a world will go through a minor trial. Every 100 yuanhui years, there will be a major trial. Whether big or small, the world’s space will expand relatively during the trial.”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He didn’t think that a world would have trials and grow too. Did everything in the universe have spirituality?

“If the Blue Dragon Void World passes this major trial, how much bigger will it become?”

“At least two times,” the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree said. “However, with the Blue Dragon Void World’s heritage, it won’t be able to pass it successfully. It will be destroyed.”

It was clear that the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree knew that Zhang Ruochen would try to compete for the World Spirit. This was why it was telling him information about the Blue Dragon Void World.

It continued, “The World Spirit and native cultivators of the void world won’t be willing to go extinct. It will try some methods to make the void world continue on.”

“What methods will they use?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Perhaps by swallowing the World Spirit of another void world, or turning another void world into the new Blue Dragon Void World. It’s also possible that the World Spirit will choose an Heir to inherit the world. It will develop a new world within the Heir.”

Doubt filled Zhang Ruochen's eyes. "The World Spirit can choose an Heir to inherit the entire world?"

"Yes. A true Heir of the world will be able to contain an entire world within them. They can utilize a part of the world's power. It is very different from the Kunlun Field's nine Heirs."

"Of course, no matter what method they choose, they must first preserve the World Spirit and not let the Kunlun's Field cultivators steal it. Once the Blue Dragon Dynasty chooses a talent, combining him with the World Spirit and turning him into the Heir, they may begin massacring. This will be a disaster for you all."

Zhang Ruochen nodded. His expression grew serious. "You are saying that if we fight for the World Spirit, we must succeed. We must not let the Blue Dragon Dynasty's Heir be born. If we fail, we will die."

"Yes, that is correct. The path is under your feet. Your choice can be made in an instant. If you don't wish to take such large risks, it's best to leave the Blue Dragon Void World now. Don't stay here."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "Since the World Spirit can swallow another void world's spirit, can you absorb the Blue Dragon Void World's spirit?"

"Of course," the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree replied. "Do you want to steal the Blue Dragon Void World's spirit to expand the scroll world and develop into an advanced void world?"

"What kind of changes will occur in the scroll world after absorbing the Blue Dragon Void World's spirit?"

"There will be enormous changes. The most obvious one is that the Universe Spiritual Map will no longer be able to hold the world. The scroll will shatter and the world will become visible.

"Next, the world will have to be borne by your body. By then, it will no longer be called a scroll world. Instead, it will become the Universe World, while you will become the Heir. This is both a great and horrible thing for you."

Zhang Ruochen was confused. If he was the world's Heir, he'd be able to utilize a portion of the world's power. This should be a good thing, so why was it a bad thing too?

The Divine Sky-Connecting Tree seemed to sense his questions. The Spiritual Power waves continued coming. "The more one bears, the heavier the burden. It is not easy to bear an entire world. You must give in much more than you can imagine. You won't be able to break free from its burden unless you can become a deity."

It didn't reveal the specific disadvantages, but Zhang Ruochen could tell that it wasn't something the average man could withstand.

It continued. "You don't need to consider it all now. After all, it won't be easy to take the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World. I can sense ten native Saints gathered within the capital."

"So what?" Zhang Ruochen asked. "According to information from the Ministry of War, the native Saints have long escaped and hid in other void worlds. Plus, if Saints remain in the Blue Dragon Void World, it will cause large regions of the space to collapse."

"Some native Saints have indeed escaped," the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree said. "However, some have also stayed. If they gather elsewhere, the space will definitely collapse. Staying in the capital won't though. They are protected by the World Spirit there."

"Of course, the World Spirit is very weak now. It can't utilize much power—it can at most bear ten native Saints. They'll fight to become the main force of the World Spirit. The Heir that the World Spirit chooses may be amongst them too."

There were ten Saints in the capital. This was appalling news. Once it spread, more forces would definitely back out of the competition.

"I hope that they're all low-level Saints. That way, I can still fight against them."

With the current weak state of the World Spirit, it probably could only bear ten low-level Saints. After all, they were the weakest and easiest to protect.

Of course, even low-level Saints had differences in skills. Even if they had saint bodies, those in the lower level were unable to fight with those in higher levels. They were at most the strongest of the lower level.

It was evident that there were big differences between those in the lower level.

“If there really are ten native Saints in the capital, then the World Spirit must be underground in the capital. Otherwise, the capital’s space would have collapsed long ago.”

Zhang Ruochen finally had a specific target. Thus, he left the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree and went to a city within the scroll world. He went to a four-story tiled restaurant and ordered some dishes.

Then he sent out sound waves to notify the others and call them over.

Blackie had captured many laborers years ago to construct the city. This was one of many. The cities were of quite large scales.

Half a year ago, Princess White Li had asked Zhang Ruochen in hopes that he could have the survivors of the ancient city stay within the scroll world. Zhang Ruochen had agreed but with conditions.

At that time, Princess White Li had only thought that the survivors were pitiful and wanted to save them. She hadn’t thought too much, so she’d agreed to all of Zhang Ruochen’s conditions. She even swore that she’d never go back on her word, no matter what.

Even she didn’t know what she’d exactly agreed to.

It pertained to the lives of millions, after all. Nothing was more important than saving them. She was willing to agree to everything. One must admit that Princess White Li was very kind and innocent.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had agreed to her, not only because she was valuable and should be kept close. It was because Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi, Qing Mo and the others all agreed and hoped that Zhang Ruochen could save those natives.

If he let them die, they would become upset. If he saved the natives, they would trust him more, and it would unite the Sacred Sect more tightly.

Princess White Li was the first to arrive. She flew to the fourth level and appeared to the left of Zhang Ruochen. Her long snow-white tail dragged on the ground. She looked just like a beautiful demoness.

“The city lord comes so quickly.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

“I live in White Li City. I’ll obviously be the fastest.” Princess White Li fluttered her lashes. Her long lashes shone with fluorescent light.

There were millions of natives living in the city. It was called White Li City and governed by Princess White Li. Now, Zhang Ruochen had officially included her in the Sacred Sect. Even if she recovered her memories and wanted to leave, they would still be connected.

A while later, Blackie, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Murong Yue, and Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi, who’d gone to get information from the capital, all hurried over to the restaurant. They regrouped with Zhang Ruochen.

“I was so angry in the capital that I thought my lungs would explode,” Sun Dadi gritted out with hatred. The red hairs on his head were all standing up straight.

Chapter 1117 - Dragon Top Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

And then, Sun Dadi told everything he'd heard in the suburban area of the capital city. The more he talked about it, the angrier he got. If it weren't for Zhao Shiqi to control him, he would've rushed to the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and killed that Feng Yinchuan.

Zhao Shiqi was also furious. He said, "That damn woman, Feng Yinchuan. She's beautiful but wicked. She framed our overlord for slaughtering the people in the city, and now, she's instigating people. She's trying to make our overlord an enemy to many. Overlord, we can't just let this go easily. We have to let her pay."

Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin with his fingers and didn't seem to be triggered. He said, "She said I'm a bloodthirsty demon who robbed the valuables collected by the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race... Then there'll be many greedy people trying to kill me. It's a good thing actually."

Both Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi were dazed as they didn't expect Zhang Ruochen to react in this way. How was it good that there would be countless creatures trying to hunt him down?

Sun Dadi reached out his hand to touch Zhang Ruochen's forehead. He asked, "Are you too angry to think straight, brother?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and asked, "Have you finished what I asked you to do?"

“To find an altar?”

“Yes.”

Zhang Ruochen had figured that it was difficult to conquer the capital city of Blue Dragon Dynasty, and it was not easy to occupy the royal altar in the capital city.

Which was why he asked Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi to ask whether there were suitable altars outside the capital city. And size didn't matter, as long as the altar was close enough to the World Spirit.

The divine medicinal pills made by Blackie needed a sacrifice to fully become pills.

Zhang Ruochen planned to use those divine medicinal pills to become a level-nine half saint.

Zhao Shiqi said respectfully, “Based on your requirements, I used my mind power to inspect the suburban area of the capital city, and I found two altars.”

“The first one is kind of small, which is an altar in the north of the capital city. It has a diameter of around ninety feet, and it's around thirty feet tall.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “The altar is too small. Even if we do a sacrifice there, it's difficult to get the approval from the World Spirit in Blue Dragon Void World. What about the second one?”

Zhao Shiqi continued, “The second altar was at the top of Dragon Top Mountain, which is in the south of the city. It's an ancient altar. I captured an aboriginal monk and scanned his memories using techniques, and I know about this ancient altar.”

“That altar used to be a place for ancient kingdom to make sacrifices to the heavens. After a long time, dynasties changed, and that place became desolate.”

“I went to Dragon Top Mountain once, and that ancient altar is indeed enormous. However, it's been desolate for a very long time, and the altar has been covered by mud and stones. I don't know whether we can still use it or not.”

Blackie interjected, “That’s the place. Even if the altar has been damaged, I can still restore it.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and said, “Then that’s it. Let’s prepare ourselves in Scroll World for three days, after which we’ll head to Dragon Top Mountain.”

Zhang Ruochen then looked to Sun Dadi and Zhao Shiqi and said, “You two don’t need to join the fight for the World Spirit. Keep practicing in Scroll World and improve your cultivation.”

“Why?”

Sun Dadi was very keen to join the fight.

Zhao Shiqi, on the other hand, was more experienced, and he figured out why. He moved his lips and transmitted his voice to Sun Dadi.

“That’s the reason!”

Sun Dadi nodded and said, “Rest assured, brother. I can change my appearance so that your real identity will remain safe.”

Chi Chi.

Sun Dadi clenched his fist, and crimson fire emerged from his body. His body kept growing taller until it reached eight feet. After that, red hair grew and covered his body.

He suddenly became a flame spirit monkey.

Of course, Sun Dadi controlled the fire on his body delicately and he didn’t spill any of the flames, otherwise, the entire restaurant would’ve been burnt to the ground now.

Sun Dadi was originally from the Monkey-human clan. He had the bloodlines of both human beings and flame monkeys. It was usual that he could turn into a monkey.

The forces coming from Sun Dadi became ferocious, crude and aggressive after he turned into a flame monkey like he was a real flame monkey who lived in the Savage Barren Territory.

He didn’t look like a human being anymore.

“Good! Now that you can turn into a flame spirit monkey, you can join the fight,” Zhang Ruochen said.

In the next three days, everyone was passionately preparing for the fight.

Zhang Ruochen went below Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. He sat down with his legs crossed and took out a large number of saintly stones, putting them around his body.

Zhang Ruochen’s lower abdomen was at least ten thousand times wider than that of other monks.

However, most of the Holy Qi was only air, and only a little of it could condense into a half-saint true liquid, forming a small true liquid pond.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen had more than ten times more Holy Qi than other monks. In a normal fight, it was more than enough.

However, he was going to deal with constant fights, so he had to store much more Holy Qi for that.

“Condense.”

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes, mobilizing the techniques and turning Holy Qi in his abdomen into half-saint true liquids.

It would take a cubic meter of Holy Qi to make one drop of half-saint true liquid. Inside the abdomen there was formed a true liquid lake, occupying one thousandth of the space in the abdomen.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms, opening all his one hundred and eight apertures, fully utilizing Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture, absorbing the Holy Qi from the saintly stone.

He then absorbed Holy Qi into his abdomen, turning it into half-saint true liquids again. The true liquids were raining, falling into the true liquid lake.

After three days...

The true liquid lake now occupied one hundredth of his abdomen.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes again and smiled. “It’ll cost one hundred thousand silver coins to buy one drop of half-saint true liquid in the Xuan Realm, and it’s very difficult to buy that in a remote place like Heavenly Devil Mountain. Now, I have a whole lake of half-saint true liquid in my body.”

Only desperate half saints would sell their half-saint true liquids. Ordinary half saints disdained doing that.

Although the half-saint true liquids condensed by Zhang Ruochen only occupied one hundredth of his abdomen, it was already more than one hundred times more than that of other monks. He could fight for ten days and not be worried about using up his Holy Qi.

Zhang Ruochen thought about it for a while, and he realized that it might take him a year to fill his abdomen with half-saint true liquids.

There was no point in wasting a whole year just to store half-saint true liquids. At least Zhang Ruochen didn’t plan to get wealthy by selling half-saint true liquids.

Zhang Ruochen was already in his prime. He took Sikong One, Sikong Two, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, White Li Princess, Sun Dadi, Blackie, Murong Yue and the six high-level half saints from Murong’s clan and walked out of Scroll World, heading toward Dragon Top Mountain.

What was worth mentioning was that Blackie picked lots of divine medicinal pills in Scroll World, and with the saintly source spring, he refined a pill that could greatly improve cultivation.

When other monks took a saintly herb, their cultivation could be improved one level.

The pills made by Blackie were even stronger.

Sikong One and Sikong Two both took more than ten pills, and they passed the second pre-saint trial.

Their bodies were very special, as they were not afraid of the thunder trial. The moment their cultivation made breakthrough, they started to do the trial without any concerns.

Huang Yanchen passed the first pre-saint trial.

Both White Li Princess and Sun Dadi were now pinnacle first-trial pre-saints, so they didn't dare try the second pre-saint trial easily.

Murong Yue made the greatest improvement, as she was now a level-nine half saint.

Other than her, the other six high-level half saints had also become level-nine half saints. Murong Chengfeng, who had the most profound cultivation, had successfully passed the first pre-saint trial.

Blackie still had some pills left, but Zhang Ruochen didn't take any.

He had refined too much divine blood, so his body constitution had been greatly changed. Ordinary pills wouldn't help him much.

“Our team is powerful enough to defeat everyone in the Blue Dragon Void World.”

Sun Dadi was overly confident, holding the iron rod in his hand, engulfed in flames.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't that positive. He said, “I need to remind you again that there're around ten aboriginal saints in the capital city, so the fight for World Spirit will be very dangerous. There's a chance that you'll get killed. If you're not sure about it, you can still quit now.”

“As long as we can get World Spirit and turn Scroll World into Universe Field, we're not afraid to die.”

Everyone was still enthusiastic instead of scared.

As long as Universe Field could be born, they would be the creators of a new world, which was a great glory.

It was an honor for them to be a part of it.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to hide anything from them. He had informed them of all the dangers, and it was all up to them to choose.

“Okay, let's go to Dragon Top Mountain now.”

Zhang Ruochen was also passionate. He rode Mud Deer Beast King and rushed out first. His aggressiveness swept across the sky and land.

Five hundred miles away from the capital city to the south was an enormous cordillera that was thousands of miles long. It was like a divine dragon lying on the ground, and it was of great momentum, echoing the capital city.

Dragon Top Mountain was at the start of the cordillera, and was more than twenty thousand feet tall. It was a dangerous place, and it looked like the head of the mountain.

The mountain contained some mysterious power, which penetrated the ground, making the mountain stable. Even the creatures from the state of saint couldn't move it.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the mountainside, looking up. He said, "This is a marvelous mountain."

"If it wasn't a marvelous mountain, it wouldn't have become a place to make sacrifices to the heavens." Huang Yanchen walked to Zhang Ruochen's side as if she were his shadow.

Blackie flew down from the top of the mountain like a trace of black light, nodded at Zhang Ruochen and said, "The altar at the top of the mountain is indeed kind of damaged. However, I can repair it in some time."

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn. He gave an order, "Murong Yue, spread the word that I, Zhang Ruochen, came, and I'm in Dragon Top Mountain."

Everyone was shocked by what Zhang Ruochen did. Didn't he know that many creatures in Blue Dragon Void World wanted to kill him to get the valuables he had?

Huang Yanchen squinted her eyes.

There was already an altar, so there certainly needed to be sacrifices.

Chapter 1118 - This Is The Border, Anyone Who Passes Shall Die

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen has arrived in the capital and is excavating Dragontop Mountain. He seems to have the most ancient treasure of the Blue Dragon Void World.

When this news spread through the capital countryside, it created a storm. There were many legends about Dragontop Mountain in the Blue Dragon Void World. It was shrouded in a halo of mystery.

Apparently, an ancient civilization had once sacrificed to the heavens on Dragontop Mountain, making it even more sacred. After a while, the Holy Qi there was quickly depleted, and it became a barren land. When the new dynasty was established, they moved the sacrifice location into the capital.

If an ancient treasure really appeared as the world was about to end, many people would believe it.

This news was obviously spread by Murong Yue and the six high-level Half-Saints of the Murong Clan.

Feng Yinchuan was very happy when she heard this news. Her eyes turning harsh, she said, "Zhang Ruochen, you're finally back!"

All the members of the Ghost Cultivation Race set off for the new challenge.

"Zhang Ruochen has stolen the treasures of the Ghost Cultivation and Necromancer Races and the riches of an entire

city. He still isn't satisfied?"

"Dragontop Mountain is part of the royal capital. It must be a land of treasures. Perhaps there are some ancient saintly items buried there."

"Zhang Ruochen is such a demon. He's already so powerful. If he receives the relic of the Blue World Void World, who would still be able to stop him?"

...

The Ghost Cultivation Race was clear that it wouldn't be easy for them to go against Zhang Ruochen.

After all, those who could reach the Half-Saint Realm were all very wise. They wouldn't go after someone as tricky as Zhang Ruochen. Only the greedy cultivators tempted by the treasures would take the risk.

Thus, why it was announced that Zhang Ruochen had become a bloodthirsty monster. This was so the tempted cultivators could have an excuse for themselves.

Hearing news about Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi hurried toward Dragontop Mountain at once.

"Zhang Ruochen, you're finally at the capital," Wan Huayu muttered to herself. "Did you really go crazy from the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm?"

She unfurled her phoenix wings and also flew into the sky.

The humans weren't the only ones who'd hurried toward Dragontop Mountain. The beasts and Immortal Vampires also received the news. A large group of them left their camps, rushing to Dragontop Mountain in streaks of light.

By now, Zhang Ruochen's group had already reached the peak of Dragontop Mountain. They were clearing the rocks covering the altar.

Dragontop Mountain contained a mysterious force that spread outward. This fortified the mountain's structure. Even a common rock was as strong as metal.

Gradually, the altar showed itself. It was close to 1,860 feet wide and shone with faint blue light. There was a huge stone dragon curled up on the center. Its head and claws had fallen off already, making it seem ragged yet ancient. A mere glance could instill fear.

As the altar was revealed, a blue cloud appeared above Dragontop Mountain. It was hundreds of miles wide.

Whoosh, whoosh.

Wind kept blowing past. Many beings had already reached Dragontop Mountain. They didn't approach immediately. Instead, they collected their auras and looked up the mountain.

Many of them wanted to steal the rich treasures from Zhang Ruochen, but he had a reputation. He'd killed 19 kings alone, challenged the Qingtian Tribe alone... His glorious achievements intimidated many people.

Most of them wanted to take advantage of the chaos. Some of the forces that were enemies with Zhang Ruochen wanted to use this chance to kill him.

"The man at the peak is indeed Zhang Ruochen. I saw him from afar in Tiantai State."

"Look, there's a blue cloud above Dragontop Mountain. Has an incredible treasure really come out?"

...

As the altar was revealed, the Spiritual Qi in the air changed slightly. There were small signs of activity. Many creatures believed that a treasure was really coming out.

More and more beings were grouped near Dragontop Mountain. The Holy Qi waves grew denser and denser.

Mu Lingxi stood in the green wilderness. She looked at the peak in the distance, eyes falling upon Zhang Ruochen. Joy appeared on her beautiful face. She used a physical technique to hurry over.

"Senior Sister, don't go so impulsively. If Zhang Ruochen has really gone crazy, he might not remember. He might even attack you."

Qi Feiyu flew through the woods in a white streak and stopped Mu Lingxi.

Lan Caisang, the Saintess of the Demonic Sect, was also with Qi Feiyu. She appeared before Mu Lingxi like a goddess dressed in blue.

“Zhang Ruochen won’t attack me even if he’s gone crazy.” Mu Lingxi was adamant about this.

A baritone voice sounded behind her. “Even if he doesn’t, won’t the beings who want to kill him attack you as well.”

Mu Lingxi turned and looked. Ouyang Huan, Deity of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, rolled over in his wheelchair. There was a large group of Demonic Sect cultivators behind him. They were all powerful Half-Saints and also some Pre-Saint elders.

Mu Lingxi arched an eyebrow. “Are you one of those who want to kill him?”

She knew about the conflicts between him and Zhang Ruochen. Not only had Zhang Ruochen stolen Ouyang Huan’s Heir Stamp, he’d also broken his legs. This conflict was quite large. As long as Zhang Ruochen wasn’t killed, Ouyang Huan’s hatred would only grow.

Ouyang Huan had actually taken a divine pill and could’ve regrown his legs. However, he’d offended Ling Feiyu, the First Saintess.

When Ling Feiyu had returned to the Demonic Sect, she’d insisted on killing Ouyang Huan.

Ouyang Huan also had a powerful force behind him that could counter Ling Feiyu. The two sides practically fought to the end of the world. If the Demonic Sect Founder hadn’t appeared to stop them, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect might have split apart.

The two sides were forced to compromise. Ling Feiyu received a large sum in compensation while Ouyang Huan kept his position of Deity.

Ling Feiyu also had another condition—unless Ouyang Huan surpassed her in cultivation, he would be disabled and stuck in his wheelchair forever. This condition was total humiliation to him, as well as a punishment.

Ouyang Huan looked up Dragontop Mountain with misty eyes. “Someone who doesn’t take revenge is not a man, but a coward,” he said calmly. “Do you think that I am a coward?”

“You want to keep me here to threaten him?” Mu Lingxi asked.

“How dare you speak to the Deity like this?” an elder barked. “Mu Lingxi, how dare—”

When the Pre-Saint elder saw Le walk out from behind Mu Lingxi, his voice cut off as if someone was choking him. He couldn’t keep going and even his lips trembled.

Le wore plain gray clothing and the metal sword in his hand looked plain. However, his eyes shone with cold light. Even the Pre-Saint elder shuddered when meeting his eyes.

Ouyang Huan also glanced at Le and then turned back to Mu Lingxi. “Keeping you here is to save your life. The enemy that Zhang Ruochen will meet is more terrifying than you imagine. If Zhang Ruochen can survive until my attack, even I will be impressed by him.”

Some of those who’d come to Dragontop Mountain also wanted to help Zhang Ruochen. For example, the humans that Zhang Ruochen had saved in Yingsha City still remembered this favor. They wanted to repay him.

They all looked on, wanting to see if Zhang Ruochen had really become a bloodthirsty demon.

Kaboom!

Black dirt rushed over from the east. It crushed the boulders into powder, flattening the mountain. The storm of dirt soon arrived at Dragontop Mountain.

The dirt gradually dissipated, revealing a large group of savage beasts. They were all huge Grade Six Beasts with a Half-Saint’s combat ability.

The weaker ones had already connected with a spatial wormhole to leave the Blue Dragon Void World, returning to Kunlun's Field. Only Grade Six Beasts remained. They were the only ones strong enough to fight for the World Spirit, after all.

“How can so many Grade Six Beasts be summoned? Is the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon coming?”

All the beings present grew excited. If the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon attacked, there would be a chain reaction. More and more people would attack Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stood at the peak, facing the sharp wind. His black hair flew in the air. He pulled out the Abyss Ancient Sword and sliced downward.

Whoosh!

A beam of Sword Qi, dozens of miles long, flew down from the mountain like a black river. It cut toward the Grade Six Beasts. A 30-foot-deep, dozen-mile-long Sword Qi crack appeared on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen spat out rings of icy sound waves. “This is the border. Anyone who passes it shall die.”

“You're about to die and you're still so arrogant,” the Kylin Wolf Beast King yelled. “I will cross the border and see what you can do to me!”

The Kylin Wolf Beast King had a very advanced cultivation. It was a definite hegemon in the Savage Barren Beast. Even though it had heard many legends about Zhang Ruochen, it still didn't respect him.

So many Grade Six Beasts were gathered here. Zhang Ruochen's death would be imminent even if he had three heads and six arms. What was there to fear?

Roar!

The Kylin Wolf Beast King's body shone brilliantly. It pounced, crossing the Sword Qi barrier.

Poof.

The Abyss Ancient Sword transformed into a streak of black light. It flew down from the mountain and stabbed through the Kylin Wolf Beast King, producing a cloud of blood. Then the sword flew back into the air, hovering above the crowd of beasts.

The Kylin Wolf Beast King's huge frame fell to the ground with a thud. The beasts that had wanted to cross the border with the beast king all stopped. They trembled in extreme fright.

Such a powerful Beast King had been killed in an instant. Zhang Ruochen's abilities were too terrifying.

Gasps sounded all around the foot of Dragontop Mountain. The human cultivators were all floored.

Many of those that had wanted to kill Zhang Ruochen had to reconsider if they had the abilities, and thought about retreating. People like Zhang Ruochen weren't on their level.

Roar!

A ground-shaking dragon roar sounded. A vast demonic cloud flew from the royal capital. One could vaguely see a huge dragon within the cloud. It was like a black mountain, emanating terrifying evil Qi.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon's head peered out of the cloud. It was the size of a mountain. "Zhang Ruochen," it thundered. "This time, do you plan on escaping again?"

Chapter 1119 - Fight, Kill

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon race was an overlord race during Taigu era.

And now, a Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon was definitely one of the most powerful creatures in this era.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had already passed the first pre-saint trial, and it was invincible under the state of saint. No one dared fight it.

As Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon arrived, the sky and land here started to change. Dark clouds covered the sky, and steam gathered from all directions. It started to rain and thunder.

Hua!

Hua!

...

All the human monks on the mountainside of Dragon Top Mountain were terrified and started to retreat.

If Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon killed Zhang Ruochen, it would definitely try to kill them as well. It was better to stay far away as it would be easier later to flee.

“Do you regret it now? If I were your wife, I could’ve killed all the creatures who wanted to hurt you. How would you fall to this level now?”

Han Qiu was wearing a black cape, standing on top of a dragon head that was as large as a mountain, arriving at a river that was around six hundred miles away from Dragon Top Mountain.

Her body kept giving out black light, turning the area within tens of square miles around her into darkness.

Some creatures passed by the darkness area, and they became lifeless mummies, falling to the ground.

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Mu Lingxi clenched her fist in the distance, looking in the direction of Dragon Top Mountain. She looked at the black dragon shadow in the sky, and she felt like suffocating. She couldn't be more worried.

She took a step forward, but Qi Feiyu and Lan Caisang stopped her again.

Lan Caisang smiled in a seductive way. “Sister, the mountain is surrounded by savage beasts now, and Dragon Top Mountain is full of dangers. Even if you go, you'll be killed. What's the point of it?”

Qi Feiyu looked calm, and there was feeble mist around her eyes. She said, “Zhang Ruochen is very powerful, and there's a chance that he can survive this. If you go there, you'll only become a liability, then he won't be able to get away even if he wants to.”

Right after Qi Feiyu finished talking, Zhang Ruochen talked back to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon in a confronting way. “No need to waste time talking. Let's fight today to determine who's stronger.”

In the next moment, Zhang Ruochen infused Holy Qi into the Abyss Ancient Sword. The blade became ten times larger, and black light gushed out of the sword, slashing toward Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn't hate Zhang Ruochen more, and it had wanted him dead for a long time. It yelled, “All savage beasts, rush to Dragon Top Mountain, kill Zhang Ruochen and everyone who's related to him.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon knew that the Abyss Ancient Sword was a peerless divine weapon. It didn't clash with the sword directly. Instead, it took out its dragon bone long whip.

It not only resisted the attack of Abyss Ancient Sword, it was fighting back as well.

Ao!

Thousands of level-six savage beasts made earth-shattering roars.

Some savage beasts breathed fiery clouds out, some savage beasts condensed lightning, and some savage beasts wielded their ancestral devices. The entire Dragon Top Mountain was shrouded by those attacking techniques.

Even creatures in the state of saint would be annihilated by those attacks, not to mention Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen let out a trace of his mind power, pointed at the front and said, "Break!"

The space above Dragon Top Mountain started to crumble, leading to thickly-dotted cracks, swallowing all the attacks from the savage beasts into the hollow space.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't care less about group attacks in Blue Dragon Void World.

Even if thousands of people tried to attack him at the same time, he wouldn't be scared of them.

And then, Zhang Ruochen pointed with his finger at the savage beasts at the mountainside, fully mobilizing the power of space.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon realized that something was wrong. It roared, "Freeze the space with ancestral devices."

If Zhang Ruochen crushed the space again, the space would crumble, then savage beasts would suffer an unimaginable loss.

Savage beasts transmitted fierce spiritual Qi ripples. Eighteen ancestral devices flew out, forming eighteen thick light pillars.

The ancestral devices emanated blazing light like eighteen stars with different colors, distributed in eighteen different directions, freezing the space above the savage beasts.

Zhang Ruochen used the power of space again, which shook the space, leading to ripples.

Unfortunately, the strike didn't shatter the space.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wasn't a creature with mere bravery. It was also intelligent. It had prepared a lot before coming here, and it was determined to kill Zhang Ruochen.

To Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Zhang Ruochen was a huge threat who couldn't be allowed to grow anymore.

Shua Shua.

Following the sound of the wind, all the eighteen ancestral devices flew in all four directions, covering the entire Dragon Top Mountain.

The monks from Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race arrived at this area. Feng Yinchuan looked to the distance, curled her lips and said, "Even if Zhang Ruochen is a fierce tiger, he has basically lost his teeth and claws when the space is frozen. He can't fight back."

The monks from the Crypt of Sacred Central showed up around Dragon Top Mountain. Kong Hongbi walked out, smiled and said, "It seems that there's no need for me to do anything anymore."

The eighteen ancestral devices froze the space, which indeed constrained the space attack techniques of Zhang Ruochen.

However, the attacking techniques of savage beasts were also constrained as they couldn't strike together. They could only climb up to the top of Dragon Top Mountain to kill Zhang Ruochen.

"Kill!"

"Kill Zhang Ruochen and eat his flesh."

...

Under the lead of the beast kings, many level-six savage beasts at the mountainside crossed the Sword Qi boundary drawn by Zhang Ruochen, climbing up to the top of Dragon Top Mountain.

If Dragon Top Mountain didn't have the mysterious power to solidify it, it would've crumbled after being tread on by so many level-six savage beasts.

Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Sun Dadi, Murong Yue, White Li Princess, Sikong One, Sikong Two and the six high-level half saints from Murong clan came to the cliff, looking down at the ferocious savage beasts, but they weren't scared at all.

Blackie was busy repairing the altar, so it didn't join the fight.

Sikong One and Sikong Two said at the same time, "Uncle, we'll go fight Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon together."

A trace of white light and a trace of black light emanated tumbling Buddha light, surging to the sky and rushing into the clouds, dispersing the demonic clouds in the sky, forming Buddhist clouds that were black and white.

Both monks had passed the second pre-saint trial, so they were powers to be reckoned with. Besides, their power was several times stronger after they teamed up, so they could totally compete with the Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Zhang Ruochen knew that neither of them was willing to kill living creatures, so he let them fight Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

"Do you really think you two can fight me?"

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon roared in anger, circling in the air, reaching out his enormous black dragon claw and slapping toward Sikong One and Sikong Two.

"Subdue dragons!"

An earth-shattering dragon sound came out of the body of Sikong Two. He clenched his hands and formed a black claw hundreds of feet long.

"Tame tigers!"

Sikong One condensed a white tiger that was as large as Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, which yelled and clashed with the dragon claw.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon had to step back. It looked shocked and confused, and it realized that it had to take a second look at the two monks, as they did have the power to confront it.

Under the clouds, many savage beasts had already rushed to the mountainside.

Zhang Ruochen looked apathetic. He mumbled, "Use Wuliang Divine Fire."

Qing Mo reached out her hand, and a green flame came into being on her palm. It turned into a fireball first, then, it became a cluster of fiery clouds, after which it became an ocean of fire, dashing down.

Chi Chi.

The power of Wuliang Divine Fire was terrific, as it could burn saints to death and melt Thousand-patterns Saint Weapons. Even the mysterious power in Dragon Top Mountain couldn't resist it. The mud couldn't withstand the high temperature, and it was melted into lava.

The savage beasts at the front were tragic. They were set on fire like lanterns, yelling in agony.

A level-six savage beast tried to use its saint weapon to resist the Wuliang Divine Fire, yet it was melted the moment it touched the fire.

"Go quickly! That fire is invincible."

"That's Wuliang Saint Fire, which can melt a saint."

...

Many level-six savage beasts were burnt to the ground. Their blood merged with the mountain and was combined with mud.

The more it travelled, the less powerful Wuliang Saint Fire became.

Beast-king level creatures took out their ancestral devices, triggering the barren ancient forces inside the ancestral devices, which helped them get through Wuliang Saint Fire.

Kui Bull Beast King and Golden Scorpion King were at the front. Both of them were Taigu remains, and they were ranked in the front of 'Half-saint Rank,' so they owned impressive ancestral devices.

“Fight.”

Zhang Ruochen looked determined. He jumped down from the top of the mountain, wielding Abyss Ancient Sword and slashing toward Golden Scorpion King.

“I’ve passed both trials of pre-saint. You dare fight me, Zhang Ruochen. Are you being suicidal?” Golden Scorpion King looked ferocious and it rushed toward him.

Its power had been improved after the fight in Ingmar Desert.

It wielded its sharp claws and waved against Zhang Ruochen, forming golden waves.

Zhang Ruochen looked ferocious. He went through the golden energy waves, wielded his Abyss Ancient Sword and chopped down.

Hua La.

The left claw of Golden Scorpion King was chopped off, and beast blood burst out.

It did have immense defense power, yet it was nothing in front of Abyss Ancient Sword and Zhang Ruochen.

Golden Scorpion King was startled. Zhang Ruochen was too ferocious now. He didn’t use any Holy Qi, instead, his body strength itself was enough to severely injure it.

Golden Scorpion King retreated, wanting to escape.

“Don’t you dare run.”

Zhang Ruochen tiptoed and flew up, wielding his sword again.

Golden Scorpion King resorted to his most powerful technique. It opened its mouth and breathed out a golden light shuttle, racing toward Zhang Ruochen.

It was an ancestral device of the scorpion race. Not only was it solid, it also contained high poison. Creatures that were

scratched by it would immediately turn into blood water. Only creatures from the state of saint could resist it for a while.

Zhang Ruochen shook his finger, mobilizing the blade of Abyss Ancient Sword to knock it away.

And then, he hit the back of Golden Scorpion King with his palm, which made its back cave, and half of his body was buried underground. It screamed in pain.

The back of Golden Scorpion King sank with a palm print. Its body was twisted.

“Stop being reckless, Zhang Ruochen.”

Other beast kings rushed forward to help, trying to save Golden Scorpion King.

“Who dares come?”

Zhang Ruochen stood on the back of Golden Scorpion King like a ferocious man. He triggered Destruction of Thousand-patterns. He held the Abyss Ancient Sword and waved it.

Hua!

The sword light knocked away all seven beast kings.

Even though the seven beast kings used their ancestral devices, they still couldn't resist that strike. All of them were injured and started to bleed.

Chapter 1120 - Four Ancient Evils

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Injuring seven Beast Kings in one move was far more impressive than when Zhang Ruochen had fought 19 Beast Kings by himself. At that time, Zhang Ruochen had been forced back by the 19 Beast Kings. He could barely defend himself.

Less than one month later, Zhang Ruochen's combat abilities had improved vastly. It couldn't be compared to the past.

Poof.

Zhang Ruochen brought his sword down on the Golden Scorpion King. Not only did he rip the beast's body apart, he even shattered the saint soul. An ancient Taigu Remain had died!

The fresh blood that flowed out of the corpse shone with gold. The powerful strength dyed the entire mountain gold.

"The Golden Scorpion King, 56th on the Half-Saint Rank, couldn't fend off three of Zhang Ruochen's strikes."

The foot of Dragontop Mountain was silent. Some felt excited, some were unsettled, and others brimmed with an even stronger murderous intent.

Huang Yanchen, Murong Yue, Sun Dadi and the others rushed down the mountain to work together and stop the savage beasts from reaching the peak.

Princess White Li had agreed to some conditions with Zhang Ruochen, so she joined as well. She'd lost most of her

memories, but even if she'd lost all of them, she still had no feelings for any savage beasts other than the White Li Cat Clan.

In the Savage Barren Territory, all the beast clans were enemies. They lived by the survival of the fittest.

At the mountaintop, Blackie was hurriedly repairing the altar. It prepared to use a ritual to help complete the divine pill. If it was completed, everyone's cultivations would improve again.

Roar!

The Kui Bull Beast King roared angrily. Spiritual Power was added into the sound waves that flooded out, shattering the boulders.

"Use the Savage Barren Strength and kill Zhang Ruochen," a Beast King bellowed.

"Earlier, we didn't have the time to use the Savage Barren Strength and were hurt by him. This time, we'll make him pay for it."

The seven Beast Kings all showed their true forms. There was a huge ice snow leopard but also a palm-sized golden rat. They all radiated with powerful Beast King energy waves and used their ancestral weapons.

Whoosh—

The seven weapons all shone with brilliant light. They hovered over the seven Beast Kings. Many runes appeared, forming seven beams of Savage Barren Strength.

The Grade Six Beasts nearby sensed the heightened combat and all retreated. They were worried that they would be affected by the weapons.

Zhang Ruochen stood beside the Golden Scorpion King's corpse, ignoring the Kui Bull Beast King's sound wave attack. He fended it off with his powerful body and disdain colored his eyes. "You think you can kill me with just the Savage Barren Strength?"

"Die!"

Zhang Ruochen poured Holy Qi into his Abyss Ancient Sword, making all the runes appear on the sword. When one thousand runes appeared, the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns was activated. When two thousand runes appeared, the destructive Qi coming from the sword shot into the sky, forming a ten-thousand-foot-tall sword pillar.

Even the creatures hundreds of miles away felt the repressive aura too. Slight ripples appeared in the wind around them.

Kaboom.

Three thousand runes appeared on the surface of the Abyss Ancient Sword. That moment, dense Sword Qi shrouded the entire Dragontop Mountain. The Destruction of the Thousand Patterns made all the creatures hundreds of miles away shake uncontrollably in fear.

“No.”

The Kui Bull Beast King was the first to sense something was wrong. It immediately retracted the sound waves and escaped down the mountain. The other Beast Kings were frightened by the Abyss Ancient Sword’s destructive Qi too, but they couldn’t retreat. They had to forge on.

If they retreated, they would die even sooner.

“Fight to the death!”

“Fight!”

“Roar! Either you die or I die!”

...

The seven Beast Kings applied Holy Qi into their weapons without hesitation and attacked Zhang Ruochen simultaneously. The Abyss Ancient Sword attacked as well.

Boom, boom.

There was a string of explosions.

With merely one strike, the Abyss Ancient Sword shattered all seven ancestral weapons. The broken pieces flew out in all directions.

The next moment, cries rang out from the seven Beast Kings.

Six of them died tragically on the spot. They were turned to dust by the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns. Only the golden rat survived, but it was gravely injured and lying on the ground with its last breath.

“Don’t kill...me... I... Demonic Dragon, save...me...” it was begging for forgiveness and help.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were cold. Walking over, he stepped down, grinding the rat into a ball of mush.

Seven Beast Kings had died in an instant. Kingly blood dyed half of the mountain red. Thick blood Qi didn’t scatter until hundreds of miles away. All the creatures in this land held their breath. Their hearts twisted in the fear that everyone felt.

The Grade Six Beasts all rushed down the mountain in panic. They were utterly and completely terrified, not daring to go against Zhang Ruochen.

“Continue to kill.”

Zhang Ruochen charged down the mountain. Instead of using the Abyss Ancient Sword, he used the Man Sword state. He turned his body into a sword and shot into the crowds of beasts with a streak of light behind him.

As for the Abyss Ancient Sword, it was refining the pieces of the seven weapons. It wanted to form 4,000 runes as soon as possible.

Poof.

Squelch.

...

The savage beasts had wanted to surround Zhang Ruochen, but the tides had turned. Zhang Ruochen was forcing the thousands of Grade Six Beasts to flee for their lives.

Huang Yanchen, Sun Dadi, and Murong Yue didn’t hesitate with killing either. They chased down from three other directions, leaving corpses scattered on the ground.

By the time the beasts fled down the flat land, Dragontop Mountain was practically covered by huge beastly corpses. Instead of chasing after them, Zhang Ruochen's group retreated after reaching the bottom.

Bloodshed wasn't their goal. They only wanted to produce the divine pill, so there was no point in continuing. If someone took advantage of the chaos to reach the peak, it would be irreparable.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon watched the battle from the clouds and roared in anger. "Since we're attacking the humans together, why didn't you attack?"

Who was it communicating with? Did it invite powerful reinforcements?

Just as everyone was guessing, a huge shadow appeared in the sky. A strange red fish, more than 10,000 meters long, flew out of the clouds. It had a pair of wings that covered the sky, lifting a gale merely by flapping.

The wind was abnormally strong. Even some Half-Saints were blown away as if they were a pile of ants.

"It's a...kun..."

"Is it the Kun Prince, sixth on the Half-Saint Rank?"

...

The kun was a domineering figure from the seas outside of Kunlun's Field. In the legends, it was said that in ancient times, there had been a kun more than 9,000 miles long. It ate dragons, killed deities, and was known as the evillest lord of ancient times.

Of course, as time passed, the kun bloodline grew weaker and weaker. They couldn't be compared to the ancient times at all. The Royal Prince of the Kun was different. Rather than a descendant of the Kun Race, it was a Taigu Remain. It had the purest blood and might become the greatest monster of this era.

As it arrived, rain started pouring like a flood. Dark clouds gathered and lightning and thunder interwove. This kind of

scene was like the chaotic Taigu land descending upon the Blue Dragon Void World. It was impressive and terrifying.

A large force of water creatures hurried over from all directions. They stood in the torrent of rain and let out ground-shaking roars. Horrifying Spiritual Qi waves rippled out.

“Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon,” Kun Prince spoke like a human. “You couldn’t even take care of a few humans and you still dream of expelling the human race to rule Kunlun’s Field? You don’t seem strong enough!”

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon didn’t argue with the Kun Prince. It huffed, saying, “Why aren’t the others showing?”

Kaboom.

The ground shook violently. A huge black mountain flew over from the horizon. When it was closer, people could finally see what it was.

It wasn’t a mountain. It was a black tiger, as tall as a mountain. It had a region’s mark on its forehead and its icy aura froze the entire space.

Actually, it wasn’t a tiger. It was a bi’an—an ancient, divine creature that looked like a tiger. Like the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and Kun Prince, it was yet another Taigu Remain.

“Oh my!” a human Half-Saint cried out. “It’s Heavenly King Bi’an, eighth on the Half-Saint Rank!”

“Look, there’s a woman standing atop Heavenly King Bi’an!”

The creature was honestly too big. No one noticed that there was a human standing on its head.

It was indeed a woman. She was covered in red flames and had long fiery hair. Her skin was like white jade and red feathers danced around her. She was tiny compared to Heavenly King Bi’an. From afar, she looked like a grain of red rice.

“She...is she Fairy Rosefinch, fifth on the Half-Saint Rank?” someone asked, trembling.

No one believed that a human could stand atop Heavenly King Bi'an. Fairy Rosefinch was most suitable for her.

A glamorous carriage drove quickly through the rain, not stopping until it was almost to the peak of Dragontop Mountain. Xue Wuye moved the curtain aside, revealing his handsome face. He descended, surrounded by beautiful women.

He stood in the rain while a beautiful woman held an umbrella for him. He looked up at Heavenly King Bi'an and said, "That is indeed the Rosefinch Fairy. I met her not too long ago."

Xue Wuye's confirmation of the Rosefinch Fairy caused the people to grow even more excited.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Kun Prince, Heavenly King Bi'an and the Rosefinch Fairy were the four ancient evils in legends. It was already a miracle for them to be gathered right now. With the once-in-a-millennium Time and Space Descendant, today's battle would go down in history.

The four ancient evils may kill the Time and Space Descendant and once again become undefeatable legends. The Time and Space Descendant may also defeat them all and continue the Time and Space lineage to a supernatural position.

Either result would affect the future greatly.

Chapter 1121 - Irrational

Zhang Ruochen

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

What Zhang Ruochen did on Dragon Top Mountain shocked everyone in Blue Dragon Void World. More than half the great beings on 'Half-Saint Rank' went to the mountain.

A hundred years later, these creatures would grow to become the leaders of Kunlun's Field, and they would determine where the world was heading to.

Which was why the fight today was not just a fight among the juniors, but something more meaningful.

Beigong Lan and Chi Wanui stood on the edge of a cliff that was twenty-five hundred feet tall. One of them was wearing a white martial cape, the other was wearing golden holy armor, and they intimidated away all the savage beasts and dead spirits around.

Beigong Lan was aloof and looked like an unrivalled female sword saint. She said, "I've figured before that the human beings and savage beasts would get into a huge fight for World Spirit. I originally thought the leaders would be Monk Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, but I didn't expect it to be Zhang Ruochen instead."

Chi Wansui's eyebrows were thick, and his nose was tall. He looked solemn and said, "Zhang Ruochen looks a bit different today. He looks so ferocious. Has he actually gone mad by practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm?"

Beigong Lan frowned and looked worried.

She didn't have much to do with Zhang Ruochen, and they hadn't even exchanged more than three pleasantries. However, Zhang Ruochen gave her a very deep impression.

Zhang Ruochen stood up for the human race both in Kunlun Heir's banquet and Yingsha City. Not only did he defend humans' dignity, he also saved many human elites.

However, this person was a person of his own. He would immediately leave no matter what good he had done, and he didn't care what others thought about him, nor did he want others' gratefulness.

It was very difficult not to be impressed by that.

Overall, Beigong Lan had a good impression of Zhang Ruochen. She said, "Suzaku Fairy, the Royal Prince of the Kun and Moth King have all shown up. Aside from that, there are still more than ten Taigu Remains standing in the rain. It doesn't matter whether Zhang Ruochen has gone mad or not. We can't just leave him be."

Chi Wansui's pupils shrank. He said, "Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi have rushed to Dragon Top Mountain. They're supposed to go there to confirm Zhang Ruochen's status. If Zhang Ruochen hasn't gone mad, we can still strike again."

There were indeed some grudges between Chi Wansui and Zhang Ruochen, however, they were facing the threat of savage beasts, so they could put aside those grudges to team up against the common enemies.

"What if Zhang Ruochen has really gone mad?" Beigong Lan asked him.

Chi Wansui stared at Dragon Top Mountain and stayed silent.

If Zhang Ruochen had gone mad, he would definitely be the second Death Zen Elder. If he grew, it would be a catastrophe for human beings, and he might be more dangerous than Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

If they could kill him now, they had to do it.

Even though it was cruel for them to do it, it would save more lives.

Only those who were committed to him and were willing to do anything for him would stand by him no matter what.

However, there were only few of them in the world.

Perhaps even family wouldn't be able to do that.

Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi had arrived at Dragon Top Mountain, and they started to climb up.

Facing the most powerful human beings, those level-six savage beasts didn't dare stand in their way.

Suzaku fairy race, Fish royal race and Moth King all knew what Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi wanted, so they didn't rush to do anything.

“What do Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi want? Were they really so instigated by Feng Yinchuan that they want to fight Zhang Ruochen,” Mu Lingxi was very concerned.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was being encircled, and he would be in a worse situation if Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi decided to fight him.

Qi Feiyu stood beside Mu Lingxi. Her eyes were transparent like water. She said, “Sister Mu, you can't do anything about it. Do you really think Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi are that easy to manipulate? I think they're just going to check on Zhang Ruochen to decide what they're supposed to do next.”

“Next? What's next?” Mu Lingxi was really disturbed, and she had lost her wisdom and calm.

Qi Feiyu was silent, and there were complications in her eyes.

The other saintess, Lan Caisang, smiled and said, “If Zhang Ruochen hasn't gone mad and is still rational, Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi will help him. No matter how many great beings from savage beasts come, they can't scare those two away.”

Mu Lingxi was relieved a bit. If Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi struck together, other human great beings would also follow them. No matter what the result of the fight was, Zhang Ruochen's dangers would be temporarily resolved.

Lan Caisang changed his topic and said, “However, if Zhang Ruochen has really gone mad and become a bloodthirsty monster... Xue Wuye and Monk Lidi might not suppress him, but they might leave Dragon Top Mountain.”

Qi Feiyu added, “We can’t do anything about it, but you shouldn’t be too obsessed. Many excellent talents in history went off the wagon because they relentlessly refined themselves, and their rising power couldn’t be controlled by their rationale anymore.”

The so-called ‘Gone mad’ didn’t mean that they went on a devil path. Instead, it meant that they had lost their mind and that they weren’t normal human beings anymore. They weren’t able to think in a normal way. The only things they knew were all destructive, slaughtering, destroying everything around them or something else extreme.

“Impossible. Zhang Ruochen is always a rational guy with great mind power. How could he have gone mad?” Mu Lingxi shook her head, as she didn’t buy what they said.

Lan Caisang smiled, “What Zhang Ruochen did today doesn’t imply that he’s a rational person.”

Qi Feiyu shook her head and said, “Actually, Zhang Ruochen did behave differently from before. He’s too aggressive and ferocious. It doesn’t feel like him.”

Ouyang Huan sat in the wheelchair and said, “He’s being pressured by the Empress, the military base, immortal vampires, Black Market Excellence Hall, the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer race... He’s under so much stress that he has to put all his efforts into improving his cultivation.”

“His cultivation is being improved, and his peer monks can’t even compare to him. However, improving so fast will certainly leave some side effects.”

“His cultivation was way weaker before, yet he dared fight nineteen beast kings and Qingtian Tribe by himself. He was becoming reckless.”

“Even if Zhang Ruochen has gone mad, it wouldn’t surprise me.”

What Ouyang Huan said made some sense. Even if Mu Lingxi had complete trust in Zhang Ruochen’s personality, she was still worried now.

Xue Wuye was holding an oil paper umbrella, walking on the road made of bodies. He looked calm and chill, and he stopped walking after getting to the mountainside.

Monk Lidi was gigantic, and he was carrying a giant blade holder on his back. He walked up to the mountainside also.

“Amitabha, donator Zhang. After Xuanwu Void World, we meet again!”

Monk Lidi put his hands together and smiled. He didn’t look like a monk. Instead, he looked like a butcher.

Xue Wuye curled his lips and said, “Brother Zhang, we didn’t drink enough last time. Do you want to drink together again?”

Zhang Ruochen knew why Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye were here. However, he still needed much more offerings for the sacrifice.

If he teamed up with Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye now, those savage beasts would all run away, then all his efforts would be in vain.

Besides, even if the savage beasts still decided to fight, it would only lead to a giant war between human beings and savage beasts, which would lead to countless deaths.

Also, if those human monks knew that Zhang Ruochen was to make a saint pill, they would hate Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t reveal his true intention now.

He needed the saintly pills, and he needed to attract as many enemies as possible so that he could kill them all.

Blackie had already sent a message to Zhang Ruochen that the altar had been repaired, and all it needed was more offerings for the sacrifice.

Zhang Ruochen looked down, and his eyes turned red. He looked at those two aggressively and said, “Are you two here to challenge me?”

Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye took a look at each other, and they both looked worried and shook their heads.

Monk Lidi didn't want to give up like this. After all, he'd been friends with Zhang Ruochen before. He kept saying, “Donator Zhang, if you trust me, then follow me to Brahma Way...”

“You talk too much, idiot!”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed his Abyss Ancient Sword, performed Sword Five and dashed toward Monk Lidi.

Monk Lidi pulled out the Buddhist Butcher Sword he had, which flew up to his front.

Peng!

Abyss Ancient Sword crushed the sword case, clashing with the blade of Buddhist Butcher Sword.

Monk Lidi stepped back hundreds of feet. His body was detached from the ground, and he needed to fly to the sky to dissolve the force of the sword.

Huang Yanchen knew what Zhang Ruochen wanted. She stood forward and said, “Please leave as soon as possible, both of you, otherwise, he'll kill you both too.”

Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye felt pity, yet they couldn't do anything about it.

Those monks who tried to turn Death Zen Elder were all killed by him before. Now, no one dared try to change Huang Yanchen's mind.

Xue Wuye looked to Huang Yanchen and said, “Are you not going?”

“I'm his wife. Wherever he is, I'll be there,” Huang Yanchen answered.

Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye eventually left Dragon Top Mountain.

Feng Yinchuan smiled joyfully. “Zhang Ruochen, I can’t believe that you’ve actually gone mad. Do you really think you can still survive in any place in the world?”

Mu Lingxi was in despair, and she hated Empress Chi Yao’s guts. If it weren’t for her constant pressure, someone with strong mind power like Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t have been crushed.

Le squeezed the blade handle and looked at the front. She was bewildered for a while, and she only came back to her senses after a long time.

Chapter 1122 - Land Becomes Sea

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Many of the human cultivators felt pity and sadness, but quite a few smiled happily too.

“Oh! Zhang Ruochen...” Wan Huayu sighed, not knowing what to say. She felt guilty.

Her father was one of those who'd repressed Zhang Ruochen. Though he'd been under the Empress' orders and was forced to do so, he was still responsible.

Zhang Ruochen was such a talented human, but he'd gone crazy from his cultivation and was abandoned by humanity. She could only watch as he was besieged by the beasts and, finally, killed.

Any human with a conscience would be unable to move on from this cruelty.

Kong Hongbi shook his head and smiled in scorn. “I'd thought he was a match, but I didn't think his mind would be so weak. I didn't even attack yet and he's already ruined himself.”

Rain continued falling. It splashed on the ground, creating a misty haze.

The Kun Prince flew in the clouds, slipping through the bolts of lightning, and laughed. “The so-called Time and Space Descendant isn't much either. If I didn't want to see what the ancient relic on Dragontop Mountain was, I wouldn't even waste time on you.”

Blackie had set up a hallucinatory formation earlier on Dragontop Mountain's peak. It covered the altar so other creatures wouldn't see their true motive beforehand.

Thus, no one knew what Zhang Ruochen was digging for. They really thought that there was some amazing treasure.

When the Kun Prince saw that Zhang Ruochen had gone crazy, it stopped taking him as seriously and attacked first. It spread its wings. They covered the sky like two red clouds. Two blue rivers appeared above them.

This "water" wasn't regular water. It had been created by activating the rules of water using techniques and a saint soul. If the Kun Prince wanted to, it could even create two giant oceans, let alone two rivers.

Whoosh.

As the Kun Prince flapped its wings, the two rivers fell from the heavens, shooting toward Dragontop Mountain like two pillars of water.

"Let me fight you." Flames spewed out of Sun Dadi's body.

He stood on the peak and hurled his metal rod to break apart the pillars of water. However, the pillars contained horrible strength. Sun Dadi spat out blood as soon as they clashed. He flew back hurriedly and crashed into the mountain with a boom. It was unknown whether he survived or not.

Boom!

Boom!

...

No matter who touched the two pillars, they all exploded instantly into a cloud of blood. In an instant, three of the five Murong Clan Half-Saints had died. Their bodies had turned to bloody powder, completely destroyed.

The Kun Prince's combat abilities were terrifying. It was even stronger than some lower Saints that Zhang Ruochen had seen before.

Zhang Ruochen attacked immediately with the Luo Water Fist Technique. He wanted to counter water with water.

Forming fist prints with his hands, he gathered the sea of Holy Qi within him. A thousand-mile-long river appeared above his head.

“First move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Sky and River Apart.”

The river formed by the fist crashed toward the two pillars of water. A huge boom sounded instantly. Thousands of feet in the sky where the two forces collided, the sky seemed to shatter. A huge waterfall fell straight to the ground.

“Second move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Nine Twists and Turns.”

“Third move of the Luo Water Fist Technique, Broken Heaven Road.”

...

Zhang Ruochen had already combined memories of two lives within the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. He'd cultivated the Luo Water Fist Technique to the highest level. In this aspect, he was second only to Luo Xu.

He performed all 36 moves of the Luo Water Fist Technique and was neck and neck with the Kun Prince. The power that rolled off shocked all the creatures present.

An hour later, the area around Dragontop Mountain had turned into an ocean. The water level kept rising too, making the mountain into a lonely island.

Thankfully, all the creatures that remained in the Blue Dragon Void World were Half-Saints and could fly. They didn't drown and, instead, flew atop the water, gazing at the Kun Prince and Zhang Ruochen fighting intensely with reverent eyes.

The Kun Prince was huge. It was more than 10,000 meters long and radiated with horrible and wild Qi. Bolts of lightning passed through the fish scales, crackling and extending toward Zhang Ruochen along the water pillars.

Zhang Ruochen flew from the peak of Dragontop Mountain and attacked. The Blue Dragon and Blue Elephant's huge apparitions appeared in his arms. He punched, hitting the water pillars straight on.

“Did the Kun Prince and Zhang Ruochen really not reach the Saint Realm? Why does it feel like they're stronger than my teacher?” A Ninth Level Half-Saint human was utterly shocked.

Wan Huayu stood on the water, her brilliant phoenix wings unfurled. She was worried. “Zhang Ruochen has activated 3,000 runes on the Abyss Ancient Sword. Now, he's using up more energy to fight with the Kun Prince. How much more Holy Qi does he have left?”

Usually, only lower-level Saints had the quality and quantity of Holy Qi to support 3,000 runes. Zhang Ruochen was only an Eighth Level Half-Saint, but he could already do so, activating the Destruction of the Thousand Runes. It was already impressive.

Many people were guessing that Zhang Ruochen's energy would run dry soon.

On the other hand, Blackie took the pill furnace out. Placing it in the center of the altar, it telepathically messaged everyone, “I am going to use a secretive method and start the ritual soon. Everyone, hurry up and gather more sacrifices. We won't be able to resolve today's crisis without taking the divine pill.”

Whoosh!

Seven-colored light immediately shot out of Dragontop Mountain. The shadow of a blue dragon appeared amidst the light. In an instant, a heavy fragrance flew out, filling the air.

Blackie had created all of this using the hallucinatory formation. It wanted to fool all the beings and hide the truth, making them believe that an ancient treasure was really coming out.

As expected, the phenomenon at Dragontop Mountain's peak caused a huge commotion.

“The treasure buried in Dragontop Mountain is coming out.”

“What kind of treasure did Zhang Ruochen dig out that’s causing such a phenomenon?”

...

The Kun Prince fought with Zhang Ruochen while yelling, “Water beasts, listen. Attack Dragontop Mountain immediately. Take the ancient treasure, no matter what.”

The water beasts set off in large numbers. The force included dozens of Beast Kings and some Taigu Remains from the Half-Saint Rank.

A huge tortoise, thousands of feet long, carried a green spiritual mountain. It swam in the water and crashed against Dragontop Mountain.

The great tortoise was a Taigu Remain by itself and was 12th on the Half-Saint Rank. Its ancestors had left many legends during the ancient times, and it was comparable to the Kun and Rosefinch. It was definitely a dominating existence.

There were eight figures on the tortoise. They were all Taigu Remains but in human form. The men were handsome and the women were beautiful. They were all strong savage beasts on the Half-Saint Rank.

Huang Yanchen, Princess White Li and the others couldn’t fend off such a strong attack by themselves. Zhang Ruochen had to retreat early and return to Dragontop Mountain.

“Where do you think you’re going?”

The Kun Prince pursued and attacked. Firelight appeared in its golden eyes. Soon after, two thick beams of light shot out of its eyes.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated the 3,000 runes with the fastest speed. He swung down at the Kun Prince.

Poof!

Sword Qi hit the Kun Prince’s left wing, leaving a hundred-meter-long gash. The wing was barely hanging on. Fresh blood flowed out of the Kun Prince like a waterfall. The water below it was dyed red.

The Kun Prince had ruled the waters since it was born and had never met an equal match. Today, Zhang Ruochen had destroyed its unbeatable record, wounding it.

There were so many creatures present. They were the elites of all races. This was an embarrassment to the Kun Prince.

Whoosh—

Three thousand runes emerged on the Abyss Ancient Sword once again. It transformed into a huge black sword, hanging in the air, cutting down on the great tortoise.

In the midsection of the spiritual mountain on the tortoise's back, one young man transformed by a Taigu Remain waved his fan. He smiled. "It's just a sword. It's not like it can sweep through the sky, unless it's the Void Sword from the Thousand-bone Empress or Empress Chi Yao's Divine Blood Sword."

Of course, the eight Taigu Remains in human form didn't look down on Zhang Ruochen. They each created a beam of light. Connecting them, it shot into an ancestral weapon.

This weapon wasn't an ordinary weapon. It was a dark purple battle-ax with an ancient beastly imprint branded on the flag. The ax rose up speedily. Three thousand runes emerged on it and it radiated with powerful and wild strength. Its might was comparable to the Ancient Abyss Sword.

Boom.

The ax and sword finally collided. The energy waves created waves dozens of meters tall. The reverberations shook the blood within Zhang Ruochen. He flew backward, toppling a wall of the mountain. The falling rocks buried him.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen also forced the great tortoise with this hit too. It retreated to dozens of miles away. The eight Taigu Remains also took many steps back. The Sword Qi from the Abyss Ancient Sword left many small cuts on their clothes.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the pile of rocks. He looked a bit pathetic, but he wasn't hurt. His strong body had survived

the attack of the eight Taigu Remains.

He looked around and saw 18 ancestral weapons hovering in the air. They were controlled by 18 Beast Kings to anchor the space so he couldn't use spatial tactics.

Basically, neither his fight against the Kun Prince nor the eight Taigu Remains was fair. He'd been restricted by these 18 ancestral weapons and couldn't fight freely.

I must kill these 18 Beast Kings first, he thought. Then I can break free from the shackles and have the upper hand.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower's voice entered his mind. "I have passed the blooming period and bore a fruit. I direly need nutrients now, so the fruit can mature. Hand the 18 Beast Kings to me. I'll absorb their Qi so I can reach a higher level."

Chapter 1123 - Blood Shed on Dragon Top Mountain

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“They’re sacrifices, so you can’t eat them first. When the divine medicinal pills are finished, you can absorb all the nutrients here you want,” Zhang Ruochen said seriously.

“I don’t care,” Carnivorous Holy Flower said again.

“I have another saintly source,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Carnivorous Holy Flower said, “I know you have something better. Okay then, I won’t absorb the eighteen beast kings, but you must give me that saintly source after the fight is over.”

“Done,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands together, and holy white light gushed out of his pores.

And then, a trace of fierce Holy Qi gushed out of his back, turning into a long green vine and surged to the sky.

The green vine was immensely thick, winding the entire Dragon Top Mountain. The vines were like a dragon with great strength, and the sharp root hairs spread toward those eighteen beast kings holding their ancestral devices.

At the next moment, all eighteen beast kings let out blood-curdling screams, and they were entangled by those root hairs, which dragged them toward Dragon Top Mountain.

“It’s Carnivorous Holy Flower...”

The eighteen beast kings tried everything in their power to cut the roots of Carnivorous Holy Flower to get out.

However, the root hairs of Carnivorous Holy Flower were very sturdy. Even beast kings could only cut off one or two at the same time, after which more root hairs would grow.

In the end, all the eighteen beast kings were tied to Dragon Top Mountain. They kept struggling and yelling in anger, and the entire mountain kept shaking.

“You’re being suicidal.”

The Royal Prince of the Kun quickly shrank to a human shape five feet tall. He was wearing red armor and holding a crimson lance, dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, tearing the space around him apart, forming a space crack that was over a thousand feet long, knocking away the Royal Prince of the Kun.

Carnivorous Holy Flower suppressed all eight beast kings, rendering those eighteen ancestral devices useless. They couldn’t freeze the space anymore.

And then, Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers into a sword technique, forming eighteen ice blades that were tens of feet long, hitting toward the beast kings.

Pu Chi.

The ice blade formed a string of blade shadows, piercing the bodies of the beast kings, nailing them to the mountain.

The beast kings were too vigorous to be killed by one strike, so they were still struggling and making deafening sounds.

The more they roared, the faster they bled.

The Royal Prince of the Kun looked toward Moth King and Suzaku Fairy. It said furiously, “Why didn’t you attack. Are you really allowing a human being to keep being this savage?”

Moth King stepped on the ground, and half its body sank into the water. It yelled, “We don’t want to steal your thunder.”

Suzaku Fairy was standing on top of Moth King, and her beautiful body was giving out blazing light. She said, “He’s just a human being. We believe that you can easily suppress

him with your power, after which you can get the ancient valuables in Dragon Top Mountain.”

The Royal Prince of the Kun could tell that they were mocking it, so it was very mad.

If the Royal Prince of the Kun was able to take Zhang Ruochen down, it wouldn't have asked them for help.

Actually, the Royal Prince of the Kun had indeed underestimated Zhang Ruochen. The human being was extremely powerful. Even if it used all its trump cards, it couldn't suppress him.

Besides, it wasn't ready to show its trump cards yet. It wanted to save them for seizing the World Spirit.

The savage beasts were trying to encircle Dragon Top Mountain, yet they were stopped by Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, White Li Princess, Murong Yue and the others. Bodies emerged from the water, tainting the waters red.

None of the creatures realized that Dragon Top Mountain was sucking blood, making the scenes around the mountain stranger and stranger.

Suzaku Fairy was acute enough to sense that something was wrong. She looked to the peak of Dragon Top Mountain and said, “Let's fight. I'm also curious what the ancient valuables from Dragon Top Mountain are.”

Shua!

Suzaku Fairy didn't go rescue the eighteen beast kings. Instead, she surged to the sky like a trace of crimson light, and rushed toward the peak of Dragon Top Mountain. She held fiery feathers and slashed down.

She wanted to see through the mist surrounding Dragon Top Mountain, and to see what was on the top.

“Spatial Mirror.”

Zhang Ruochen supported himself with his right hand and pressed the space above him.

In the next moment, a spatial mirror was condensed in the space above Dragon Top Mountain, and it was half-transparent. It spun slowly, trying to deflect the attacks from Suzaku Fairy.

“Break.”

Suzaku Fairy mumbled a word. The fiery feather she held in her hand was sharp, clashing with the spatial mirror.

There were cracks on the spatial mirror, and it was completely broken.

“So powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen realized that Suzaku Fairy was much more powerful than he thought as he couldn't even ward off her attacks using the space power.

Zhang Ruochen had to wield his Abyss Ancient Sword again, and three thousand inscriptions emerged on the blade, clashing with the fiery feather, cutting off a bit of her hair.

Suzaku Fairy took a few steps back and floated in the sky. She stared down at Zhang Ruochen and said, “It's Destruction of Thousand-patterns that can only come from three thousand inscriptions. You have endless Holy Qi, don't you?”

Zhang Ruochen looked sharp, but he stayed silent. He couldn't be more aggressive.

Moth King roared in anger, took a step forward and dashed toward Dragon Top Mountain.

The Royal Prince of the Kun stuck the long lance into the water, and it condensed into lightning. It slapped the long lance, and all of a sudden, a gigantic bird formed by lightning flew above the water, setting off the waves and dashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

The three Taigu ferocious beasts finally teamed up and tried to kill the Time and Space Descendant.

In another direction, thousands of level-six savage beasts started to encircle them again like locusts, enveloping the entire Dragon Top Mountain.

Even Huang Yanchen and White Li Princess, who were both top-tier great beings, couldn't fight them by themselves. All of them were injured to some extent and had to retreat.

“Kill everyone who's related to Zhang Ruochen and seize the ancient valuables,” a Taigu remain that had turned into a human shape shouted, getting on Dragon Top Mountain first. It stepped on the stones and rushed to the peak.

Hong Long.

Sun Dadi rushed out of Dragon Top Mountain and turned into a Fire Giant Spirit Monkey. He yelled, and the iron rod in his hand became as thick as a bucket, hitting a human Taigu remains and knocking it away.

Sun Dadi was hit by the Royal Prince of the Kun, but he wasn't killed, instead, he became violent, and his fighting power surged.

Blackie stood at the edge of the altar and looked down, staring at Sun Dadi. It said, “Is this one also a Taigu remain? It looks exactly like Red Buttock Giant Spirit Monkey, and the force coming from him feels vaguely like Flood Qi.”

Blackie suspected that someone had put a seal in Sun Dadi's body to suppress some of his power, otherwise, the power bursting out of Sun Dadi wouldn't have been this amazing.

Blackie turned around and looked at the pill furnace at the center of the altar.

Light of seven colors emanated from the pill furnace, which was mixed with a strong fragrance. However, it took too long for the divine medicinal pill to be finished. Even now, it was only half done.

Could Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen really survive until the pill was finished?

Blackie looked down at the warzone and was worried.

Zhang Ruochen shattered the space around him, forming a chaos zone, blocking the three Taigu great evil beasts.

All three Taigu great evil beasts were as powerful as Zhang Ruochen. They had great sight and were all extremely fast.

They were able to dodge the broken space at the fastest speed possible and attack Zhang Ruochen from a different direction.

Zhang Ruochen was already injured, especially on his left shoulder, which had a hole as large as a fist in it, left by the lance of the Royal Prince of the Kun.

There was ancient power on that lance, which flooded into Zhang Ruochen's body so that his wound couldn't be healed. He bled a lot, tainting his body with red.

The lance had been aimed at Zhang Ruochen's heart, but fortunately, Zhang Ruochen dodged it, otherwise he would've been much more injured than now.

"The blood of Time and Space Descendant will be shed on Dragon Top Mountain."

The Royal Prince of the Kun guffawed, and it wielded its lance again. A net made of electricity flew out as well.

An electric pillar was shot out from the center of the electric net, and it had a diameter of over seven feet.

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward, shattering the space. The space structure started to collapse in front of the electric pillar, swallowing all the attacking power.

"No!"

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen felt cold and sensed that a great danger was coming. His heart skipped a beat.

Pu Chi.

A long white arrow was shot toward the back of Zhang Ruochen, piercing through his body.

The arrow went through his body, and the power led to a cluster of bloody mist on his chest.

The arrow spun in the sky and was shot into a cluster of bloody clouds, falling back to the hand of Qingtian Crown Prince.

Qingtian Crown Prince held a five-foot-long green bow in his hand as if it were a green moon. He had a smile on his face.

"You savage beasts are too weak. So many so-called great

beings from the 'Half-Saint Rank,' yet you can't even defeat Zhang Ruochen. You need us immortal vampires.”

The bow in the hands of Qingtian Crown Prince was called 'Blue Sky Bow,' and the arrow was called 'Daylight Arrow,' which was a true treasure of the Qingtian clan designed to kill creatures in the state of saint.

Even the creatures in state of saint would die if they were aimed at.

Zhang Ruochen was pierced by Daylight Arrow, and the blood was shed. He dived and disappeared among the seven-colored bloody mist around Dragon Top Mountain.

The sky and land became quiet.

Did Zhang Ruochen, who used to fight like a God of War, finally die?

All the human monks felt pity for Zhang Ruochen. It didn't matter whether Zhang Ruochen had gone mad or not, as he was a great human talent who could fight three Taigu great evil beasts by himself.

Even the nine heirs didn't have such power.

Would there be another young God of War like him in the future?

Chapter 1124 - Autumn Rain And Parasol Tree

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were too powerful. Not many people could dodge it even when shot in the open, let alone doing so without warning Crown Prince Qingtian.

It was logical that Zhang Ruochen would be killed.

“Zhang Ruochen!” Huang Yanchen’s eyes widened. She immediately shot forward in a blue streak to catch Zhang Ruochen who was falling from the sky.

Whoosh.

Just then, two beams of Blood Qi flew out of the ground, forming two Immortal Vampires. They were Princess Yanxin and Gui Wu, two powerful figures of the Qingtian Tribe. They attacked Zhang Ruochen suddenly from the left and right.

Murong Yue, Princess White Li, Sun Dadi, and Qing Mo were all attacked too. Amongst them, Murong Yue, Sun Dadi, and Princess White Li were heavily injured. Qing Mo and Huang Yanchen were slightly wounded too.

With the addition of the Vampires, the tide turned toward one side.

“No...how is this possible...no...” Mu Lingxi’s eyes widened as if she’d been struck by lightning. She stared at the falling Zhang Ruochen; it felt like her heart was being ripped apart.

A pair of icy phoenix wings unfurled on her back. As if she’d lost her mind, she broke past Qi Feiyu and Lan Caisang. She

flew toward Dragontop Mountain without caring about anything else.

Qi Feiyu activated Holy Qi to chase after her, but Ouyang Huan said, “You can’t stop her! Let her go!” He was expressionless as he said that.

Le furrowed his brow. With a strange technique, he walked toward Dragontop Mountain. He seemed to be unsteady, but each step crossed a large distance.

He didn’t believe that Zhang Ruochen was dead. How could someone like Zhang Ruochen die so easily? Le had experienced such fatal circumstances many times but never died, let alone Zhang Ruochen who was more powerful than him.

Le hadn’t attacked earlier because he was confident in Zhang Ruochen. He’d even suspected that Zhang Ruochen had a deeper reason for doing this. He couldn’t really have gone crazy.

However, this current situation troubled Le. He had to hurry over to Dragontop Mountain.

A blood-red cloud flew over to Le. There were a dozen Immortal Vampires within the cloud. One of them that was in the Half-Saint Outer Rank barked, “Humans who dare to enter Dragontop Mountain shall die.”

Le continued forward without speaking. Boundless murderous intent radiated from the cloud. It dipped down and the dozen of Vampires landed on the ground. Dozens of attacks shot toward Le.

Whoosh, whoosh.

He unsheathed his sword and light shone in all directions. The next moment, Le walked out of the bloody cloud. All that remained were dozens of Immortal Vampire corpses. They’d all been killed in one strike.

Le caught up to Mu Lingxi and stopped her. “Go back,” he said stiffly.

Mu Lingxi's eyes were bloodshot and her heart was in mourning. She wouldn't listen to anything. She only wanted to hurry to Dragontop Mountain.

"If Zhang Ruochen is still alive, I'll bring him out alive. If he's dead, I'll bring his body out."

With that, Le stopped looking at Mu Lingxi. He started out for Dragontop Mountain, speeding up as he went. Rather than returning, Mu Lingxi continued for Dragontop Mountain too.

They were attacked again by Immortal Vampires. This time, there were three figures from the Outer Rank—three Pre-Saint Vampires.

One was 82nd on the Outer Rank. He had silver wings on his back. "We have already warned you and you still dare to break into Dragontop Mountain," he said coldly. "Do you wish to follow in the steps of Zhang Ruochen?"

Those who could be within the top 100 of the Outer Rank were all able to fight lower level Saints. They naturally were more confident and didn't fear Le or Mu Lingxi.

Without saying anything, Le unsheathed his sword and struck at the three Pre-Saints. It was only one strike, but one Vampire had already been killed. He lay in a puddle of blood, his body cut into nine pieces. Three strikes later, a second Vampire was killed too. He'd been halved.

The third Vampire was very strong. He and Le exchanged more than ten blows, but he still died in the end. His saint soul was shattered by Sword Qi.

After this battle, no one present dared to underestimate Le again. He and his sword were both fierce.

By then, the water below Dragontop Mountain had all retreated. It flowed to the distance, revealing the muddy land washed by the waves.

Le and Mu Lingxi reached the foot of Dragontop Mountain. They walked through the scattered corpses and quickly climbed up.

“I thought the humans would retreat immediately since the savage beasts and Immortal Vampires are here. I didn’t think that another human would come. Interesting.”

The Kun Prince’s lip curled up. He rushed down from the air. Locking onto Le, who was climbing the mountain, he stabbed with his long spear.

Le was facing an unprecedented enemy. Waving his rusted sword, he went forcefully against the brilliant spear.

Boom.

The crash between the sword and spear shook one’s eardrums. Some Grade Six Beasts nearby started bleeding from all their openings.

Le’s feet left the ground and he flew down the mountain. The Kun Prince’s battle intent bubbled. Laughing loudly, he opened his huge red wings and flew low on the ground after Le.

Boom, boom.

The man and beast continued fighting. The ground kept cracking open, forming various shocking fissures. Each of the Kun Prince’s attacks forced Le countless feet back, but he could always dissolve the force.

It was shocking for a nameless human swordsman to block such a frightening ancient monster. Many human cultivators started asking for his background. They were interested in him.

Just then, a sharp arrow’s whir sounded from the middle of Dragontop Mountain. The Shining Sun Arrow shot down from the sky. In a streak of white light, it pierced Mu Lingxi. The force carried Mu Lingxi’s body into the air.

Her robe was dyed red with blood. Her fragile body plummeted down like a blood-red paper butterfly.

She’d been close to the top already and could almost see Zhang Ruochen, but it was a step too far. Her vitality was disappearing quickly, but her eyes were still trained on

Dragontop Mountain. It was getting further and further away from her.

Whoosh.

The Shining Sun Arrow cut a beautiful arc in the sky and landed in Crown Prince Qingtian's hands. As if he'd just done something normal, he was emotionless. Nocking the arrow on the bow, he targeted Le, who was fighting with the Kun Prince.

Just then, he saw a figure walk out of the void in the corner of his vision. The young man wore a clean yellow robe. He seemed to be in his early twenties.

He strolled in the air and reached out. He grabbed Mu Lingxi's wrist and pulled her up lightly. By the time Mu Lingxi was within 100 feet of him, she seemed to be floating in water.

Crown Prince Qingtian could sense that this yellow-robed man was dangerous. Eyes narrowing, he immediately changed his target and aimed at him. "Who are you?"

The man ignored him. He reached out a slender and pale hand, placing it on Mu Lingxi gracefully. Faint yellow Qi flowed out of his palm. It formed many leaves that flew into Mu Lingxi. The wound caused by the Shining Sun Arrow healed visibly.

Everyone present was shocked. They stared at the yellow-robed man incredulously.

According to legends, anyone shot by the Shining Sun Arrow would die very quickly. That was why everyone thought Zhang Ruochen would die without a doubt after getting shot.

The scene before their eyes was very strange. Mu Lingxi had obviously been shot, but she was now full of vitality. She seemed even stronger than before.

The cause was obviously this yellow-robed man.

Crown Prince Qingtian's eyes gleamed coldly. Guiding all his strength into his arms, he drew the Clear Sky Bow again. The bow shone even more brilliantly.

Whoosh!

The Shining Sun Arrow streaked forward, resulting in a string of explosions and a long trail hundreds of feet long. It shot toward the yellow-robed man.

The man was still calm and composed. One hand hovering above Mu Lingxi, he stared attentively at her. His other hand raised slowly and caught the Shining Sun Arrow.

“Actually...caught it...”

A mass of gasps sounded in the sky. The Rosefinch Fairy, Heavenly King Bi'an, Master Lidi and Xue Wuye all lost their composure. They stared at the yellow-robed man in amazement.

He loosened his fingers and tossed the Shining Sun Arrow away. “You have only saintified 132 apertures,” he said calmly. “If you could upgrade 142 apertures, it wouldn't be so easy for me to catch that arrow.”

With 144 saintly apertures, one's body would become a saint. One hundred forty-two saint apertures was only a bit away from a saint body. The body would be unimaginably strong.

“Who are you?” Crown Prince Qingtian felt a chill running down his spine. He stared at the man in terror.

“Qiu Yu,” the man said.

His name meant “autumn rain” and these two names stirred up excitement in everyone present.

“He's number one on the Half-Saint Rank. I thought that the Saint Lady had just wrote those two words there. I didn't think he really existed.”

Master Lidi, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Xue Wuye, and Rosefinch Fairy were all top figures on the Half-Saint Rank. If anyone else claimed that he was number one on the Half-Saint Rank, they probably wouldn't accept it.

After seeing Qiu Yu's abilities, no one dared to not accept it.

“Don't misunderstand,” the man said. “I'm not a human. I'm only a parasol tree planted in the southern region.”

Chapter 1125 - Holy Tree

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The first one on the ‘Half-Saint Rank’ was a Sycamore tree, which was a surprise to everyone.

The eyes of Ouyang Huan gleamed, and he looked at the yellow-shirted man in confusion. He said, “Legend has it that five holy trees came into being in Kunlun’s Field a long time ago, and they were the five spirit roots. They were Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in the center, Divine Mulberry-Supporting Tree in the east, Divine Sycamore Tree in the south, Divine Bodhi Tree in the west and Divine Plantain Tree in the north. Is Qiu Yu related to the mythical Divine Sycamore Tree?”

Qiu Yu claimed he was from the south just now, which made people wonder whether he was related to the Divine Sycamore Tree from the south or not.

Qi Feiyu stood beside Ouyang Huan and said, “I heard that Divine Sycamore Tree once tried to fight Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to see who the strongest spirit root is, and that fight was extraordinary. In the end, Divine Sky-Connecting Tree defeated Divine Sycamore Tree.”

“Divine Sycamore Tree was severely injured and went back to the south. It recovered for twenty thousand years but still couldn’t get back to the peak, instead, it tried everything to get to a higher level to revenge itself, which led to hidden dangers in its body. In the end, it ignited itself and was burnt to death.”

“It’s documented that the fires from the self-ignition of Divine Sycamore Tree turned the sky above the entire south red, and it stopped after burning for five hundred years.”

“Even until now, there’s a fiery domain that’s hundreds of thousands of square miles in the south, and at the center is where Divine Sycamore Tree is rooted. It’s been burning for millennia, but it’s never been put out. It seems that it’ll keep burning until the end of time.”

A demonic way half saint from Moon Worship Demonic Sect asked, “Is Divine Sycamore Tree really rooted at the center of the fiery domain? Isn’t that a holy place for refinement?”

“No.”

Qi Feiyu shook her head and said, “That’s a land of extremes. No creatures can ever reach the center of the fiery domain. Even saints will be burnt to death if they trespass in the center of the fiery domain.”

Lan Caisang’s eyes glinted with admiration. She said, “Qiu Yu’s power is earthshaking. He’s already this powerful yet he isn’t even a saint yet, so just imagine how strong he will become when he reaches the state of saint. Perhaps he’s indeed related to the mythical Divine Sycamore Tree.”

Qiu Yu was indeed inconceivably powerful, so strong that it didn’t feel like a creature under the state of saint.

Even Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye were likely to be defeated by Qiu Yu, and they were widely thought to be the most powerful beings under state of saint.

Everyone believed that Qiu Yu had an impressive background.

“Is he a plant grown from a new seed of the Divine Sycamore Tree? Which means he’s a son of God! He’s of noble blood!” someone speculated.

Some other creatures thought, “Although Divine Sycamore Tree died of self-ignition, nobody knows whether some roots remained in the underground of the fiery domain. Even if there’s only one root left, Divine Sycamore Tree can be reborn.”

Rosefinch Fairy squinted her eyes and stared at Qiu Yu. She seemed to have mixed feelings and said, “After Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was cut down, no creatures in Kunlun’s Field became gods. Some creatures with great intelligence

speculated that the spirit roots of sky and land are connected to the rules of sky and land. As the spirit roots have disappeared, rules of sky and land are now flawed.”

“And now, Kunlun’s Field might still have some hope as Qiu Yu had shown up. If he can grow to become a holy tree, he’ll become a new spirit root of sky and land in Kunlun’s Field, making up the rules of sky and land.”

Everyone looked to Qiu Yu as they heard this, and all of them looked at Qiu Yu in a different way.

Qiu Yu had an immense influence now. If he was willing to, countless creatures would follow him to refine themselves.

Gradually, Mu Lingxi woke up, and she opened her beautiful eyes and looked at Qiu Yu, then, he looked to Dragon Top Mountain.

Hua La.

She immediately stood up and tried to rush to Dragon Top Mountain again.

However, right after she took a step, she felt so weak that she couldn’t even stand straight. She dived.

Qiu Yu reached out his hand, which formed a giant hand print, holding her. He said, “There’s ancient ice phoenix in your blood, and it has been awoken. Refine with me, and we’ll enter the state of god.”

If other creatures said something like that, they would’ve been laughed at.

However, when Qiu Yu said so, he said it with a special charisma and sounded convincing, and nobody would doubt he was actually capable of doing that.

Legend had it that the phoenix and Divine Sycamore Tree had a special bond, and they had been mutually beneficial to each other. They were both overlords in the south of Kunlun’s Field in the ancient times, and no creatures dared to mess with them.

Countless creatures envied Mu Lingxi as she had just obtained a great opportunity. As long as she seized that opportunity, she

would benefit a lot even if she couldn't become a god in the future.

“Sister Mu is not only beautiful like an angel, but also incredibly lucky. How come I don't have the bloodline of ice phoenix?” Lan Caisang said.

Qiu Yu was ranked first on the 'Half-Saint Rank', which meant he was the greatest being among those in the same realm. Everyone wanted to refine with him.

Besides, Qiu Yu might grow to become a holy tree in the future, and possibly a spirit root of sky and land.

Whoever teamed up with him to refine would be rewarded a great deal.

Mu Lingxi took out a pill and swallowed it. Gradually, she regained her strength.

She held her fists and bowed toward Qiu Yu. “Thank you for saving my life. I'll definitely prepare a great gift to thank you for it in the future.”

After that, Mu Lingxi opened her wings wide and flew toward Dragon Top Mountain.

She turned Qiu Yu down?

Everyone was shocked as they couldn't understand why Mu Lingxi would make such a stupid decision.

Only a few of them knew the reasons behind it.

Qiu Yu frowned and looked in the direction where Mu Lingxi flew away, and he stared at the peak of Dragon Top Mountain. He thought about it and whispered to himself, “Is it because of that human?”

Mu Lingxi was of great importance to him.

The Sycamore Tree needed to absorb the power of the phoenix to grow and to have a chance to become a holy tree.

As a phoenix, it needed to absorb the power of the Sycamore Tree to become stronger.

They were indeed mutually beneficial to each other.

Unfortunately, the phoenixes had been extinct for a long time, and those who were left only had a bit of phoenix blood inside their bodies. Most of those descendants had too much of other bloodlines and had lost their divine nature.

Mu Lingxi was also a descendant of phoenixes, and fortunately, her phoenix blood was relatively pure, and the ice phoenix bloodline in her body had been completely awoken.

Qiu Yu was confident enough that as long as Mu Lingxi refined with him, the ice phoenix bloodline would become purer to an extent that it might cast away the human forces inside her body, after which she might become a real phoenix.

Unfortunately, Mu Lingxi turned him down.

The battle in Dragon Top Mountain continued. Savage beasts and immortal vampires were crushing Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, White Li Princess, Sun Dadi and Murong Yue, and they were reaching the top.

Both Sun Dadi and Murong Yue had been severely injured. There were at least dozens of wounds on their bodies, and some of them had pierced through their flesh and blood, revealing their bone.

Their bodies were rugged already, and they would've been dead if it weren't for the special constitution they had. They had great life force, which was why they could still keep fighting.

After all, Zhang Ruochen was dead, and everyone felt guilty. They couldn't let themselves be killed by the immortal vampires and savage beasts.

“Amitabha!”

“Let's fight!”

Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye performed their body techniques and rushed toward Dragon Top Mountain.

They were Zhang Ruochen's acquaintances. If Zhang Ruochen hadn't gone mad by refining, they wouldn't have given up on him.

Technically, they didn't give up; they just couldn't do anything about it.

Rosefinch Fairy turned into a trace of gleaming light, condensing into a beautiful woman. She showed up in front of Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye and said, "I suggest that you take this chance to take the human monks out of this place. You must know the consequences if human beings are encircled by the immortal vampires and the savage beasts."

Xue Wuye smiled. "Are you trying to take care of me or threatening me?"

Rosefinch Fairy answered, "If you retreat, I'm trying to take care of you. If you go forward, it's a threat."

"I hate fighting a beautiful girl. She's all yours!" Xue Wuye said to Monk Lidi, and then, he performed Human Sword and glided past Rosefinch Fairy like a trace of sword light.

Unfortunately, Xue Wuye couldn't make it to the peak of Dragon Top Mountain. Instead, he was stopped by Heavenly King Bi'an and eight Taigu Remains.

Monk Lidi and Xue Wuye were indeed both powerful, as they could outmatch two Taigu great evil beasts and eight Taigu remains. Unfortunately, they were still stalled by the savage beasts and couldn't make it to Dragon Top Mountain.

Beigong Lan, Chi Wansui, Wan Huayu and the others all performed their fastest body techniques and rushed toward Dragon Top Mountain.

However, two immortal vampire crown princes and an immortal vampire crown princess rushed out from the space and tried to block them.

Almost all the great beings from savage beast races and immortal vampire races were around Dragon Top Mountain, however, many great beings chose to conceal themselves.

If all the great beings chose to make attacks and decided to annihilate the human monks at all costs, the human race would suffer gravely today.

Of course, this was not likely to happen.

If they were really determined to kill all the human monks, they would also suffer a huge blow.

Also, the battle for the World Spirit was the real fight they should be prepared for, so everyone was preserving and hiding their power.

The fight at the peak of Dragon Top Mountain was approaching its end.

Huang Yanchen, Murong Yue and the others were getting more and more injured, and they had to retreat back to the seven-colored rays.

“Kill everyone related to Zhang Ruochen and avenge the beast kings who got killed.”

“Zhang Ruochen killed a large group of our Qingtian tribe people. Today, we’ll avenge them all! Seize his fiancée for his crimes!”

“What kind of ancient valuables are going to be born on Dragon Top Mountain?”

...

The spirit Qi kept trembling because of the roaring from the savage beasts around Dragon Top Mountain.

A large number of beast kings and immortal vampire great beings rushed upwards from all directions, surrounding the peak completely, and then, they got into the clouds and mist made of seven-colored rays of light.

Chapter 1126 - Ninth Level Half-Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The center of the seven-colored light was the long-abandoned altar. There were many ridges on the altar, with bright red blood flowing through and radiating with sacred light.

The ritual had finished. The divine pill was completed.

The furnace had already been put away. Only Zhang Ruochen remained sitting in the center of the altar. Eyes closed, he was still in a trance.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had indeed been injured by Crown Prince Qingtian's Shining Sun Arrow. His vitality had flowed out quickly and he'd almost died. However, after falling into the seven-colored light, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree in the scroll tree had released a huge burst of vitality. It had penetrated the Spiritual Universe Map and into Zhang Ruochen's body, helping him dissolve the deathly Qi of the arrow.

The injuries on his back and chest had healed long ago. Only some faint scars remained. Right now, Zhang Ruochen had taken a divine pill and was trying for the Ninth Level with all his might.

The divine pill carried the saintly flower and dew of the Saintly Source Spring. Many kinds of saintly medicine were combined to create this divine pill. It obviously had very powerful effects.

As the effects were released, the Holy Qi within Zhang Ruochen grew thicker and thicker. It kept flowing and surging.

Seven-colored light seeped from his pores, making his body look like colorful glass.

The divine pill that Blackie had created was much more potent than a Grade Nine Divine Origin Pill. It strengthened the power waves on Zhang Ruochen, until even the space was trembling.

Thankfully, the spatial structure around Dragontop Mountain was sturdy. Otherwise, there would definitely be collapses.

Huang Yanchen, Sun Dadi, Murong Yue and the others had received Blackie's message. They all retreated to the top of the mountain and retreated to the edge of the altar. Looking toward Zhang Ruochen in the center of the altar and seeing how his vitality was getting stronger, they all let out relieved sighs.

"Boss really is immortal." Sun Dadi laughed. "He suffered such a grave injury but didn't die."

"His Majesty has the fate of the Sacred Central Empire and is the crown prince. Who can kill him?" Murong Yue had been horribly injured, but her eyes shone brightly now.

As long as Zhang Ruochen was still alive, the core was there. No matter how dangerous the situation was, they would still be able to keep going.

Blackie stood on the back of the Blue Dragon statue and looked at everyone. It laughed. "I created eight divine pills this time. You can each have one."

Whoosh.

Blackie took out five divine pills. It supported them with Holy Qi so they hovered above its paw.

The divine pills were like egg-sized pieces of suet jade. They radiated with brilliant and translucent light. Faint ripples of Divine Spirit rolled off the surface.

"Great, it's finally completed. I will take the divine pill and go through the second trial." Sun Dadi's eyes were glowing. Yelling, he grabbed a divine pill and swallowed it at once.

Then he jumped to a concave part of the altar. Maintaining the form of a fiery spiritual monkey, he started refining the pill with all his might.

After the battles, everyone was greatly hurt. They'd all sacrificed a lot. Of course, it was all worth it if the divine pill was completed.

Huang Yanchen, Princess White Li, Murong Yue and Qing Mo all took a divine pill and started trying for a higher realm. The divine pill was able to heal injuries. The Divine Spirit flowed out, visibly healing the injuries on all of them.

Blackie continued operating the hallucination formation to stop the savage beasts and Immortal Vampires, making more time for them.

Zhang Ruochen entered a new realm first, becoming a Ninth Level Half-Saint. Holy Qi flooded out from him, creating a huge tidal wave. In that moment, he could feel that his power had more than doubled. He could easily hear explosive cracks within him.

“The divine pill is indeed very strong. I only refined a little bit, but I've already broken past the bottleneck, reaching the beginning of the Ninth Level. If I refine it all, I should be able to reach the pinnacle.” Zhang Ruochen nodded softly in satisfaction.

The parts of the Ninth Level were very wide apart. Moving through the beginning, middle, later, and pinnacle stages would vastly improve his abilities. Since the divine pill could help him go from the beginning to the pinnacle of the Ninth Level, it was evident just how powerful the pill was.

Since the pill was completed, Zhang Ruochen released the Carnivorous Holy Flower as well. The flower's roots were like tentacles. They crept in all directions, covering the entire altar. They also dug into the ground to absorb the Qi of Dragontop Mountain.

Countless Grade Six Beasts had died on the mountain. A great amount of blood had mixed with the dirt. It contained very

strong Qi and power. Absorbing it helped the Carnivorous Holy Flower's fruit slowly grow bigger.

As the fruit grew, the flower's cultivation also improved quickly.

"Zhang Ruochen, did you have a breakthrough yet?" Blackie asked. "The formation can't hold up much longer against the savage beasts and Immortal Vampires."

Instead of continuing to refine the pill, Zhang Ruochen stood up slowly. "No need to stop them anymore. Let them in."

"Okay."

Blackie knew that Zhang Ruochen had improved greatly. It smiled and released the formation. A moment later, dozens of Beast Kings and many Immortal Vampires passed through the seven-colored light. They arrived below the altar.

"What is the ancient treasure?" The Immortal Vampires were all very excited.

The Kui Bull Beast King had shrunk to only four or five meters tall. The hairs on its body were like steel needles. Its huge eyes looked in all directions, trying to find the ancient treasure.

However, it only saw Zhang Ruochen standing beside the altar. Its hair immediately stood up straight. "Am I still in the hallucination?" it cried in shock.

A human who'd been shot by the Shining Sun Arrow was standing before it, unharmed. Any creature would think that this scene was a hallucination.

The other Beast Kings also thought that they were still in the hallucination and this was only a phantom. Ignoring Zhang Ruochen, they continued looking for the treasure.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward. A beam of sword light flew out of his finger and turned a Pre-Saint Beast King into a cloud of bloody mist.

"A hallucination. It must be."

Earlier, the savage beasts and Immortal Vampires had suffered great losses in the hallucination formation. They'd even killed themselves. Thus, they were very cautious now and wouldn't be fooled easily.

"It must be a hallucination," an Immortal Vampire elder said, thinking that he'd seen through everything. "They only want to scare us away. The more they do so, the more reason why we can't retreat. They're already at their end. We'll be able to kill them all once we break through the hallucination."

Only the Kui Bull Beast King had a suspicious expression. Its Spiritual Power was very strong—close to a Spiritual Power Saint. It suspected that the previous scene hadn't been a hallucination.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen pointed again, killing the Immortal Vampire elder that had just spoken with a beam of Sword Qi.

Feeling freaked, the Kui Bull Beast King scrutinized Zhang Ruochen. At that moment, Zhang Ruochen also turned over and stared at it. He had a smile in his eyes.

This was wrong.

This wasn't a hallucination. It must be Zhang Ruochen's true body. He hadn't died.

"Hurry...run!" the Kui Bull Beast King roared, finally sensing that something was wrong. It lifted its four hooves to escape.

But before it could finish yelling, Zhang Ruochen was already before it, punching its mouth with a fist.

Boom.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was extremely strong. Merely one punch knocked out all of the Kui Bull Beast King's teeth. Half of its head caved in and blood flooded out.

Boom.

Zhang Ruochen punched again, his fist landing on the Beast King's neck. It flew into the air.

The Kui Bull Beast King was a Taigu Remain, 42nd on the Half-Saint Rank. Every strand of hair on its body could transform into a black spear. It had once nailed hundreds of human elites to the walls of Yingsha City.

Now, it was powerless and defenseless before Zhang Ruochen. It rolled on the ground from the beating like a young calf. Because its mouth had been beaten in, it couldn't even cry out in pain.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen struck with his palm and slapped the Kui Bull Beast King into a pile of dead meat. Then Zhang Ruochen tossed the corpse to the Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Even now, some Beast Kings and Immortal Vampires still thought the scene was only a hallucination. Only very few of them felt something amiss. They retreated slowly, trying to escape from the peak of Dragontop Mountain.

Zhang Ruochen slid horizontally, appearing behind two Beast Kings. "Where are you going?"

The two Beast Kings felt coldness behind them. "Run!" they yelled in unison.

But they couldn't do so. Zhang Ruochen extended both hands, forming two huge palms and crushing their bodies.

He didn't attack anymore. He just used some attack techniques to kill the fleeing creatures.

The roots of the Carnivorous Holy Flower extended. Each root contained extreme power and killed every creature that ventured into the seven-colored light, turning them into nutrients. Zhang Ruochen didn't worry about rushing out. He protected Huang Yanchen, Murong Yue and the others so they could quickly refine the divine pill.

"Such a strong smell of blood."

Gui Wu flew in the air and looked down at Dragontop Mountain. Sniffing, his eyes hardened. "Your Majesty, something is wrong. Did they run into trouble in the seven-colored light?"

Blackie didn't continue managing the hallucination formation, but it hadn't disappeared completely. The outside world couldn't see what was happening at all.

“It is indeed strange.”

Crown Prince Qingtian grabbed the Clear Sky Bow and flew down to the edge of the seven-colored light. Leading the strong cultivators of the Qingtian Tribe, he charged in.

Chapter 1127 - Beaten to Death

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Qingtian Crown Prince was ranked seventh on ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank,’ which meant he was a top-tier great being. He was acute enough to sense that there were great dangers within the seven-colored rays of light.

Dozens of immortal vampire great beings got into the seven-colored rays of light with him, including Ghost Fog and Princess Yanxin, who were ranked at the front in ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank’ and Blood Saint Zuotian, who suppressed his power below the state of saint.

They could constitute the clan of a saint.

“Why is there no sound, even after all those great beings got in?”

Princess Yanxin looked around with her glinting eyes, and she was cautious. She found some bloodstains on the ground, which terrified her.

“The smell of blood is getting stronger. The peak of Dragon Top Mountain is not a good place.” Ghost Fog turned into a cluster of black fog, moving eight feet above the ground.

Of course, they weren’t afraid at all as they had absolute confidence in Qingtian clan. No matter what kind of dangers they met in Blue Dragon Void World, they could resolve them.

“Someone’s here.”

Princess Yanxin heard the sound of a breeze and rushed out like a crimson shadow.

“It’s you.”

Princess Yanxin, who had great breasts, stared at Mu Lingxi nearby with her charming eyes and smiled. “No wonder you’re the girl who attracted even the most powerful being on the ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ You’re indeed mesmerizing.”

Even though Princess Yanxin was pretty confident in her looks, she still had to admit that Mu Lingxi was more attractive than she was.

Which irritated Princess Yanxin, giving her the urge to scratch Mu Lingxi’s face, damaging her look.

And then, Ghost Fog, Blood Saint Zuotian and Qingtian Crown Prince rushed out and surrounded Mu Lingxi, but they didn’t attack her right away.

Blood Saint Zuotian said, “Your highness, Qiu Yu wants to refine with her. Let her leave! We don’t need to make a great enemy because of her.”

Qingtian Crown Prince nodded, as he was still intimidated by Qiu Yu, who was ranked in first place on ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ He didn’t need to offend him.

Certainly, immortal vampires weren’t afraid of Qiu Yu, as all the princes and princesses were top-tier great beings. If they really teamed up, even the first place on ‘Half-Saint Rank’ would be killed.

“Someone to refine with?”

The voice of a young man was emitted from the seven-colored rays of light.

Zhang Ruochen took a stroll out of the light with his hands behind his back.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen, Mu Lingxi’s eyes started to gleam again. She was so excited that she began to tear up.

Zhang Ruochen walked to Mu Lingxi’s side, reached out his hand and wiped away her tears. He tried to calm her down and said with guilt, “It’s all my fault. I let you worry!”

“No, it’s not.”

Mu Lingxi shook her head.

She knew at this moment that Zhang Ruochen was still the person he was before. He hadn't gone mad.

She didn't care why Zhang Ruochen had pretended to be mad before, as the only thing she actually cared about was Zhang Ruochen being able to stand in front of her, completely fine.

Mu Lingxi couldn't help her emotions. She embraced Zhang Ruochen's neck and kissed toward his lips.

Zhang Ruochen stood still and didn't push her away.

He could imagine how painful and sorrowful it was for Mu Lingxi to see him shot by the arrow of Qingtian Crown Prince when he was being encircled by his powerful enemies.

Mu Lingxi was allowed to react however she wanted when she saw him again.

Mu Lingxi gradually calmed herself down. She realized that there was still a group of immortal vampires standing next to her, so she let go of Zhang Ruochen and pouted her shiny lips. She looked a bit shy, so she looked away to the ground.

The immortal vampire monks were all astonished when they saw Zhang Ruochen. They were so deep in shock that they didn't even attack Zhang Ruochen when Mu Lingxi was kissing him.

Qingtian Crown Prince took a deep breath and found it incredible. "You were shot by Shining Sun Arrow yet you survived? And you're completely healed now? Unbelievable!"

Zhang Ruochen even took a look at Qingtian Crown Prince. He was still staring at Mu Lingxi. Zhang Ruochen asked, "Someone said that he wants to refine with you just now. Is it a huge problem for you? Do you need me to help you deal with it?"

Mu Lingxi could tell that Zhang Ruochen cared about it a lot as he asked her twice, so she was very pleased.

Before Mu Lingxi could answer the question, Princess Yanxin said with a sarcastic voice, "They're a perfect couple. This saintess from the Moon Worship Demonic Sect couldn't wait

to say yes. How would she need you to help her solve this? Besides, even if you want to solve it, you're not powerful enough to do so."

Qiu Yu was not only handsome and elegant, but also in first place on the 'Half-Saint Rank' with the potential to become a spirit root of sky and land.

He had charmed countless girls when he saved Mu Lingxi, including Princess Yanxin.

"She's talking nonsense. Nothing like that happened."

Mu Lingxi was worried that Zhang Ruochen would believe Princess Yanxin, so she denied it immediately.

Mu Lingxi was indeed very grateful to Qiu Yu for saving her life, but she didn't have any real feelings for him.

Princess Yanxin curled her lips and smiled. "Was I wrong? Qiu Yu is ranked in first place on the 'Half-Saint Rank,' and he can easily crush Zhang Ruochen with only one hand! Honestly, I think you couldn't be more foolish. You have a chance to become a literal phoenix, yet you're dead-set on being stuck with Zhang Ruochen."

"Are you done!" Zhang Ruochen yelled and looked aggressive.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't care less about what Princess Yanxin had to say about him. However, she had to go after Mu Lingxi, which eventually infuriated Zhang Ruochen.

One look from Zhang Ruochen made Princess Yanxin's heart sink. She felt as if she were being stared at by a supreme saint, and her legs, covered by her dress, were shaking. She almost fell on the ground.

"Be careful."

An elder who had been guarding Princess Yanxin rushed to her front, performing a print with his hands and slapping forward.

That elder had passed two pre-saint trials, so he was definitely a top-tier great being.

However, his body was shattered immediately by Zhang Ruochen, disintegrating into more than ten pieces and being splashed away.

Zhang Ruochen was pretty determined to kill Princess Yanxin. That pre-saint elder was only a scapegoat.

“You dare try to kill me, Zhang Ruochen?”

Princess Yanxin couldn't be more terrified. She quickly stepped back and rushed into the group of immortal vampires.

“I thought you wanted to drain my blood. I'm right here, do you dare drink it?”

Zhang Ruochen was really angry as Blackie told him that when he was becoming a level-nine half saint, Princess Yanxin and Ghost Fog teamed up to ambush Huang Yanchen, which almost killed her.

And now, Princess Yanxin dared provoke him again and smear Mu Lingxi.

Zhang Ruochen stepped forward and dashed into the group of immortal vampires, rushing toward Princess Yanxin.

Whoever stood in his way was slapped to death.

Peng.

Peng.

...

Zhang Ruochen killed more than ten immortal vampire half saints in seconds. Even the weakest among them were level-seven half saints, and they belonged to the middle-class and seniors in immortal vampires.

“Zhang Ruochen, you're being too reckless.”

Ghost Fog and Zuo Tian Blood Saint dashed toward Zhang Ruochen from two different directions.

Ghost Fog was standing amid a cluster of black mist. He mobilized the Holy Qi in his body, condensing into a ghost claw more than a hundred feet long, slapping toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zuotian Blood Saint used his saint look and gathered an enormous human shadow behind him, waving a bloody palm print.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance at those two, and then, he quickly turned around and mobilized his Holy Qi, condensing two gigantic hand prints.

Hong Long!

Zhang Ruochen didn't perform saint spells like Seven-Apertures Blood Palm and Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He resolved the most powerful attack skills of Ghost Fog and Zuotian Blood Saint with two simple techniques.

Ghost Fog and Zuotian Blood Saint spit out blood, and they were slapped to the ground. Their bones were almost broken.

“How... How did he become so powerful?” Ghost Fog found it difficult to believe as he was ranked ninety-second place on ‘Half-Saint Outer Rank.’ He wouldn't be this crushed even if he fought creatures within the state of saint.

Zhang Ruochen rushed into the hand print so fast that he formed a string of phantoms. He trod into Ghost Fog, after which his body exploded and blood splashed, mixing with the mud.

Just as Zhang Ruochen prepared to kill Zuotian Blood Saint, he sensed grave danger going toward him again.

He had gotten the same feeling when he was shot by Shining Sun Arrow.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen clenched his fist at the back, utilizing the strength in all his five fingers, making cracking sounds.

At the next moment, he grabbed Shining Sun Arrow.

Peng!

Only after that did Zhang Ruochen hear the sound of the bow, which meant the Shining Sun Arrow travelled much faster than sound.

Qingtian Crown Prince was slightly dazed. He couldn't believe that Zhang Ruochen was fast enough to grab Shining Sun Arrow.

Even he now questioned whether Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were indeed the true treasures of Qingtian Tribe or not. Was Shining Sun Arrow really so weak that Zhang Ruochen could seize it with his bare hand?

Shua!

Zhang Ruochen threw away Shining Sun Arrow and rushed to Qingtian Crown Prince's front at his fastest speed. He performed Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

Peng Peng.

Qingtian Crown Prince was also powerful enough to perform a saint-spell level palm technique, warding off nine attacks from Zhang Ruochen.

However, Qingtian Crown Prince couldn't resist the tenth attack.

Zhang Ruochen hit Qingtian Crown Prince's chest and knocked him away. He was knocked off of Dragon Top Mountain like a shell and hit another mountain dozens of miles away, which collapsed that mountain.

Zhang Ruochen flew out of Dragon Top Mountain, rushed forward and picked Qingtian Crown Prince out of the mud, and then, he hit the crown prince dozens of times until he completely shattered the body of Qingtian Crown Prince.

By then, the entire mountain had been broken into pieces.

Naturally, many creatures were astounded by what they saw.

Qingtian Crown Prince was ranked in seventh place on 'Half-Saint Outer Rank,' yet he was literally beaten to death by Zhang Ruochen. His body was so smashed that only bones and flesh were left.

"Is that Zhang Ruochen?"

A human monk stood close to the fight. He looked at the human shape standing on the collapsed mountain, and he felt

that it looked like Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruo Chen.

Chapter 1128 - Kill With Arrow

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“It must be...Zhang Ruochen.”

All the beings present looked over at Zhang Ruochen, finally confirming his identity. He'd clearly been pierced with the Shining Sun Arrow and fell into Dragontop Mountain while covered in blood. How could he still be alive?

“You didn't die.” Kong Hongbi huffed coldly, feeling disappointed. Zhang Ruochen had actually survived that previous situation. He wasn't a normal lucky guy.

Murong Yue and the Half-Saints of the Murong Clan followed beside Zhang Ruochen. This was why Kong Hongbi suspected that Zhang Ruochen really had something to do with the Crown Prince of the Sacred Central Empire from 800 years ago. Thus, Kong Hongbi wanted to kill him and make him unable to leave the Blue Dragon Void World.

Ouyang Huan sat in his wheelchair. Staring at the collapsing mountain, his eyes narrowed into slits. “Zhang Ruochen's cultivation improved greatly again,” he muttered to himself. “Not many beings under the Saint Realm can counter him now.”

The Moon Worship Demonic Sect cultivators behind him all had uncomfortable expressions. They wondered if their Deity would continue fighting against Zhang Ruochen.

If they began fighting with Zhang Ruochen's current crazy abilities, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect would suffer great losses.

Crown Prince Qingtian's body was close to a Saint's now, but he was still a step away and was killed by Zhang Ruochen. If he could have cultivated his Immortal Vampire body into a Saint, then his vitality would have reached a terrifying level. Even if Zhang Ruochen crushed him into ground meat, he would still be able to come back to life.

At that moment, even the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Kun Prince, Rosefinch Fairy and Heavenly King Bi'an stopped fighting. They gathered around and looked at Zhang Ruochen cautiously.

Even Crown Prince Qingtian had been killed. Who dared to look down on Zhang Ruochen?

Without another word, Zhang Ruochen picked up the Clear Day Bow as if no one was around him. He grasped it tightly and then lifted Crown Prince Qingtian's corpse. He flew to the peak of Dragontop Mountain in a streak of light.

The seven-colored light at Dragontop Mountain scattered slowly, revealing an ancient altar.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower was still rooted on the altar, absorbing the Blood Qi and Spiritual Qi of the mountain. The fruit at the top ballooned to the size of a basketball and shone with silver light.

Zhang Ruochen turned Crown Prince Qingtian's body into fertilizer, tossing it onto the flower's roots.

Ch, ch.

The Carnivorous Holy Flower made some excited sounds. Dozens of roots crept over to the corpse.

Crown Prince Qingtian's physical body was very strong. It made perfect nutrients too. Sucking his Qi would help the Carnivorous Holy Flower grow a lot more.

Seeing the sight at Dragontop Mountain, the gleeful human cultivators all fell into silence. They couldn't laugh anymore. However, those who'd thought Zhang Ruochen had gone crazy and felt regret for him suddenly came to a realization.

Wan Huayu smiled beautifully. “Zhang Ruochen didn’t go crazy. He was lying to everyone. His true goal was to lure out the greedy people and those that wanted to kill him and use them as sacrifices for the ritual. But what is he sacrificing for?”

Wan Huayu couldn’t guess the reason, but she hypothesized that it had something to do with cultivation. Zhang Ruochen had improved too quickly. He’d directly crossed into another level and had become a Ninth Level Half-Saint.

Dragontop Mountain was covered in corpses. Blood dyed the mountain red. It was practically a field of carnage. Most were the bodies of savage beasts while there were also a few Immortal Vampire and human bodies.

Countless humans had died under the attack of the beasts since arriving at the Blue Dragon Void World. Practically everyone had intense hatred for them.

The savage beasts had paid quite a cost in today’s battle. Dozens of Beast Kings had died while countless more Grade Six beasts had died too.

Seeing this, most of the humans were able to take their anger out. Zhang Ruochen had taken revenge for them and boosted the morale of the humans.

Of course, some were also frustrated. Feng Yinchan, princess of the Ghost Cultivation Race, was one of them. She was furious because she’d wanted to take advantage of the beasts and humans to kill Zhang Ruochen. Instead, Zhang Ruochen used her to complete the ritual.

With her abilities, Feng Yinchan wouldn’t be able to kill Zhang Ruochen in the Blue Dragon Void World. This was why she’d retreated with the Ghost Cultivation Race and wanted to return to Kunlun’s Field. There, she’d be able to ask the Saints of the race to kill Zhang Ruochen with the fastest speed. That would prevent Zhang Ruochen from maturing more and becoming their mortal enemy.

Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power was very strong. He could see and hear miles away and naturally saw Feng Yinchan.

“You want to escape?”

He yanked out the Shining Sun Arrow from the dirt. Nocking it on the bow, he pulled the Clear Sky Bow.

“Oh, no.”

Feng Yinchuan had an intense feeling of danger, a chill running down her spine. Silver wings sprouted on her back. She flew at a low altitude to escape even faster.

Poof!

The Shining Sun Arrow flew out, hitting Feng Yinchuan's back. She'd borrowed an ancient Saint's body, so she was very strong. However, her body couldn't block the Shining Sun Arrow. A huge hole opened up.

With a thud, she fell into the quagmire and struggled in pain. Blood kept flowing out of her wound. Her vitality was slipping away.

“You're massacring the innocent,” Qiu Yu said coldly, looking at Zhang Ruochen from the air.

The Shining Sun Arrow cut an arc in the sky and flew back into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

He met Qiu Yu's eyes. “My conflict with her doesn't need to be judged by others; neither do my actions.”

“You went so hard against a weaker woman. What kind of man are you?” As Qiu Yu spoke, he flew down slowly to Feng Yinchuan's side. He reached out and started treating her with two beams of yellow Holy Qi.

“So I can only wait for her to come kill me?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Mu Lingxi knew that Qiu Yu was powerful and didn't want Zhang Ruochen to have another strong enemy. She hurriedly stepped out and said, “Lord Qiu Yu, Zhang Ruochen didn't do anything wrong. Feng Yinchuan was the one who first instigated people to defeat Zhang Ruochen and almost killed him. Shouldn't someone like her die?”

Qiu Yu shook his head softly. “I only saw that Zhang Ruochen set up a trap and killed countless creatures just for a ritual. Plus, didn’t Miss Feng try to kill Zhang Ruochen because he first stole their treasures?”

Feng Yinchuan’s wound healed quickly and her vitality strengthened. She looked at Qiu Yu gratefully and smiled. “Thank you... Lord Qiu Yu, you are very fair and just...”

Mu Lingxi fell silent. She didn’t know the true reason behind these two events, so she didn’t know how to help Zhang Ruochen. However, she believed in Zhang Ruochen’s character. She turned and looked at him, hoping he would explain himself and clear the misunderstandings.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t intend on doing so though. He was too lazy. Lips curling, he hefted the Clear Sky Bow again. Using all his might, he pulled it to its limit and aimed at Feng Yinchuan.

Whoosh.

The Shining Sun Arrow streaked through the air with a long trail of light behind it. Qiu Yu’s eyes hardened. His hand shot out like lightning and grabbed the flying arrow.

His five fingers grasped the arrow...

“Huh?” The next moment, Qiu Yu’s expression changed. Shock flashed past his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen’s arrow contained much more power than Crown Prince Qingtian’s arrow. He couldn’t grab it with his bare hands at all.

The Shining Sun Arrow flew out of Qiu Yu’s hands and hit Feng Yinchuan’s head. With a boom, her head exploded and sank into the dirt. All that remained was a headless corpse.

The Shining Sun Arrow streaked back into Zhang Ruochen’s hands. Holding his arrow in one hand, the bow in another, he said indifferently, “You tried catching my arrow with your bare hands. Did you think that I was like Crown Prince Qingtian?”

Earlier, Blackie had telepathically told him Qiu Yu's background. Thus, he knew that Qiu Yu was first on the Half-Saint Rank and had caught Crown Prince Qingtian's Shining Sun Arrow. His cultivation was too high to be measured.

This was why he wanted to see just how powerful he was.

That man wants to join Miss Mu, so he'll definitely use all sorts of tactics against you. Be careful, Blackie reminded Zhang Ruochen telepathically again.

Qiu Yu raised his hand. There were some small injuries on his hands. Eyes turning hard, he said, "Miss Mu, your friend has no manners. Does he want to force me into fighting him?"

Was Qiu Yu, first on the Half-Saint Rank, finally going to attack?

All the humans present gasped. The savage beasts and Immortal Vampires smiled gleefully.

Zhang Ruochen could kill Crown Prince Qingtian, so his power went without saying. It would be great if Qiu Yu could help take care of him.

Mu Lingxi didn't know what to do. She really wanted to stop Qiu Yu and Zhang Ruochen from fighting.

"Who's the unmannered one? I think it's you."

Eyes opening, Huang Yanchen stopped refining the Divine Pill. Repressing the power within her, she walked down the altar, not stopping until she reached Zhang Ruochen's side. She stared at Qiu Yu with cold and sharp eyes.

"You don't know the truth at all and you jump out to judge Zhang Ruochen," she proclaimed. "Who do you think you are? Is it necessary for you to judge whether Zhang Ruochen or Feng Yinchuan is right?"

Qiu Yu was the strongest one in the Blue Dragon Void World and yet someone dared to berate him? Many humans were impressed with Huang Yanchen's bravery.

Qiu Yu looked away from Zhang Ruochen to Huang Yanchen. He remained calm, but no one knew how he was feeling inside.

“Zhang Ruochen doesn’t want to explain because he doesn’t wish to waste energy with a busybody,” Huang Yanchen continued. “But as his wife, I don’t wish people to misunderstand him. I must explain for him. Today, I will tell you what the truth is and what manners are.”

Chapter 1129 - Princess Yanchen's Tactics

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

And then, Huang Yanchen told everyone about how the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race slaughtered the people in the city.

To savage beasts and immortal vampires, this was no big deal. However, the human monks were all shocked.

“It was the Ancient Ghost Cultivation Race and Ancient Necromancer Race who killed their own people. That Feng Yinchuan dared put the blame on Zhang Ruochen. She's so wicked.”

“The aboriginal people in Blue Dragon Void World are human beings too. They shouldn't have slaughtered the commoners.”

...

Huang Yanchen was one of the nine heirs, and she was also the sister of the other eight heirs. She was one of the heirs of East Region Saint Mansion, so she had an official background.

The human monks tended to believe her.

“We did set you guys up on the mountain, but we're not to blame. Your greed led you to your destruction. Even if there were ancient remains on the mountain, we would be the first one to find them. Why would you think you had the right to them?” Huang Yanchen asked.

Rosefinch Fairy stood on top of Heavenly King Bi'an, and there were trips of flame around her body. She looked beautiful. She sneered and tried to counter what Huang

Yanchen said. “It’s called the survival of the fittest. Even if you can find the valuables first, they might still not belong to you.”

Huang Yanchen sneered, “If the rule is the survival of the fittest, we didn’t do anything wrong. Why does that great being ranked at first place on the ‘Half-Saint Rank’ think he has the moral high ground to judge Zhang Ruochen?”

After several fights in Yingsha City, Qingtian Tribe and Dragon Top Mountain in Blue Dragon Void World, Zhang Ruochen had already gained widespread popularity among the human monks. Many human monks were grateful for his help, and some idolized him.

Even though Zhang Ruochen didn’t care how others thought about him, lots of human monks still sternly believed in him and supported him.

“Zhang Ruochen is a young supreme of our human race. He doesn’t need judging by other races.”

“Zhang Ruochen just pretended to be mad so that human monks wouldn’t join the fight for him, otherwise they might have been injured. That alone means he isn’t an idiot.”

“That Qiu Yu wanted to refine with the saintess from Moon Worship Demonic Sect, so he is targeting Zhang Ruochen. What a despicable person!” a young female half saint said.

Qiu Yu started to be hated by the human monks, and his handsome face started to twitch. He couldn’t stay calm like before anymore.

However, he didn’t do anything inappropriate because of that. He said, “Since this is just a misunderstanding, I’ll put a stop to it now.” Qiu Yu shot a glance at Mu Lingxi. He shivered his body and disappeared.

Qiu Yu was so fast that only a few saw the way he left.

“Impressive that he’s able to control his emotions so well. He’s indeed somebody,” Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen was still staring at where Qiu Yu stood. He smiled and said, “He has the force of the Divine Sycamore

Tree, and he has great potential to mature in the future. Perhaps he will become a holy tree in the future. He has great ambition, so he won't make himself an enemy to all the humans for such a petty thing."

"It seems that the human race has offended him!"

Huang Yanchen smiled seductively. It was such a beautiful smile that it cast away the coldness on her.

Zhang Ruochen said, "It's all because of you. You were the one who tried to argue with her. Was that really necessary?"

"He was targeting you, so I certainly had to fight back. You might not care much about it, but as your wife, I have to defend you."

Huang Yanchen looked up and was proud of what she did. She behaved like a white goose with pride.

Zhang Ruochen now realized what was really happening. He took a look at Mu Lingxi beside him.

Huang Yanchen didn't hesitate at all before she confronted Qiu Yu. She stopped refining divine medicinal pills to suppress her breakthrough so that she could confront Qiu Yu.

On the surface, she was targeting Qiu Yu, but she was actually aiming at Mu Lingxi.

Qiu Yu had saved Mu Lingxi's life, so she couldn't have said something like that to Qiu Yu as Mu Lingxi did.

Besides, Huang Yanchen kept emphasizing that she was the wife of Zhang Ruochen, and that she was doing what a wife was supposed to do.

Perhaps the so-called first place on 'Half-Saint Rank' wasn't her enemy at all. Her real enemy was Mu Lingxi.

"Besides, I didn't cause the situation. Xingling is the reason this whole thing happened."

Huang Yanchen smiled at Zhang Ruochen, and then, she looked to Mu Lingxi. She walked toward her and said, "Long time, Xing Ling."

Mu Lingxi looked down and said, "Sister Chen."

Mu Lingxi was no longer excited and exhilarated like before. Instead, she felt a bit bitter.

Huang Yanchen sized up Mu Lingxi as if it were the first time that she met her. She said, “This is what you really look like, isn’t it? You’re indeed much more beautiful than before. I can even call you the most beautiful woman in Kunlun’s Field. No wonder even Qiu Yu, ranked first place on the ‘Half-Saint Rank,’ was attracted to you. Even I admire you standing in front of you.”

Mu Lingxi immediately interjected and said, “Sister Chen, I’m just here to check on you and Zhang Ruochen. Now that I’m sure that you’ve recovered, I should leave now.”

“I’ll escort you.”

Instead of asking her to stay, she walked Mu Lingxi down the mountain herself.

Blackie shot a glance at Zhang Ruochen, smiled and said, “That girl Mu Lingxi is really attached to you. Why didn’t you convince her to stay?”

“Didn’t you see that they were almost about to fight each other?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie nodded and said, “Makes sense. Princess Yanchen’s getting stronger and stronger. Each sentence she said was like a divine spell, so forceful that Mu Lingxi couldn’t even fight back.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed.

He had figured out where Mu Lingxi was in his mind.

There was a history between the two.

The most crucial thing was that Zhang Ruochen wasn’t sure of was whether he could provide Mu Lingxi with a bright future or not. Besides, he had already had Huang Yanchen. If he got together with Mu Lingxi also, it might be unfair to Huang Yanchen. Wouldn’t it be too greedy?

Besides, there was still a huge problem in his life: Chi Yao.

Before he could solve the problem of Chi Yao, Zhang Ruochen couldn't move on to love a woman.

As the figure of Chi Yao emerged in his mind, Zhang Ruochen quickly calmed himself down. He put all his feelings away and started to ponder what to do next.

There were dozens of immortal vampire great beings from Qingtian Tribe at the peak of Dragon Top Mountain. Aside from Ghost Fog and Qingtian Crown Prince, who were already killed, Princess Yanxin and Zuotian Blood Saint were still there.

Princess Yanxin saw Zhang Ruochen staring at her. She was terrified and kept retreating. She said with a trembling voice, "Zhang...Zhang Ruochen... I'm the sister of Qitian Crown Prince. There'll be no benefits for you if you kill me. You'll only make yourself another strong enemy."

It wasn't that Yanxin Princess didn't want to get away from Dragon Top Mountain. Instead, the bodies of all the immortal vampires who tried to flee were pierced through Carnivorous Holy Flower, turning into its nutrients.

There was no way they could flee.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm and said, "I'm already a mortal enemy of immortal vampires. I won't be able to change anything whether I kill you or not. Kill her, Carnivorous Holy Flower."

All the branches of Carnivorous Holy Flower turned silver, and some of them were as thick as buckets, extending all the way from the peak to the mountainside.

Dragon Top Mountain that was around twenty thousand feet long was completely covered by the silver branches that looked like silver dragons.

The scene was incredible, and the forces coming from Carnivorous Holy Flower got stronger and stronger, which terrified even the beast kings.

Which was why all the savage beasts didn't dare get into the mountain. Instead, they all stayed away.

Following Zhang Ruochen's order, Carnivorous Holy Flower immediately mobilized more than ten of its branches and extended them toward Princess Yanxin, immediately enveloping her.

Princess Yanxin was ranked in the top one hundred on 'Half-Saint Outer Rank,' so she wouldn't get killed without a fight. She wielded a holy sword toward a branch, trying to slay her way out.

Peng Peng.

Her holy sword hit the silver branch, making a clacking sound, trembling the Holy Qi around them.

However, instead of cutting them, the holy sword could only leave shallow traces on the silver branches.

What Zhang Ruochen did infuriated all the immortal vampires.

A large group of immortal vampire monks dashed toward Dragon Top Mountain, led by two crown princes and one crown princess.

"I'll fight you, Zhang Ruochen, if you want to make yourself an enemy against all the immortal vampires."

A crown prince from Motian Tribe dived and landed on Dragon Top Mountain, trampling the mountain under him.

"Zhang Ruochen is extremely powerful. Don't underestimate him. Let's attack him together and save Princess Yanxin now."

The crown princess from Huangtian Tribe dashed forward with a golden long blade in her hand. Her body multiplied, and nine bodies that looked exactly the same emerged, rushing toward where Princess Yanxin was.

"Qi Sheng has already learned that Qingtian Crown Prince died, and he's rushing here. We don't need to fight Zhang Ruochen to death at the moment. All we need to do is to stall him, and when Qi Sheng gets here, he'll end Zhang Ruochen with no problem."

Jingtian Crown Prince flew to the mountainside of Dragon Top Mountain. He took out a black scepter and stuck it to the

ground.

And then, he reached out his hands and infused one of the green crystals with his mind power.

Hua La!

A trace of green light gushed out from the top of the scepter, piercing through the clouds and giving out strong power ripples.

Mud and stones on the ground gradually turned green, centering the scepter. The green permeated.

At the next moment, the entire Dragon Top Mountain started to shake, and the ground at the mountainside started to crack. Green light came out of the cracks.

Those cracks gradually became wider. Dust and mud gushed out, and Dragon Top Mountain started to sink in the end.

The ground structure around Dragon Top Mountain was pretty stable. Every ordinary stone was as solid as iron, yet Jingtian Crown Prince was able to crack the ground, making the mountain sink.

How impressive is his mind power?

Chapter 1130 - Motian

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was indeed very strong and had surpassed the top tier level, but no one believed that he could go against the entire Immortal Vampires Tribe.

Motian Crown Prince, Crown Prince Jingtian, and Yellow Sky Crown Princess were all top tier fighters. They weren't any weaker than Crown Prince Qingtian. The three working together could counter someone above the top tier level.

The scepter stuck into the foot of the mountain shone brighter and brighter. It ripped up the earth even more.

“That is an ancient weapon from the Jingtian Tribe called the Inch Holy Staff. Apparently, Spiritual Power Saints can activate it with full power and change the geography, moving mountains and filling seas.”

“Crown Prince Jingtian is a talent in Spiritual Power. He's getting infinitely close to level 50 and also has the Inch Holy Staff's help. He can unleash power stronger than usual top tier figures.”

The ground shook violently under everyone's feet. Dragontop Mountain had sunk more than 800 meters. Dirt that flew up into the air formed a mass of black clouds, darkening the sky.

Zhang Ruochen stood on the top of the mountain. Pulling the Clear Sky Bow back, he aimed at Crown Prince Jingtian.

“Zhang Ruochen, I am your opponent.”

Motian Crown Prince was around ten feet tall and his body was covered in demonic black patterns. Two pairs of dark red

wings sprouted on his back. Wielding a black 13-foot-long blade, he brought it down at Zhang Ruochen.

Black light flowed down the blade's edge with sizzling sounds.

Motian Crown Prince was third on the Half-Saint Outer Rank and was already a Pre-Saint. He was only a step away from becoming an above-top tier figure.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the approaching Motian Crown Prince. His fingers loosened and the arrow flew out. Rings of Holy Qi rippled out from the arrow.

Boom.

The Shining Sun Arrow flew out, shooting down the mountain. Crown Prince Jingtian's expression changed slightly. He activated all his Spiritual Power to his fingers and chanted in his mind, Ten Prints of Jingmie Destruction.

Crown Prince Jingtian cast a Level 10 earth defensive spell. The next moment, Spiritual Qi began converging toward him. It formed a ten-level-high blood-red shield.

It was formed by Spiritual Qi, but it looked like it was made out of metal. It was ten feet thick and shone with golden light.

Boom, boom.

The Shining Sun Arrow and blood-red shield crashed. That moment, shocking power was released, shattering the shield.

Dozens of explosions sounded, shattering the Ten Prints of Jingmie Destruction. The Shining Sun Arrow grazed past Crown Prince Jingtian's neck. Merely the wind from the arrow left a deep gash on his neck.

Hot blood flowed out, dyeing his collar red.

With a thud, the Shining Sun Arrow hit the ground, leaving a deep, bottomless hole. Spider web-like cracks spread around the hole. It was a shocking sight.

"A pity!" Zhang Ruochen shook his head and sighed.

Motian Crown Prince had disturbed that arrow, making it lose its target. Otherwise, it could kill Crown Prince Jingtian or at

least injure him heavily.

At the moment, Motian Crown Prince's huge sword was hanging above Zhang Ruochen's head. He was unable to try again.

"Die!" Motian Crown Prince's body flared with heavy demonic Qi. His arms, thicker than pillars, were filled with explosive power.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed his bow with one hand and jumped to the side. Turning around, a dragon's roar sounded in his arm and he slammed the Clear Day Bow down. It crashed against the huge black sword.

Kaboom.

After the collision, Motian Crown Prince was sent flying.

Zhang Ruochen took three steps back as well, creating three deep footprints, to dissolve the power and stabilize himself.

"As expected of number three on the Outer Rank. Your power is actually stronger than Crown Prince Qingtian." Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Motian Crown Prince landed on the ground. He grabbed the sword hilt with both hands and stabbed the sword into the dirt. "Qing Ye was only physically strong," he said gruffly. "Because he absorbed ancient Suanni blood and received a remnant of the Suanni Secret Spells, allowing him to saintify 132 apertures."

"However, a remnant is still only a remnant. He saintified 122 apertures. Even if he didn't reach the limit yet, he wouldn't be far from it. He'd never completely turn his body into a Saint. How can he be compared to me with that power?"

Cultivating the physical body wasn't the accumulation of resources. An average cultivator wouldn't be able to have a saint body no matter how much divine blood he was given.

Even a top talent like Crown Prince Qingtian with divine spells like the Suanni Secret Spells had difficulty cultivating 132 apertures. It seemed like he only needed 12 more apertures to turn his body into a Saint. However, each of those

12 apertures was harder than the last. The difficulty grew exponentially.

It could be said that Crown Prince Qingtian's body becoming a Saint was practically impossible, unless he received a more complete copy of the Suanni Secret Spells.

Zhang Ruochen looked quite interested. "Does this mean that you're cultivating your body too?"

"Correct."

Motian Crown Prince spread his legs slightly. His blood instantly started coursing through him with loud booms. Each vein was like a wide river. The sound of blood flowing was as loud as an angry current.

Only someone whose body had reached a shocking level would be able to withstand that exuberant blood Qi.

Zhang Ruochen activated the Eye of the Deity Print and looked inside Motian Crown Prince's body. There were eight blood-red meridians. One end connected to the blood; the other connected to the Sea of Qi.

These were Blood Spiritual Meridians.

"You actually opened eight Blood Spiritual Meridians," Zhang Ruochen exclaimed.

After all, cultivating the body in the orthodox way meant the more Blood Spiritual Meridians, the higher the accomplishments. Once one opened five meridians, one would have the chance to saintify the body.

Eight hundred years ago, a genius of the Blood God Sect had opened seven Blood Spiritual Meridians. Not only did he turn his body into a Saint, he was a step away from reaching the Supreme Saint Realm. He was known as the Tenth Emperor.

Motian Crown Prince was actually more powerful than this genius from the Blood God Sect. He'd cultivated eight Blood Spiritual Meridians. No wonder Zhang Ruochen had such a surprised expression.

"Yes, I have indeed opened eight Blood Spiritual Meridians," Motian Crown Prince said confidently in a deep voice.

Opening eight meridians created a sturdy foundation for cultivating the physical body. This had always been what Motian Crown Prince was most proud of.

Everyone present who was familiar with physical body cultivation was incredibly stunned by this.

A regular person couldn't even open one meridian, let alone eight!

“Motian Crown Prince could become third on the Outer Rank. He is definitely a terrifying figure. Any other time, he would probably be undefeatable.”

Shangguan Xianyan, Saintess of the Blood God Sect, sighed deeply. She couldn't keep calm.

She'd once gone to read the Blood God Map to open the door to physical body cultivation, but she couldn't open a single meridian and had to give up. Thus, she was more than clear that having eight Blood Spiritual Meridians was incredible.

“There are too many talents in this era,” Wan Huayu said. “Anyone that can enter top 30 of the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank would have been a top figure in any other time.”

Even the nine Heirs couldn't all enter the top 30 rank. It was evident how difficult it was to join them. Those who could be top five would have probably been the top figures in the middle ages.

“Qiu Yu, Qi Sheng, Zhang Ruochen, Master Lidi, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and Xue Wutian are all too excellent. They overshadowed the other beings. Otherwise, someone like Motian Crown Prince would definitely impress the world and be the synonym of undefeatable.”

Everyone was discussing, feeling incredulous.

At first, people thought that no one would be able to defeat Zhang Ruochen unless Qiu Yu, first of the Half-Saint Rank, and Qi Sheng, first of the Outer Rank, attacked. Now, they wavered. Motian Crown Prince was definitely strong enough to fight with Zhang Ruochen.

“It is indeed impressive to open up eight Blood Spiritual Meridians,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Very impressive.”

Motian Crown Prince smiled coldly. There was a tinge of pride in the smile. Then Zhang Ruochen’s tone changed.

“But you will lose undoubtedly against me.”

As soon as he spoke, crashing waves of blood sounded within him. Ten Blood Spiritual Meridians appeared. They connected his Sea of Qi to his blood like ten celestial rivers.

Motian Crown Prince’s eyes widened in disbelief. Even his hands trembled around his sword hilt.

“Ten...Blood Spiritual Meridians.”

Even ancient monsters like the Rosefinch Fairy, Kun Prince, and Heavenly King Bi’an gasped. They were so shocked.

Most creatures would cultivate the physical body in the ancient times. Many would become Saints as well. Thus, every ancient race had one or two ways of opening up Blood Spiritual Meridians.

As ancient Taigu Remains, they naturally knew how terrifying it was to open ten Spiritual Blood Meridians.

“No wonder he dares to provoke Qiu Yu. He really does have the capital.”

The Rosefinch Fairy’s eyelashes trembled. The flames on her body grew more vibrant. Strong murderous intent flared with the flames.

Since she’d already offended Zhang Ruochen, she had to kill him quickly. He couldn’t keep improving.

She opened her brilliant fiery wings and flew down like a goddess. She aimed at Zhang Ruochen at the peak of Dragontop Mountain.

Xue Wuye transformed into a beam of sword light. He flew into the air to stop the Rosefinch Fairy. Looking very handsome, he smiled. “Fairy, last time, we left with regret from Yunmiao Lake. How about we find a pretty place to discuss the mysteries of the Sword Way again?”

In the end, the Rosefinch Fairy couldn't join Zhang Ruochen and Motian Crown Prince's battle. She started fighting Xue Wuye.

Next, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Kun Prince, and Heavenly King Bi'an rushed toward Dragontop Mountain. They wanted to ally with the two crown princes and empress of the Immortal Vampires, and kill this hateful human.

"Amitabha!" Monk Lidi chanted. The next moment, the Buddha's golden body appeared to stop the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon.

In the other direction, Le and Chi Wansui also attacked to stop the Kun Prince and Heavenly King Bi'an respectively.

A battle erupted at Dragontop Mountain once again. This time, the scale was even more shocking. Practically all the top figures of the human race, Immortal Vampires, and savage beasts were involved.

Chapter 1131 - The Ultimate Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The skin of Monk Lidi completely turned gold. Tens of thousands of intricate Sanskrit markings emerged on his skin.

That was the golden body of Emperor Buddha.

Monk Lidi already had a profound understanding of the golden body, and he had perfect control over it, which was why even Xue Wuye was weaker than him.

Of course, even without the Emperor Buddha golden body, Monk Lidi had top-tier comprehension and talents.

“You’re the most powerful human being, aren’t you? I’ve been wanting to fight you for a long time. Now that you’re here, I’ll kill you first before I go deal with Zhang Ruochen.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon flew in the clouds, and it was dozens of miles long. Each of its scales looked as if they were made of iron, and they were destructive. It looked like the divine dragons roaming the ocean during the ancient times.

Normal human half saints would be too terrified to even stand when they saw a small part of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Monk Lidi put his hand together, and an enormous Buddha shadow larger than a mountain showed up behind him.

Buddha sound rang in the sky as if thousands of monks were chanting at the same time.

Monk Lidi hit against the dragon claw of Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

The Buddha shadow also pushed its hand, and that golden palm was as large as the dragon claw.

Peng.

Two powerful forces clashed, which cracked the ground. In the sky, clouds withered in the sky as if the sky was about to fall.

Monk Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon both showed their real power. They were much stronger than all the other top-tier great beings, cracking the space around them.

Everyone, human monks and savage beasts, went a hundred miles away from them. No one dared get closer.

“Dragon Travelling Nine Days.”

Monk Lidi performed the tenth palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. He yelled and turned into an enormous golden dragon dozens of miles long, surging to the clouds and fighting Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon.

Buddha Qi and demonic Qi were mixed together, trembling the entire sky and land.

The creatures down there all felt great danger. If they rushed to where Monk Lidi and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were, they were likely to be killed.

Which was why everyone kept retreating till they were hundreds of miles away.

The aboriginal human monks in the capital city of Blue Dragon Dynasty also paid attention to the fight on Dragon Top Mountain.

When they saw two enormous dragons flying in the sky, they were all horrified. If the guarding formation of the city was lost, nobody could ward off two outer-region demons like them.

Both Chi Wansui and the royal prince of the Kun were of royalty, and they were both proficient in spear techniques. They were fighting in a forest only seventy miles away from Dragon Top Mountain, knocking down mountain after mountain.

The weapon Chi Wansui used was the Kylin Spear bestowed upon him by the empress while Royal Prince of the Kun was Red Ocean Vajra Spear. Both of them were thousand-pattern saint weapons.

Two long spears clashed, making deafening sounds as if two iron mountains just hit each other.

“I can’t believe there’s a human being proficient in spears like you. Impressive indeed.” The Royal Prince of the Kun sneered.

The Red Ocean Vajra Spear wielded by the Royal Prince of the Kun was made up of special material, which was found deep in the ocean, and it was hundreds of thousands of pounds before the inscriptions were activated.

After the force inscriptions inside the spear were fully activated, the spear would weigh hundreds of millions of pounds.

Of course, the Royal Prince of the Kun wasn’t powerful enough to activate all the inscriptions in the Red Ocean Vajra Spear yet.

Even so, the Red Ocean Vajra Spear wielded by the Royal Prince of the Kun was still pretty heavy, which meant it was able to easily shred pre-saints into pieces. Even lower-class saints would find it difficult to ward off an attack from the Royal Prince of the Kun.

“Let’s see who’s better.”

The forces coming from Chi Wansui were as strong as those from the Royal Prince of the Kun, and Kylin Spear he was using used to belong to the Blood Emperor, as it was as powerful as the Red Ocean Vajra Spear.

“Sun and Moon in the Sky, Shining upon the Earth.”

Green light gushed out of Chi Wansui, condensing into dozens of green dragon shadows. Suddenly, Emperor Qi infused his body, which greatly strengthened the forces coming out of him.

Chi Wansui practiced the same techniques as Empress Chi Yao did, which was ‘Qing Zhao Divine Technique,’ a trump technique of the First Central Empire.

Only less than ten monks in Kunlun’s Field practiced ‘Qing Zhao Divine Technique,’ and all of them were the core members of the royalty.

After a short while, Chi Wansui injured the Royal Prince of the Kun and made it bleed, and it could only retreat while trying to defend itself.

“Chi Wansui who’s ranked in the ninth place on ‘Half-Saint Rank’ defeated Royal Prince of the Kun who was ranked in sixth place?”

“It seems that Saint Lady underestimated Chi Wansui.”

...

Actually, many people didn’t know that when Saint Lady was writing ‘Half-Saint Rank.’ all the heirs, except Huang Yanchen, had just become level-nine half saints.

On the contrary, many creatures on that rank had already passed the first, the second, or even the third pre-saint trial.

Which was why those heirs weren’t ranked in the front on ‘Half-Saint Rank.’

It was impossible that the heirs cultivated by Empress Chi Yao were only that weak.

All the nine heirs had refined themselves in Runner Print for fifteen years, and they were solidifying their power during most of the time. After thousands of practices and trials, their constitution was already very close to Zhang Ruochen’s Five Elements Chaotic Body, and they had exceptional mind power.

After arriving in Blue Dragon Void World, cultivation of all nine heirs had been greatly improved, so ‘Half-Saint Rank’ wasn’t accurate like before.

Le didn’t have the top-tier resources like the nine heirs did, so he was relatively weaker. When he was fighting the Royal Prince of the Kun, he got wounded.

At this moment, he was fighting Heavenly King Bi'an. He was being suppressed and wounded everywhere. He seemed to be falling.

However, Le was very ferocious. Even though he was weaker than his enemy and was already severely injured, he was still determined to keep fighting, and he only became more aggressive.

Which intimidated Heavenly King Bi'an so much that it still wasn't able to kill Le.

“You dare call yourself Heavenly King before becoming a saint. I reckon you're better as a ride.”

A rumbling voice rang, which sounded forceful.

All the creatures present were terrified as they couldn't believe someone claimed to be domesticating a Taigu Great Evil Beast.

Heavenly King Bi'an was furious. It roared, “Who? Show yourself!”

Chi Chi.

An ocean of crimson fire gushed from the southwestern direction through the gap between the two mountains, covering the ground within a hundred square miles, with fiery waves dozens of feet tumbling.

As the fiery waves approached Heavenly King Bi'an, they ascended and condensed into a giant hand print, slapping at it.

Peng!

The enormous hand print hit Heavenly King Bi'an to the ground, shaking the earth.

Finally, someone saw an enormous person standing at the center of the fiery hand print. It was built like a sculpture with great muscles, ferocious like a beast.

The human monks from Yin and Yang Sect were all exhilarated. They shouted at the same time, “Big sister is here!”

“Big sister is still as powerful as before! She hasn't changed!”

The enormous person standing at the center of the fiery hand print was the most beautiful woman from the Yin and Yang Sect, Gai Tianjiao. She was born to have Innate Extreme Yang Body.

She had been instructed by Empress Chi Yao, and she had refined herself in Runner Print for fifteen years, which greatly improved her Innate Extreme Yang Body, which was not much weaker than Zhang Ruochen's Five Elements Chaotic Body.

Her body got sturdier after the refinement, and Yang Qi was tumbling in her body. All of her muscle tissue was boiling hot, which could melt metal. She looked like a Taigu Great Evil Beast in human shape.

Not too long ago, Gai Tianjiao had passed the second pre-saint trial, after which her refinement surged. Even now, she wasn't able to control the upsurge of her power. Wherever she went, everything around her would be burnt to the ground.

There was another heir following her, Sui Han.

Sui Han came from Zither Sect of Way of Confucius, and he was ranked in the first place this year in the First Central Empire. His mind power, sword master and zither techniques were all at top-tier level.

Sui Han and Gai Tianjiao were totally opposite to each other.

Sui Han wore a green cape, and he had beautiful hair. He was holding a zither in his hands. He had exquisite facial features with long eyelashes. His skin was smooth like jade.

Sui Han was as handsome as Xue Wuye.

However, Sui Han looked a bit feminine. If he chose to wear women's clothes, he would definitely be an exquisite beauty.

Sui Han also chose his opposition, who was Jingtian Crown Prince.

Jingtian Crown Prince was trying to suppress Carnivorous Holy Flower using his Square Ich Holy Scepter and the strength of the ground, yet he saw a feminine man wearing a green Confucius cape walking toward him.

“I’ve long heard that there’s a mind power genius among the immortal vampires, and he’s the crown prince of Jingtian Tribe. It’s you, isn’t it?”

Sui Han walked to the mountainside of Dragon Top Mountain elegantly. He put his zither on his knees, then he put his fingers on the strings. He smiled and said, “Listen to my piece, ‘Fallen Geese and Autumn Wind’, which will send you to hell.”

“How arrogant you are. You think you can send me to hell? You’re so overestimating yourself.” Jingtian Crown Prince was disgusted by the way Sui Han looked at him. He frowned.

Sui Han’s eyes were gleaming, and the corner of his eyes were curled up. He looked seductive.

“Fight.”

Jingtian Crown Prince couldn’t stand a man looking at him like this. He initiated the attacks, grabbing his Square Ich Divine Scepter and pointing at Sui Han.

A trace of blue light gushed out from the top of the divine scepter, shaking the space around it, making cracking sounds.

“Why are you so grumpy. You need to be elegant.”

Sui Han smiled and gently pressed the strings. Suddenly, sound waves were spouted from the strings, clashing with the green light pillars.

Chapter 1132 - Emperor-Killing Demonic Sword

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The whooshes amidst the sound waves actually formed thousands of white sword shadows. They turned into a sword river that spun quickly and crashed against the blue pillar of light.

The two forces acted upon each other, forming a sight of equal power.

The Inch Holy Staff was a quality Spiritual Power saint weapon. Sui Han's guqin was also a top treasure of the Confucius Way.

No one had an advantage in terms of weapons. They were mostly competing over their strength and usage of Spiritual Power.

“Imprint the ivory moon, suppress the nine heavens.”

Sui Han's fingers danced over the instrument strings. Soft power instantly surged out like thousands upon thousands of threads intertwining with the sound waves and sword Qi.

At the same time, icy wind seeped out from Dragontop Mountain, wailing. The “Luoyan Autumn Wind” song was filled with endless murderous intent.

“Rise!”

Crown Prince Jingtian walked forward. His golden boots dipped into the ground. Spiritual Power surged out of his feet and into the ground. The ground started shaking. Sturdy rocks

rose up like bamboo shoots after the rain and towering mountains quickly formed.

Crown Prince Jingtian waved his Inch Holy Staff, lifting a mass of blue light that enveloped the mountain. The next moment, a huge boulder flew out toward Sui Han.

Crack, crack.

Sound waves and Sword Qi kept shattering the mountain. Dozens of cracks appeared and, finally, it exploded with a boom.

Crown Prince Jingtian flew from behind the mountain. Utilizing a Level 10 attack spell, the Inch Holy Staff in his hands became an abominable pillar. He brought it down.

Sui Han's expression turned serious. He grabbed the instrument and yanked the seven strings down. He threw them at Crown Prince Jingtian.

Whoosh.

Silver light radiated from the seven strings. Like seven thousand-foot-long sword threads, they wrapped around the huge pillar. The other end of the strings was still connected to the instrument.

Sui Han rotated the guqin and pushed forward with both hands. With a thud, the guqin was forced into Dragontop Mountain. It entered the cliff completely.

Next, he extended his arms and used two huge hands formed by the Great Spirit to continue playing the instrument.

While Sui Han and Crown prince Jingtian were fighting, Zhang Ruochen was also preparing at the peak. The humans seemed to have the advantage now, but it was actually just because the Heir-level figures were attacking.

The savage beasts and Immortal Vampires far outnumbered humans on the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank. If there really was a racial war, the humans would definitely suffer great losses.

They must kill one or two top-tier figures to instill fear in those Grade Six beasts and Half-Saint Vampires.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Abyss Ancient Sword. He instantly entered the Man Sword state.

Affected by his Sword Way's aura, the sword rules on Dragontop Mountain grew denser. Thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi beams appeared automatically.

"Fight!" Motian Crown Prince roared. Hefting his black sword, he strode forward.

There weren't only eight Blood Spiritual Meridians in him. One hundred and forty light spots emerged as well. His body seemed to contain a dazzling starry sky.

Turning 140 apertures into Saints made his physical body infinitely close to becoming a Saint.

Motian Crown Prince's huge black sword wasn't anything simple either. It was the Emperor-killing Demonic Sword, an ancient weapon of the Motian Tribe.

The Blood Demon, a legendary figure of the Motian Tribe, had used this sword before reaching the Saint King Realm.

The Blood Demon had used the Emperor-killing Demonic Sword against the Blood Empress and killed countless human Saints. It was a demonic sword with a heavy murderous aura.

The current Motian Crown prince wasn't any weaker than the Blood Demon in his younger days. If he had the sword, what kind of power would he be able to unleash?

Without any fancy moves, the Emperor-killing Demonic Sword and Abyss Ancient Sword crashed against each other. Not only that...the two forces crashed as well.

Boom.

After the collision, both retreated at the same time.

A mysterious power in Dragontop Mountain was protecting this mountain. Still, it couldn't withstand the power from Zhang Ruochen and Motian Crown Prince's collision. The mountain between them split open with a wide crack. Even some of the Carnivorous Holy Flower's roots were chopped by the Sword Qi.

Motian Crown prince wasn't any weaker than Zhang Ruochen. However, he was still behind Zhang Ruochen in the Sword Way.

“Again!” he yelled.

The 108 apertures within Zhang Ruochen all lit up, radiating with dazzling light. The blue dragon and elephant emerged in his arms.

Kaboom.

In the second collision, Zhang Ruochen used a Saint level sword technique. He slid past the Emperor-killing Demonic Sword and stabbed Motian Crown Prince's chest. The sword crashed against a protective mirror and sparks flew.

Even though the mirror had stopped the Abyss Ancient Sword, Motian Crown Prince was still hit by the huge force. He retreated, his heart feeling like it was about to shatter.

Finally having the upper hand, Zhang Ruochen naturally had to take advantage of it. He activated the Destruction of the Thousand Pattern with the fastest speed and performed a technique from the True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique.

Whoosh!

Under the sword light, electricity and fire intertwined. The Abyss Ancient Sword unleashed power as heavy as ten mountains and sliced down.

Motian Crown Prince's expression changed slightly. He wanted to activate the Destruction of the Thousand Pattern to stop Zhang Ruochen's sword, but it was clearly too late. He could only lift his sword up.

Boom.

Powerful destructive Qi sent Motian Crown Prince deep into the ground. At the same time, the shockwaves fell upon Dragontop Mountain, collapsing a large portion of it.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the collapsed mountain and the ground cracked by the top-tier figures. He had a serious expression.

The spatial structure around Dragontop Mountain was relatively stable. It was close to the space of Kunlun's Field and couldn't be shattered so easily. This could only mean one thing. The Blue Dragon Void World had already wilted further and the spatial structure had weakened more. It might be destroyed soon.

Was the World Spirit about to be born?

The war around Dragontop Mountain was too intense. Countless mountains had collapsed; countless cracks had appeared on the ground. Some places even had red lava.

This place was about to collapse.

“Carnivorous Holy Flower, lead everyone away immediately,” Zhang Ruochen said with his Spiritual Power.

The flower also sensed that the Blue Dragon Void World was withering quickly. The ground's structure was becoming more and more unstable. If a war of top-tier figures continued, unpredictable dangers might occur.

Thus, hearing Zhang Ruochen's voice, the Carnivorous Holy Flower tugged the silver roots out of the ground. Curling up Murong Yue, Sun Dadi, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess White Li and the others, it used its roots like legs and rushed out of Dragontop Mountain's forest.

Zhang Ruochen didn't rush into the ground to kill Motian Crown prince or escape Dragontop Mountain. Instead, he walked toward Princess Yanxin.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you dare kill me, my brother will tear you to pieces when he arrives.”

Earlier, she'd been stopped by the Carnivorous Holy Flower's root and couldn't escape. She was still in the mountain. There were many injuries on her beautiful body. Her snow-white skin was dyed red by blood and she looked miserable. One couldn't see her beauty from before at all.

If the Yellow Sky Crown Princess hadn't stopped most of the Carnivorous Holy Flower, Princess Yanxin might have been turned into fertilizer long ago.

Without another word, Zhang Ruochen brought his sword down. Even without using the Destruction of the Thousand Pattern, Zhang Ruochen's sword was still fatal. Princess Yanxin couldn't stop it.

“Stop!” Yellow Sky Crown Princess yelled coldly. She transformed into nine slender figures and hurried over to Zhang Ruochen and Princess Yanxin.

Poof.

The Abyss Ancient Sword hacked down at Princess Yanxin's neck, splitting her into two halves. A large amount of blood poured out.

Not only had Zhang Ruochen cut apart Princess Yanxin's body with this move, but he'd also destroyed her saint soul.

Yellow Sky Crown Princess was a step too late. She couldn't save Princess Yanxin.

“He really...killed Princess Yanxin?”

Many human cultivators gasped and stared at each other. Their impression of Zhang Ruochen deepened again.

Princess Yanxin was the younger sister of Qi Sheng, first of the Outer Rank. Zhang Ruochen had killed her without hesitation. He was truly fearless.

From now on, he would be the mortal enemy of Qi Sheng and the entire Qitian Tribe.

“Zhang Ruochen had killed all the strong cultivators of the Qingtian Tribe,” someone said. “He even beat Crown Prince Qingtian to death. I wonder how furious Blood Emperor Qingtian will be when news of this reaches Kunlun's Field.”

“Zhang Ruochen has the Taotian Sword and is one of the protectors of the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians. He already has a deep hatred for them. He must be taking revenge this time.”

“He killed two extreme beauties in a row. Zhang Ruochen really doesn't know how to protect the flowers.” Shangguan Xianyan, Saintess of the Blood God Sect, warned herself not to offend Zhang Ruochen in the future.

No matter how beautiful or perfect you were, you could only die after angering Zhang Ruochen. There was no way to survive.

Compared to Xue Wuye, Zhang Ruochen was a complete cold-blooded animal. He made people shiver uncontrollably.

Right then, Yellow Sky Crown Princess also felt chilled. Princess Yanxin had died right before her. The hot blood splashed onto her neck and face, leaving red dots like petals.

She already knew that Zhang Ruochen was very strong when he'd killed Crown Prince Qingtian. She wasn't his match. However, she hadn't had a clear idea about just how strong he was.

She didn't realize their difference in abilities until she came to Zhang Ruochen's side. His mere aura made her feel like she was looking up a tall mountain. She couldn't breathe and all her blood seemed to congeal. Sweat beaded on her forehead.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen towered like an ancient divine mountain. His feet stepped inside the deep abyss while his head was with the sun and moon. Yellow Sky Crown Princess had to keep retreating to resolve the stress Zhang Ruochen placed on her.

“Hurry, retreat!”

Motian Crown Prince whooshed out of the ground in a black streak of light. He landed beside Yellow Sky Crown Princess. There was blood on the corner of his lip. It was clear that Zhang Ruochen's previous attack had hurt him.

Chapter 1133 - Space Crumbled

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Motian Crown Prince hit Yellow Sky Crown Princess, infusing her body with forceful pushing power, sending her a hundred miles away.

Yellow Sky Crown Princess was barely a first-class great being, who was weaker than Qingtian Crown Prince. If she fought Zhang Ruochen, she might get killed after only a few exchanges.

Which was why Motian Crown Prince sent her away.

Zhang Ruochen immediately put Shining Sun Arrow on his bow, and then he drew the bow with great strength.

Just as the bow bent, it formed great energy ripples, making deafening sounds of wind and thunder.

Hua.

Shining Sun Arrow was shot out like a trace of white light, dashing toward Yellow Sky Crown Princess a hundred miles away.

Yellow Sky Crown Princess used her blade to ward it off, hitting the Shining Sun Arrow.

The powerful force on the arrow knocked away Yellow Sky Crown Princess. She fell on the ground after hitting two mountains.

Yellow Sky Crown Princess crawled out of the stones. She was severely injured, and there were countless wounds on his arms.

Pu.

Yellow Sky Crown Princess spit out blood and kneeled on the ground with one knee. She had to support herself with a long blade so that she didn't fall.

A group of half saints from Yellow Sky Tribe rushed forward and surrounded her so that she wouldn't be attacked by Zhang Ruochen again.

If Zhang Ruochen shot her again, she might not be able to survive it.

Motian Crown Princess activated the two thousand inscriptions in Emperor-killing Demonic Sword, triggering invincible Destruction of the Thousand-patterns and slashing toward Zhang Ruochen, stopping Zhang Ruochen from making attacks the second time.

Zhang Ruochen didn't confront Motian Crown Prince directly, instead, he waved his body and disappeared. He went through the space and arrived behind Motian Crown Prince.

Motian Crown Prince shot a glance behind him as he sensed Zhang Ruochen, but at this moment, he wielded his sword to the front, so he couldn't stop Emperor-killing Demonic Sword at all.

He then yelled and infused Holy Qi into the Heart-guarding Mirror.

And then, bloody light came out of the mirror. At the edge of the mirror extended solid scales, forming powerful bloody armor, enveloping the entire body of Motian Crown Prince.

Peng!

Zhang Ruochen slashed Motian Crown Prince's back with his sword. All of a sudden, ten holy shadows emerged on the bloody armor, warding off Abyss Ancient Sword for a while.

During that time, the defense power in the ten holy shadows resolved most of the power from the sword.

When Abyss Ancient Sword took that hit, he couldn't help falling and hitting the ancient altar, shattering the giant stone, which was hundreds of thousands of pounds heavy.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward the ancient altar and said, “Another Ten Saints Blood Armor. Interesting.”

Hong!

Motian Crown Prince knocked away the giant stones around him. As he walked out again, he looked pale and lost most of his energies.

After being hit by the sword, Motian Crown Prince was more injured. He realized again how weak he was compared to Zhang Ruochen.

Although when it came to strength, he was at Zhang Ruochen’s level, Zhang Ruochen’s sword mastery was way superior than his. Zhang’s sword techniques were more complicated and unpredictable. He found no way to resist the attacks.

Actually, the speed, sword master and experience of Motian Crown Prince were all at top-tier level compared to his peers, better than that of many lower-class saints.

He was only powerless compared to Zhang Ruochen. He was like a human archery target in front of Zhang Ruochen.

“I have to use the power of Ten Saints Blood Armor to fight a powerful person like you.”

Motian Crown Prince grabbed the sword handle with his hands and slowly lifted Emperor-killing Demonic sword above his head.

The Ten Saints Blood Armor he was wearing started to gleam with bloody light, tainting the sky and land hundreds of square miles around the armor red.

Vigorous bloody Qi started to tumble under his feet, dispersing the clouds around Dragon Top Mountain, forming an ocean of bloody Qi.

Motian Crown Prince stood at the center of the rugged altar, and with the help of Ten Saints Blood Armor, he looked like a peerless demonic god.

“Power of ten saints.”

Ten divine shadows emerged, standing in ten different directions around Motian Crown Prince.

And then, Motian Crown Prince wielded his sword, dragging a long sword Qi.

The body of Motian Crown Prince was more than enough to withstand the power of ten saints.

However, his cultivation was not at the saint level yet, so he wasn't really able to wield the real power of ten saints.

At this moment, he wielded the power as strong as the combined power of two or three lower-class saints.

Pa Pa! Sword Qi shattered the space it touched like it was paper.

All the monks watching the fight were terrified.

“He dared use the power of ten saints. Isn't he afraid that the sky and land are going to crumble?”

“Let's run! These two are too powerful. Perhaps the creatures from the state of saint would be crushed by them. We can't stay here any longer. The continents are being shattered by them.”

...

Most of the creatures rushed out from the distance. They all tried to avoid Zhang Ruochen and Motian Crown Prince as they didn't want to be injured.

Zhang Ruochen didn't even try to dodge the most powerful attack from Motian Crown Prince. He yelled, “Break!”

The holy Qi was about to hit Zhang Ruochen.

The space in front of sword Qi started to crack, and then, it caved and was completely shattered.

Powerful sword Qi clashed with the collapsing space, making a rumbling sound.

And then, the space crack got larger and extended downward, piercing through Dragon Top Mountain that was fifteen thousand feet tall.

“What are they doing? Are they trying to destroy the earth?”

The space started to crumble in a large scale. Jingtian Crown Prince and Sui Han, who were fighting each other at the mountainside, stopped the battle and started to run far.

Gai Tianjiao used her iron chain that was thick like a bowl to pierce through the nose of Heavenly King Bi'an. She stood on the back of this Taigu Great Evil Beast, holding the chain, and yelled, “Run! This place is going to be destroyed.”

Heavenly King Bi'an was furious. It was a Taigu Great Evil Beast, yet it was treated like a ride by a human being. It was a great shame.

However, it didn't have a choice. It had to run as fast as it could to escape this area.

“Quicker! The space crack is permeating!”

Gai Tianjiao slapped the head of Heavenly King Bi'an. The slap contained great power, which almost knocked down Heavenly King Bi'an.

Hong Long Long.

Dragon Top Mountain was torn into dozens of pieces by the space crack, falling into the space whirlpool, after which it completely vanished from the ground.

That was an ancient divine mountain over a million years old, which had great fame in Blue Dragon Dynasty. It was more than fifteen thousand feet tall and occupied an area of dozens of square miles, yet the entire mountain had crumbled in an instant.

The space structure in Kunlun's Field was pretty stable, and it was rare to see the space disintegrate on such a large scale. Even a supreme saint who stood at the top of the chain would find it difficult to shatter such a large space.

This scene was thrilling and unforgettable for everyone who witnessed it.

Motian Crown Prince fled to a place three hundred miles away from Dragon Top Mountain. He looked at the shattered space in the distance and took a deep breath.

“He’s able to shatter the space with a random slap, which also resolves my most powerful attack. Zhang Ruochen is basically invincible in Blue Dragon Void World. Who can actually defeat him?” Motian Crown Prince said.

At this moment, Motian Crown Prince sensed a grave danger coming toward him. His muscles fiercely twitched, and he threw himself to the left like a reflex.

Even though he was already as fast as he could be, he was still late.

Pu!

Shining Sun Arrow was shot at the left shoulder of Motian Crown Prince, knocking him away. He hit the ground and leveled a large sheet of pine forest, causing a hole with a diameter of over one hundred feet.

Zhang Ruochen landed and took back his Shining Sun Arrow. He stood in the sky and looked to the giant pit in the forest.

Motian Crown Prince wasn’t in there. The pit was empty.

“No wonder he’s someone who’s about to become a saint. He’s so sturdy.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and followed the smell left by Motian Crown Prince.

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen caught up with Motian Crown Prince and located him with his Shining Sun Arrow. He said, “Even if you’re wearing a Ten Saints Blood Armor, you can’t withstand too many of the attacks.”

“Damn it. I’m about to become a saint and I’m incredibly fast. How did he catch up with me so quickly?”

Motian Crown Prince spread his two pairs of crimson flesh wings and flew as fast as possible.

Peng.

Shining Sun Arrow pierced through his two wings on the left, shedding a large amount of blood, which splashed in the sky.

Motian Crown Prince couldn’t balance himself and fell on the ground.

Motian Crown Prince roared and turned into a blood-red giant, racing among the mountains.

He was able to cross the river with one step.

He was able to cross the mountain with one jump.

“Why did you have to push it so hard, Zhang Ruochen? Give yourself some leeway and don’t make things so ugly.”

Motian Crown Prince coughed blood out as he yelled.

Just as he talked, he was shot seven times by Zhang Ruochen. Even though he was wearing Ten Saints Blood Armor, he couldn’t withstand all the attacks. Shining Sun Arrow was too powerful, which gave him internal damages.

He would definitely die if this went on.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, smiled and said, “You dare talk about leeway with me? If I let you live today, you’ll try to drain my blood in the future. Humans and immortal vampires have always been mortal enemies. There’s no negotiation.:

Beng.

Shining Sun Arrow was shot out again, hitting toward the head of Motian Crown Prince.

All of a sudden, a blood-red door showed up in the sky, and a shield in the shape of a cross flew out of the door, clashing with Shining Sun Arrow, knocking the arrow to the ground.

Hong Long.

The shield and Shining Sun Arrow clashed with each other, leveling a large area of forests.

Zhang Ruochen stopped flying and looked to the light door above him.

Motian Crown Prince stopped running. He looked to the sky and guffawed, “Qi Sheng, you’re too late. Your sister Princess Yanxin has already been killed by Zhang Ruochen.”

Chapter 1134 - Qitian Crown Prince

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Shining Sun Arrow was suppressed below the cross shield. It trembled without stop and clanged but couldn't break free.

The cross shield was made out of white stone. One horizontal slab and one vertical formed a 70-foot-tall cross that stood upon the ground. There were dark splotches of blood on the surface. It was unknown what powerful creature's blood had dyed it; the stains were still unable to be erased.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were trained on the blood spatters.

A vast sea of blood instantly appeared before his eyes. Many vortices formed in the sea as if wanting to drag his saint soul and spirit into it.

Hum.

Zhang Ruochen's entire body shook suddenly. In his Sea of Qi, a flickering flame emitted brilliant light and poured out of his pupils.

He exhaled deeply and moved his eyes away, no longer looking at the cross shield. "Such a powerful weapon," he said. "It might be passed down from the ancient times."

The energy waves from the cross shield were both divine and eerie.

In the sky, Qi Sheng, crown prince of the Qitian Tribe, flew out of the blood-red door of light with a blood cloud under his

feet. The cloud was vast with overlapping levels, and it covered the sky.

Qitian Crown Prince stood above the blood cloud and looked at the ground. He saw a huge shadow with six wings. It looked like a true body descending.

Qitian Crown Prince's voice sounded within the cloud. "A while ago, I met a very powerful opponent and fought for two days and three nights, so I was late. Time and Space Descendant, thank you for waiting!"

Qitian Crown Prince was number one on the Outer Rank and definitely stronger than the Motian Crown Prince. What kind of creature could fight with him for two days and three nights in a row?

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He stared at the six shadows of the three pairs of wings with a serious expression.

An Immortal Vampire wouldn't grow more flesh wings after becoming a Saint. They kept the same number of wings since birth. After entering the Saint Realm, their Blood Qi would grow richer as their cultivation improved. Then they could break through the restraints of the physical body and grow more blood wings.

Most Immortal Vampires only had one pair of flesh wings before the Saint Realm. Only those who had monstrously strong bodies could have two pairs.

In the legends, only Pluto was born with three pairs. As for the Blood Empress and Blood Demon from 800 years ago, Zhang Ruochen had seen very few records about them. He didn't know how many wings they had before becoming a Saint.

But Qitian Crown Prince actually had three pairs. This scene really shocked Zhang Ruochen. However, Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid. So what if Qitian Crown Prince was comparable to Pluto when he was young?

The Time and Space Descendant didn't fear any opponent.

"Do you want to fight?"

Zhang Ruochen's aura kept rising. He waved the Abyss Ancient Sword and a Sword Qi territory appeared instantly. A sword pillar inside the territory shot straight into the clouds. It broke apart the blood cloud, connecting the earth and heavens.

Some of the Half-Saints of the Qingtian Tribe hurried over to this area and all knelt down. "Qitian Crown Prince, please kill Zhang Ruochen and take revenge for our crown prince and crown princess."

"Qitian Crown Prince, please kill Zhang Ruochen and take revenge for our crown prince and crown princess."

...

Qitian Crown Prince didn't move because of this. Staring at Zhang Ruochen, he said, "We must fight, but not now. The World Spirit is about to be born. I trust that you don't wish to waste your energy fighting with me either. Once we fight, we'll only make it easier for the others, correct?"

In the Blue Dragon Void World, Zhang Ruochen and Qitian Crown Prince stood at the peak already, but they weren't without enemies. Of the few that Zhang Ruochen knew, there were at least two that could counter them.

One was Qiu Yu, first of the Half-Saint Rank. The other was Emperor Tianming who'd been brought back to life. He was originally the Corpse Emperor.

Other than them, Motian Crown Prince, Monk Lidi, Xue Wuye, and the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon were all top-tier figures as well. Their abilities were only a bit weaker than super-top-tier figures. He didn't know if they had any powerful trump cards either. If they used some extraordinary methods, even super-top-tier figures might not be able to win against them easily.

They were at the most critical moment now. If Zhang Ruochen and Qitian Crown Prince were both injured, it really would give the others an advantage.

One must admit that Qitian Crown Prince was calm and composed. Even though his sister had died under Zhang Ruochen's sword, he could still remain logical.

People like him were the most frightening.

In the end, Qitian Crown Prince and Motian Crown Prince led the Immortal Vampires away from this land.

A moment later, there was a loud boom. The cross shield flew from the ground with turbulent power. It flew into the clouds and landed on Qitian Crown Prince's back.

The cross shield weighed tens of thousands of pounds. When it landed on Qitian Crown Prince, he dipped down even with his cultivation.

Motian Crown Prince, Yellow Sky Crown Princess and the crown princes of the two other tribes all hurried over to join Qitian Crown Prince. This time, the heirs of seven of the ten tribes had all come to the Blue Dragon Void World.

The other three heirs were a bit older and had already reached the Saint Realm. Naturally, they lost the opportunity to enter the Blue Dragon Void World.

“With Qi Sheng's cultivation and our help, we can definitely kill Zhang Ruochen,” Yellow Sky Crown Princess said. “Why didn't you attack?”

She'd been shot by Zhang Ruochen's arrow and was heavily injured, so she hated Zhang Ruochen.

“Not killing Zhang Ruochen would bring endless troubles,” Motian Crown Prince said seriously.

He was also curious as to why Qitian Crown Prince would choose to avoid the battle. With his abilities and the cross shield, he should be even stronger than Zhang Ruochen.

“You think I don't want to kill him?” Qitian Crown Prince shook his head. A moment later, he said, “No one in the Blue Dragon Void World can kill him.”

“Yes,” Jingtian Crown Prince immediately said. “In the Blue Dragon Void World, Zhang Ruochen has the advantage of location and time. He can use spatial tactics so easily.”

“Not only does he have those advantages, he's also strong himself,” Qitian Crown Prince said. “Actually...I've already fought with him.”

Everyone there froze. They'd already fought once?

“Earlier, when I used the God-killing Cross Shield against the Shining Sun Arrow, I already activated its power. I wanted to injure him without warning. Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation and willpower are both very strong. He destroyed that force without getting hurt.”

Hearing his words, the crown princes and princess gasped. They were clear about the God-killing Cross Shield's background. It had a very long history. A god had once been nailed to death on it.

The divine blood on it still hadn't been erased.

“After that encounter, I had a clearer view of his abilities. Even if I use all my power to defeat him, it'll have to be after 300 strikes. And that's only if he doesn't use the power of time and space. If he does, it'll be hard to say who will win.”

Yellow Sky Crown Princess' face was pale. “Zhang Ruochen is already so strong. If he continues maturing, won't be become the next Saint Monk Xumi?”

Jingtian Crown Prince sighed. “He has just entered the Ninth Level and he hasn't stabilized yet. Plus, he just experienced a huge battle and must have used up a great amount of Holy Qi. This is the best chance to kill him.”

“Not really,” Qitian Crown Prince said. “According to my estimates, Zhang Ruochen has already reached the Peak Realm of martial arts four times and has a sturdy foundation. Otherwise, he won't have such powerful combat ability. If so, his Sea of Qi would be wider than most people. His Holy Qi won't be dried up even after a huge battle.”

“Four Peak Realms? Isn't that like you, then?” Yellow Sky Crown Princess widened her eyes in shock.

Qi Sheng's accomplishments had always made them feel awe and hopelessness. It was impossible to imagine that someone was as terrifying as him.

Qitian Crown Prince had indeed reached the Peak Realm four times.

The humans must go to the Void World battlefield and kill native cultivators, accumulate military achievements, sacrifice to the gods and resonate with the gods to reach the Peak Realm of the Heavenly Realm.

However, the ancient tribes of Kunlun's Field had ancient rituals that could also result in resonance with the gods. They didn't need to go to the Void World battlefield.

The crown princes and princess all felt low and depressed.

"Other than Zhang Ruochen's own power, there's another reason," Qitian Crown Prince said.

"What reason?" Motian Crown Prince's features twitched. "Is it related to that powerful opponent you met?"

Qitian Crown Prince nodded. "It's a human. He wasn't any weaker than I. I fought for two days and three nights without defeating him. I was even injured."

"That man's utilization of martial techniques has reached the peak. I can't explain it in words, but he's far above me. If not for the fact that he hadn't reached the Saint Realm yet, I would've suspected that he's a human emperor that has suppressed his realm."

Thinking of that human, Qitian Crown Prince still felt terror.

However, the man's physique wasn't as strong as him or Zhang Ruochen and he had some problems with his state. Plus, Qitian Crown Prince had the God-killing Cross Shield and many advantages but could only reach a tie.

Such a terrifying existence had appeared among the humans. This was why Qitian Crown Prince didn't dare to go against Zhang Ruochen.

If Zhang Ruochen and that man worked together, Qitian Crown Prince would definitely lose. However, he didn't know that the human he'd met was Emperor Tianming who had come back to life. He and Zhang Ruochen had quite a grudge and wouldn't work together.

Chapter 1135 - Virtual Body

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Murong Yue had terrifying cold force on her body. She stood behind Zhang Ruochen and looked into the distance at where the immortal vampires left. She said, "I can't believe those crown princes and crown princesses from the immortal vampire race are leaving. I thought they were still going to fight."

Aside from Murong Yue, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Blackie, Sun Dadi, Sikong One, Sikong Two and White Li Princess were all standing in a line behind Zhang Ruochen.

All of them were glowing with holy light, and terrifying ripples spread from their bodies.

Other than Blackie, everyone had refined their divine medicine pills and had improved their cultivation to some extent. At this moment, they were all filled with desires to fight. They wanted to fight the crown princes and crown princess of the immortal vampire race.

Sun Dadi had passed the second pre-saint trial. He carried the iron rod on his shoulder and yelled, "I want to fight the crown princes of the immortal vampire race as well. Sadly, they've already fled after I passed the second pre-saint trial. How disappointing."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "You should feel lucky. If Sacred Sect really fights the immortal vampires, someone will definitely die."

"Crown prince Qi Sheng from Qitian Tribe is terrifically powerful. He is a peerless talent that's only seen every ten

thousand years. Aside from me, perhaps only Sikong One and Sikong Two combined are able to fight him.”

Everyone stopped smiling and was shocked after hearing what Zhang Ruochen said.

Sikong One and Sikong Two were able to match Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon when they teamed up.

And now, the two monks had taken the divine medicinal pills. Although they hadn't completely refined the pills, their cultivation was already greatly improved, which was about to reach pinnacle second-trial pre-saint.

How powerful was Qitian Crown Prince, that he could rival Sikong One and Sikong Two combined?

Zhang Ruochen said, “Qitian Crown Prince was born to have six wings, and he has God-killing Cross Shield. He's like Pluto reborn. Before Sikong One and Sikong Two pass the third pre-saint trial, they're likely to be defeated by him.”

After hearing that, even Sun Dadi, who was fearless, became quiet.

Murong Yue was very curious. She asked, “If Qitian Crown Prince is really that powerful, why did he choose to run away?”

Zhang Ruochen pondered the question for a while and said, “There're some internal reasons, but there're also some external reasons. Both Qitian Crown Prince and I have a lot of concerns. If we fight at this moment, it'll be a lose-lose for everyone.”

“Is Qiu Yu your concern?” Huang Yanchen asked.

“Not just him.”

Zhang Ruochen recalled the figure of Emperor Tianming, and he felt intimidated.

On the surface, Emperor Tianming was also a human being, who was supposed to be on Zhang Ruochen's side.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had forced Yin Xuanji to give up his actual body in the netherworld, costing Emperor Tianming the

best body he could find.

And now, Emperor Tianming started to live his second life, yet he had to use a body with flaws, which made him much weaker than he expected. He had every reason to hate Zhang Ruochen.

All the powers in Blue Dragon Void World were in a subtle balance.

“How should we deal with this blood saint from Qingtian Tribe?”

Blackie smirked and brought Zuotian Blood Saint.

Blackie severely injured Zuotian Blood Saint on Dragon Top Mountain, and it sealed the saintly source in his body using some secret techniques so that he wouldn't let out his cultivation at the state of saint to kill everyone with him.

“Kneel before our overlord!” Murong Yue scolded him.

“Overlord? What overlord?”

Zuotian Blood Saint was still filled with pride. He looked disdainful.

He was a creature at the state of saint, which meant he looked down at most of the creatures in this world. Even if he was captured, he wouldn't kneel before a half saint.

Murong Yue took out his divine sword and cut the legs of Zuotian Blood Saint.

Chi.

Zuotian Blood Saint's hamstrings were chopped off, and they started to bleed. His legs couldn't help shaking.

“It is the overlord of Sacred Sect who is standing in front of you. You don't get a say on whether you can kneel or not.”

Murong Yue put back her sword and hit the head of Zuotian Blood Saint, forcing him to kneel on the ground with his knees pressed into the mud.

“What Sacred Sect? I've never heard of it.”

Zuotian Blood Saint's face started to twitch. He clenched his teeth, supporting his body with his hands, trying to get up again.

He was a saint, yet he was so suppressed by a bunch of juniors that he was kneeling on the ground. He felt extremely bitter, and he swore in his heart that he would drain everyone's blood if he could make it back to Kunlun's Field and break the seal in his body.

"He's just a lower-class saint. Worthless. Carnivorous Holy Flower, he's all yours now."

What Zhang Ruochen just said basically sentenced that saint to death.

He didn't even look at Zuotian Blood Saint. Instead, he was thinking about something else.

Silver branches extended out of Zhang Ruochen's back, and then, the vines of Carnivorous Holy Flower showed up, piercing the body of Zuotian Blood Saint.

"Wonderful! I can actually absorb the power of a living saint. Perhaps this is the chance for my fruit to mature. Zhang Ruochen, you're a reliable guy. No wonder Divine Sky-connecting Tree approves of you."

Carnivorous Holy Flower couldn't be more excited and praised Zhang Ruochen.

As for Zuotian Blood Saint, he was miserable. The vines of Carnivorous Holy Flower pierced through his entire body, which gradually desiccated. He couldn't help yelling in agony.

For as long as he lived, he had been treating human beings like food, enjoying sucking dry a person.

Now, he finally got a taste of being drained of energies and blood by other creatures. He was overwhelmed by pain.

The blood-curdling scream of Zuotian Blood Saint echoed in the sky and land.

All the immortal vampires gnashed their teeth in anger as they felt humiliated by Zhang Ruochen.

On the contrary, all the human monks felt relieved and admired Zhang Ruochen as Zhang Ruochen accomplished something they had been wanting to do but couldn't.

“He looks elegant and gentle, but actually, he can be assertive as well. I finally know the other side of him in Blue Dragon Void World.”

“He used a saint as nutrients for his flower. God knows what other insane things he's capable of.”

“God knows how much blood an immortal vampire needs to become a saint. Zuotian Blood Saint deserved what he got. What Zhang Ruochen did is amazing.”

...

As it absorbed the essence and bloody Qi of Zuotian Blood Saint, the fruit at the top of the vine of Carnivorous Holy Flower grew larger and larger, with its light becoming brighter.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the fruit of Carnivorous Holy Flower. On the fruit emerged traces of silver engravings as if it were a bizarre moon hanging in the sky.

“This fruit seems to be extraordinary. What benefits are there going to if I eat it?” Zhang Ruochen whispered to himself.

The vines of Carnivorous Holy Flower fiercely shook and passed a trace of mind power to alert Zhang Ruochen, “This is the first fruit I bear. Don't even think about touching it.”

Zhang Ruochen was smiling but was still interested in that silver fruit. If the fruit had matured, he would have already picked it.

Carnivorous Holy Flower then said, “The first fruit is my virtual body. It is another body of mine. If you eat that, I'll kill you.”

Carnivorous Holy Flower was very serious. It didn't seem to be kidding Zhang Ruochen.

“Virtual body?”

Zhang Ruochen looked confused and said, “What do you mean? How can a flower have a virtual body? And how can

you have a second body? Then what's the stage of your current body?"

Carnivorous Holy Flower was afraid that Zhang Ruochen might actually eat its virtual body, so it explained, "This body of mine is called the real body. The first fruit I bear is a virtual one, which is similar to the saint souls of human beings."

"I'll have the second, the third and more fruits... I can also have more bodies in the future, like flesh bodies, law bodies and hundred thousand incarnations."

"Of course, real bodies, virtual bodies, flesh bodies, law bodies and hundred thousand incarnations can be both integrated and separated."

Zhang Ruochen now understood what happened. He nodded, looked at the silver fruit at the top of the vines and said, "That fruit is your virtual body? I can sense the gigantic energy ripples contained inside. If I take it, my saint soul can be improved to an extraordinary level."

Carnivorous Holy Flower was furious and wanted to fight Zhang Ruochen.

Certainly, Zhang Ruochen was just joking. He didn't intend to eat the virtual body of Carnivorous Holy Flower.

Instead, Zhang Ruochen really looked forward to the second time that the Holy Carnivorous Holy Flower blossomed. He wondered whether the flesh body was going to be male or female.

Carnivorous Holy Flower's cultivation was boosted after absorbing all the bloody Qi and essence of Zuotian Blood Saint.

Unfortunately, its fruit still needed more to mature.

"Give me that saint soul of yours, Zhang Ruochen. I need to make my fruit mature so that I can refine a virtual body."

Carnivorous Holy Flower sent a trace of mind power to Zhang Ruochen and looked eager.

Zhang Ruochen did have a saint source, but he didn't plan to give it to Carnivorous Holy Flower at this moment.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was already mega-powerful.

If it really refined its virtual body and merged its virtual body and the real body, its power would surge. There was a chance that it might swallow Zhang Ruochen back.

Zhang Ruochen had to guard himself against it. He said, "I'll give you that saint soul in the future, but not now. I have more important things to do." Carnivorous Holy Flower wanted to resist it, but it was pushed back to Zhang Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen took everyone to rush to the peak of Dragon Top Mountain.

The shattered space in this area had already recovered.

Dragon Top Mountain had disappeared completely from the ground. What was left were giant cracks, fractured mountains and gushing lava.

"What are we doing here, overlord?" Murong Yue asked.

Zhang Ruochen stood beside the edge of a crack and said, "There was a mysterious power in Dragon Top Mountain which made the space structure around it much more stable than that in other places. There's got to be a reason behind it. Where did that mysterious force come from?"

Zhang Ruochen stared beneath the crack.

And then, he took out his Abyss Ancient Sword and performed sword defending technique. He jumped into the crack, breaking the solid rocks and rushing down along the crack.

Chapter 1136 - The Most Helpless Thing In The World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The earth's crust had once been torn by the spatial crack and was now loose and soft. But the lower one went, the harder the earth became. Even with the Abyss Ancient Sword to open up the path, Zhang Ruochen still kept slowing down.

It wasn't the rock layer anymore. It was more like jade and metal.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen stopped completely. A layer of dark gold appeared under his feet. It looked like some mineral or something formed by condensed energy.

Cutting down with his sword, the blade created a crisp sound on the ground. Sparks flew. Upon closer inspection, he saw that a thin layer of golden light had appeared on the ground. It actually forced the Abyss Ancient Sword aside.

“There's really something harder than the Abyss Ancient Sword in this world?” Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Lifting a palm, he pressed onto the ground and released his Spiritual Power.

A moment later, he found the reason. It wasn't because the ground really was so hard that the Abyss Ancient Sword couldn't split it apart, but that someone had set up an enchantment here.

The enchantment was very advanced and combined with the earth. If Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power wasn't close to level 50, it would be hard to discover this.

“There really is a problem.”

Zhang Ruochen moved toward another direction of the earth level. However, he'd already reached 100 miles away from this area without finding an opening.

The bottom of Dragontop Mountain was completely sealed by an enchantment. He couldn't go down at all.

“The more it's like this, the more I must go in. I'm really getting more curious about what's under the enchantment.”

Zhang Ruochen moved spatial power to his fingertips and waved forward. He sent out a spatial crack toward the earth.

Whoosh—

The spatial crack actually tore apart the earth. It created a 20-meter-long, three-meter-wide crack in the stone.

Zhang Ruochen made a soft noise of surprise. Usually, an enchantment would distort the space to a certain extent. The more advanced an enchantment, the more distorted the space around it would be.

It was actually hard to destroy a strong enchantment with the spatial crack. Zhang Ruochen had just wanted to try and didn't expect to succeed so easily.

Flashing forward, he passed through the spatial crack and broke in. A huge formation appeared before him. It was round and more than 200 meters in diameter. It was made out of saint stones and jade, radiating with vibrant colors.

“This...this is a Spatial Transfer Formation...”

Zhang Ruochen was shocked to actually find a Spatial Transfer Formation at the bottom of the Blue Dragon Void World. This formation was clearly more advanced than the basic ones set up elsewhere.

Only the Time and Space Descendant was able to set up a Spatial Transfer Formation. Other than Zhang Ruochen, there were only two Time and Space Descendants in the history of Kunlun's Field.

One was Saint Monk Xumi.

Even Zhang Ruochen didn't know who the other one was. He only knew that the man had appeared in the past and wouldn't appear in the present or future.

"It must be Saint Monk Xumi," he guessed.

But why would Saint Monk Xumi set up this Spatial Transfer Formation at the bottom of Dragontop Mountain in the past?

A beautiful blue figure flew down from the crack above and landed in the center of the Spatial Transfer Formation. She stood atop the three-meter-high saint stone.

"Senior Sister, how come you came down here?" Zhang Ruochen smiled at the beautiful figure.

"You didn't return and I was worried you'd run into danger, so I came to look."

Huang Yanchen went onto her toes and flew down from the saint stone like a light petal. "What is this formation?" she asked.

"It's a terrifying large scale Spatial Transfer Formation with 100,000 years of history."

"What?" Huang Yanchen was shocked.

Zhang Ruochen told her his discoveries and guesses. Then they started investigating together.

Zhang Ruochen found a metal remnant. It was half buried in the dirt. After checking, he confirmed that it was part of a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon. Unfortunately, it was completely destroyed and didn't contain value anymore.

Huang Yanchen found something and immediately called, "Look what this is."

She found three strange runes in the center of the formation. They were carved at the edge of the saint stone. It was hard to discover them if one wasn't careful.

Zhang Ruochen walked over and recognized them. "If you put the three runes atop one another, it's a spatial coordinate. It might represent where another Spatial Transfer Formation is. If we activate the formation, it'll send us there."

“What place does it represent?” Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “It might be in Kunlun’s Field or another star or place in the universe.”

If the World Spirit wasn’t about to appear, Zhang Ruochen would have really wanted to activate the formation immediately and go to the place of the coordinates.

This Spatial Transfer Formation couldn’t appear at the bottom of the Blue Dragon Void World for no reason. It was too strange. Zhang Ruochen really wanted to find the reason.

“I will collect this Spatial Transfer Formation. It might be useful.”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Universe Spiritual Map. He cut out the formation and the surrounding stone, putting them into the scroll world. Other cultivators couldn’t take away a Spatial Transfer Formation, but it wasn’t hard for Zhang Ruochen.

He and Huang Yanchen didn’t return to the surface immediately. They remained in the empty underground space and fell silent. They were both deep in thought.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen said, “It’s very quiet. Since the World Spirit hasn’t come out yet, you can continue refining the Divine Pill and fortify your cultivation... Senior Sister, what are you...”

Huang Yanchen reached out. Her slender arms felt so gentle when she hugged Zhang Ruochen. Her delicate and snowy-white face rested against his chest. “Brother Chen,” she murmured. “Do we not have any topics other than cultivation?”

Zhang Ruochen looked at her. Feeling the warmth in his chest, his eyes turned a bit dazed.

Huang Yanchen closed her eyes. Her thick lashes curled upward in a beautiful arc. “Did you think that I’m too petty and don’t care about friendship, so Xingling was forced away? Are you blaming me?”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t reply. He just reached out and placed an arm on Huang Yanchen’s shoulder, hugging her.

Huang Yanchen cried softly, her small frame trembling.
“Actually, I didn’t want to do that to her. I wanted to keep being her friend. I know that it’s hard for her to see you. She must suffer from longing. But when I saw her kiss you, I was truly jealous and bitter. I couldn’t control myself at all. I just wanted her to get as far away from you as possible.”

“Oh.” Zhang Ruochen nodded softly. His feelings were troubled.

“I’m sorry, it’s my fault. I shouldn’t say these things to you.” Huang Yanchen wiped her tears away and squeezed out a smile. “Actually, if you like Xingling, I can accept her. We can still live with each other happily. Really, I won’t make it hard for you. I know she gave up a lot for you and loves you genuinely. If you let her down, you’ll also be hurting her.”

“Perhaps, the one who is truly wrong is me.”

Zhang Ruochen stared into Huang Yanchen’s eyes and sighed deeply. He had to admit that he couldn’t handle relationship problems. He couldn’t force himself to hurt a woman who truly treated him well.

Because of his indecisiveness, he hurt many more people.

“it’s very quiet here. Are we...only going to cultivate?”

Huang Yanchen bit her red lips. She looked like a shy little girl with a moving look in her eyes. One must admit that when an ice beauty with wise almond eyes looked like a little girl, it was the biggest provocation to men.

Without realizing, masculine Qi surged out of Zhang Ruochen’s gut like a ball of fire. He pressed Huang Yanchen onto the stone wall and kissed her passionately.

His hands dipped inside Huang Yanchen’s robes and rubbed gently. He did some of the most primitive actions. Like a pile of dry firewood, they were ignited immediately.

“Zhang Ruochen, nine-colored light surged out of the capital. The World Spirit should be coming out soon.”

Blackie’s sound wave entered Zhang Ruochen’s ears.

Zhang Ruochen was annoyed. The World Spirit couldn't come sooner or later and just had to come out at this critical moment.

Right now, he and Huang Yanchen were both feeling passionate with their limbs entangled. They hadn't even started and had to end now?

The nine-colored lights had just come out. It should be a while before the World Spirit appeared. Zhang Ruochen didn't want to care about these things. He undid Huang Yanchen's belt. Her robe opened up instantly, revealing her slender body. A portion of her snowy-white skin was half-exposed and half-hidden.

“Princess, did you run into any danger? The World Spirit is about to come out, how come you're still...ah...”

Qing Mo slipped through the crack in the ground in a dark blue streak and flew down quickly. She happened to see Zhang Ruochen's palm pressed on the round and raised part of Huang Yanchen's chest.

Seeing this, Qing Mo yelped in fear. Her little face paled as if she'd seen the most incredible thing in the world. Her eyes could barely move! Even though she knew that Huang Yanchen and Zhang Ruochen were married, it was still beyond her imagination for them to do this.

Zhang Ruochen sighed, feeling helpless.

Qing Mo had already broken in. It seemed that they really couldn't continue. Trying to keep composed, Zhang Ruochen retracted his hand. He closed Huang Yanchen's robes and helped her redo the belt.

However, the masculine Qi within Zhang Ruochen, thousands of times stronger than other men, was completely fired up. The lust was even affecting his logical mind. He couldn't repress it so quickly.

Chapter 1137 - Outside the Capital City

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Awkward. This couldn't be more awkward.

Zhang Ruochen had to keep suppressing the masculine Qi in his body and pretended as if there was nobody around him. He flew toward the ground like a light shuttle.

In comparison, Huang Yanchen was calm and chill. She braided her slightly messy long hair, and then, she shot a glance at Qing Mo.

“Princess... Your highness... I didn't mean to trespass here...”

Qing Mo couldn't be more terrified. She kneeled on the ground with her neck down. Her lips were trembling as she spoke.

“You must find it incredible, don't you?”

Huang Yanchen walked to Qing Mo, which further scared her. Her entire body was shaking.

To Qing Mo's surprise, Huang Yanchen didn't blame her. Instead, she looked up with complications in her eyes. She said, “Actually, everyone wants to have such a youthful period, when we can love who we love recklessly without any concerns. All we want is the burning emotion.”

“If we experience it, we won't have any regrets. If we don't, then we'll have lifelong regret as we age.”

“If we have regrets, then there'll be a flaw on our way to greatness. It's incredibly hard to become a god. And out of all

the challenges, emotions are the most difficult ones to get over.”

Finishing that, Huang Yanchen flew to the ground like a trace of light.

Zhang Ruochen got back to the ground. Blackie, Sun Dadi and Sikong One immediately went toward him, asking him why he'd stayed underground for such a long time. They wondered whether he obtained some incredible ancient remains in the underground or not.

Sikong One kept sniffing with his nose, and he looked suspicious. He said, “Uncle, why do I smell perfume on your body? That perfume smells a bit familiar... That's right, it's exactly the same as that from Princess Yanchen.” Hearing that, everyone started to ruminate on what he said.

Blackie rolled its eyes, staring at Zhang Ruochen. It seemed to have figured something out, and it said, “Zhang Ruochen, the Masculine Qi in your body is already tumbling. If you don't let it out, it might burn you from the inside out.”

Murong Yue walked out. She was actually worried that something would happen to Zhang Ruochen. She then said, “I've already finished refining Extreme Yin Body. I can use my Extreme Yin Qi to resolve the masculine Qi in my overlord's body.”

Sun Dadi smiled and said, “How about we mix Yin and Yang together. That's much more direct.”

Murong Yue understood what Sun Dadi was alluding to. She said, “If our overlord is willing, I can do anything for him.” Sun Dadi opened his mouth wide. He was so envious that his saliva was about to drop. He winked at Zhang Ruochen, seeming more eager than Zhang Ruochen, himself.

Blackie transmitted its voice to Zhang Ruochen. “Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm has tremendous power, which is one of the most exceptional martial arts in Kunlun's Field, stronger than the other seventeen top-tier martial arts from Thousand Buddha Way. However, it's immensely masculine. For every

level you advance, masculine Qi inside you will grow tenfold. Normal people won't be able to withstand it."

"The monks from Buddha Way chant all the time. Their minds are pure without distracting thoughts. Besides, they've entered the state of saint, so they can refine their golden bodies, which can withstand masculine Qi thousands of times stronger."

"Even so, many talents in Buddha Way went back as they practiced Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Some died, while others became demons."

Zhang Ruochen asked, "What are you implying?"

Blackie was serious. It said, "I'm saying that you shouldn't be overly confident. You must prepare yourself for whatever is to come. It's not a bad idea to prepare a tripod furnace for yourself. Perhaps you'll need it someday."

Blackie then shot a glance at Murong Yue and said, "That girl has Extreme Yin Body, which is the best choice for being a tripod furnace. If you're really on the verge of going mad, her body can perfectly neutralize the Masculine Qi inside yours."

Objectively speaking, Blackie's suggestion was correct. It wanted to ready a tripod furnace in advance to ensure his safety.

Yet Zhang Ruochen didn't want that at all. To him, a person could never be some tripod furnace or an object to help him refine. Even if Murong Yue was willing, he wouldn't do that.

If he really couldn't suppress the masculine Qi at some stage, he would give up practicing Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to disperse the masculine Qi in his body. It would be like he had never practiced a technique like this.

Blackie saw Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo fly out of the ground. It immediately stopped talking.

Nine-color light gushed out in the capital city, and it was gleaming with fresh fragrance.

Even though Zhang Ruochen and the others were standing hundreds of miles away, there were nine-color clouds floating above them as well.

Huang Yanchen walked to Zhang Ruochen's side and said, "A Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring is about to be born in the capital city, which means World Spirit will quickly follow."

Not so long ago, a Grade-seven Saintly Source Spring was born outside Yingsha City, which brought a large amount of saintly source sacred liquid.

If a Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring was born, it would bring the world much more.

Only when an upper-class void world was about to end would Origin Qi and essence material gather, after which a Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring would be born.

And when Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring was born, that upper-class void world would be completely destroyed.

"Saintly Source Spring Liquids are also a top-tier treasure. It can not only be used to refine a Divine Origin Pill, but also the main ingredients for divine medicinal pills. Now that Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring is born, we can't miss this chance." Blackie rushed toward the capital city like a trace of black light.

The light mist with nine colors completely enveloped the capital city, turning it into a heavenly city.

Some great beings from Kunlun's Field and other upper-class void worlds gathered outside the capital city.

As Blue Dragon Void World was about to be destroyed, the remaining creatures were all thinking about Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring and World Spirit.

There were a lot of them, but they were all top-tier great beings, at least level-nine half saints.

The great beings from Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan and Cai's family all gathered together.

Shangguan Xianyan said, "When Grade-nine Saint Source Spring is born, we'll get one holy flower and then leave Blue Dragon Void World. As for World Spirit, we're not powerful enough to fight for that. Forget it."

The leaders from both Cai's family and Shangguan clan agreed with Shangguan Xianyan's decision.

Ever since they had witnessed the great power of Monk Lidi, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Zhang Ruochen, they decided to quit the battle.

The alliance formed by the three inheritances of the middle ages was indeed powerful. However, they didn't have any first-tier great beings.

Hai Lingyin and Cai Jinglun, who were the most powerful among them, still needed to garner more forces to become first-tier great beings.

Without first-tier great beings, a power didn't have a say in Blue Dragon Void World.

If it weren't for Saintly Source Spring Liquids, they would have been back to Kunlun's Field already.

Hong Long Long.

A large blood-red cloud flew from the sky.

Inside the cloud stood a large group of immortal great beings who had flesh wings on their backs. All of them were at least pre-saints, and some of them were ranked on 'Half-Saint Rank' and 'Half-Saint Outer Rank.'

Five crown princes and one crown prince of the immortal vampire race stood in the sky like six divine gods. Each of them had a terrifying force.

There were five first-tier great beings and one super-first-tier great being. They were powerful enough to defeat everyone standing against them.

Shangguan Xianyan, Cai Jinglun and the others all missed a breath, retreating with the monks from the three middle-ages inheritances.

Although the three middle-ages inheritances had some powerful trump cards, enough to ward off one or two first-tier great beings, great beings of the immortal vampire race were still powerful enough to kill them all in an instant.

Immortal vampires to them were like a moon to fireflies.

In another direction, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Rosefinch Fairy, the Royal Prince of the Kun and six other Taigu Remains who had already become first-tier great beings also arrived right outside the city, bringing a large group of beast kings.

And then, Monk Lidi, Xue Wuye, Chi Wansui, Gai Tianjiao Sui Han and the other human heirs showed up together, standing against the immortal vampires and savage beasts.

The human monks immediately rushed toward the heirs. They were relieved as they finally found protection from being slaughtered by immortal vampires and savage beasts.

There was no doubt that first-tier great beings were the main powers today.

Those with more first-tier great beings had more of an edge when fighting for Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring and World Spirit.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon took a deep breath and yelled, “Qi Sheng, let’s kill all the monks before getting in the capital city, shall we?”

The three races were all at the same level, and no race was able to suppress another.

However, it seemed that the immortal vampires and savage beasts had already reached a consensus that they needed to expel the human monks first.

Even if they couldn’t annihilate the human monks, they needed to at least drive them out of Blue Dragon Void World so that they couldn’t join the final battle.

“Ao.”

Hundreds of beast kings made deafening roars at the same time. Flood Qi gushed out, trembling the walls of the capital city.

First-tier great beings of the savage beast races took out ancestral devices and tried to encircle the human team.

Crown princes and crown princesses of the immortal vampire races all took out their Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons and some ancient divine objects, approaching the human monks.

All the human monks, except the heirs, were terrified and their faces turned pale. They couldn't help shaking.

After the immortal vampires and savage beasts teamed up, they had twice as many first-tier great beings as humans.

How was that a fair fight?

Many human monks regretted coming here because of their greed. They reckoned that they should've gone back to Kunlun's Field instead of facing such a calamity.

"The fight started before the capital city was conquered...then I'll join as well."

Light pillars ascended from the horizon, letting out powerful energy ripples. Another group of first-tier great beings was rushing toward the capital city now.

At the top of each light pillar was a human being.

After a short while, one of the light pillars arrived above the capital city and landed on the ground.

Hong!

Zhang Ruochen trampled and cracked the ground. The cracks permeated toward the beast kings, frightening all of them.

Chapter 1138 - Break Through

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Immediately after, the other pillars of light also pierced the nine-colored light, falling into the vast space outside the royal capital.

Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess White Li, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Sun Dadi, Blackie, and Murong Yue all appeared. Half of them had entered the top-tier level. Even the weaker Murong Yue was close.

After Zhang Ruochen's group arrived, the situation outside the capital changed again. He actually had as many top-tier figures as the Immortal Vampires, humans, and savage beasts.

It had been a tripolar situation, but now, there were four sides competing.

The strong figures of the Immortal Vampires and savage beasts all calmed down. They didn't attack immediately. Sound waves actually traveled across the space between them. They were clearly communicating and discussing.

The arrival of Zhang Ruochen and the Sacred Sect caused the Immortal Vampires and savage beasts to lose their advantage. If they continued fighting, all four sides might suffer losses. It wouldn't be advantageous to the later competition.

In the end, the Immortal Vampires and savage beasts put away their weapons and retreated cautiously.

"Dammit, it's that Zhang Ruochen again." Yellow Sky Crown Princess was unwilling to accept this. She bit her lip. However, the chance was over. She retreated in the end.

“Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen hurried over in time, intimidating the Immortal Vampires and savage beasts. Otherwise, the human race would definitely suffer great losses.”

The humans all let out a breath as if they’d been saved. They knew that danger was resolved for now.

Of course, the humans quickly felt terror. “Zhang Ruochen is too strong now! He can counter the three main races by himself?”

One of the humans on the side agreed, saying, “Empress Chi Yao spent so many resources to develop the nine Heirs so the humans had top fighters that could suppress the savage beasts. But what did Zhang Ruochen use to gather so many shockingly talented people, each one with the abilities of an Heir?”

Actually, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi and the others were still a bit weaker than the Heirs, but the difference wasn’t that big. They also had special abilities that the Heirs didn’t, which could lessen the gap.

For example, Sikong One and Two definitely weren’t the Heirs’ match alone, but when they worked together, they were multiple times stronger. Even two Heirs together might not be their match.

In his crazed state, Sun Dadi could become a fiery spiritual monkey. His combat ability would skyrocket until he was stronger than common Taigu Remains.

No matter what, the top-tier figures that Zhang Ruochen had brought really shocked the human cultivators. After they had all matured in 100 years, they would definitely dominate the world. How powerful would Zhang Ruochen’s force be then?

Only the few Heirs were still composed, because they knew that the humans, savage beasts and Immortal Vampires had many more top-tier figures than these. The ones who stood out were only the representatives. There were many more hidden in the shadows.

The humans had a rich heritage. Zhang Ruochen's power was indeed strong to instill fear in all the creatures, but he wasn't at the point of fighting an entire race.

Qitian Crown Prince carried the God-killing Cross Shield with his six flesh wings unfurled. Radiating with suffocating Blood Qi, he looked at the royal capital in the distance.

"I believe that there's no need for us to start a war now. We should work together and first break through the capital's city defense formation."

"The Blue Dragon Void World has withered further," the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon said. "The city defense formation has weakened greatly. It's not even 10% of the original power. If we all work together, we might be able to break through it before the Grade Nine Saintly Source Spring appears. We can then compete for the saintly liquid."

The other Heirs and Zhang Ruochen naturally didn't have objections and all agreed.

Qitian Crown Prince looked into the vast cloudy sky and laughed. "Friends standing in the shadows, shouldn't you also appear and help?"

Sizzle, sizzle.

A fiery-red torch appeared. It stood at the top of a mountain. It was hundreds of feet tall and had hot flames. It was the apparition of a parasol tree formed by flames. Very thick and radiating with shocking heat, it melted the dirt.

Qiu Yu stood at the top of the tree. His temperament was cold. Hands behind his back, he gave off the feeling of an undefeatable figure.

In the other direction, a youth walked out of nine-colored light. He looked abnormally handsome with clear skin and long black hair that trailed on the ground. Seeing this young man, all the top-tier figures showed fear.

This man was Emperor Tianming who'd come back to life. Not only were the top-tier figures shocked, but even those who'd surpassed that level—Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, and Zhang Ruochen—became serious.

Next, the mutant creatures in the top ten of the Outer Rank walked out. They were all part of the top-tier.

Han Qiu stood on the head of a dragon corpse. She came to the outside of the capital with a group of Wuchangs and Corpse Kings. This created another commotion.

Almost all the top figures that had remained in the Blue Dragon Void World had appeared.

“Attack!” Qitian Crown Prince roared.

He took off the God-killing Cross Shield and poured Holy Qi into it. The shield instantly unleashed power more terrifying than the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns. He slammed it down. It passed through the clouds and landed above the royal capital.

“Oh my! What is that... It’s a cross even bigger than a mountain...”

“Is god coming to destroy the world?”

The natives of the royal capital watched as the huge cross descended from the sky. They collapsed to the ground in fright. It felt like they were being punished by god.

The city defense formation appeared. It was like a bowl overturned on the ground. The God-killing Cross Shield hit the bowl of light and instantly emitted a deafening boom. Light flew out in all directions.

Kaboom.

In that moment, the city that extended for more than 200 miles actually shook. The city defense formation didn’t shatter, but everyone knew how powerful Qitian Crown Prince was now.

Even some of the top-tier figures were covered in cold sweat. If they were hit by that strike, they would be destroyed even with their cultivation.

However, Qiu Yu was still nonchalant. He slowly raised a hand and a phoenix-shaped flame appeared in his palm.

“Phoenix Flame.”

He flicked his finger and the flame flew out. The small flame enlarged like a phoenix shooting into the sky. In the end, the fire phoenix was dozens of miles long. The head, feathers, claws, and tail were all visible. It was like a true phoenix.

The fire phoenix crashed against the city defense formation. It emitted destructive power that burned the light shield to a red-hot color. The ground around the formation had all melted. The red lava bubbled. It was like a defensive river of lava.

Emperor Tianming's eyes both had two pupils. Four beams of light shot out of the four pupils. They hit the defense formation, forcing it to cave in.

The formation hadn't broken yet, but the beams of light penetrated it and hit the capital's wall.

Kaboom.

A large portion of the towering and sturdy city walls actually collapsed. This was unbelievable to the people. How could the move damage the architecture behind the defense formation without breaking the shield?

Was the city defense formation of any use against him? If he wanted to kill someone, that person would be dead even if he hid in the defense formation.

Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, and Emperor Tianming were all crazily strong. Many of the creatures present, including those in the top-tier, all wanted to back out. They didn't dare compete for the Saintly Source Spring and World Spirit anymore.

Next, Motian Crown Prince, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Rosefinch Fairy, Monk Lidi, Xue Wuye... They all displayed top techniques to attack the defense formation.

The space around the capital was indeed sturdy. It withstood the strong power without getting damaged. Many cracks appeared on the ground and lava surged out. It felt like the ground was about to collapse.

"Fine, I won't be greedy anymore. This group is too scary. Competing with them for the treasures will kill me."

“I don’t want to be cannon fodder! I’m going back to Kunlun’s Field!”

The weaker creatures were completely terrified. They quickly decided to turn and leave the capital.

The union of the Blood God Sect, Shangguan Clan, and Cai Family left, no longer fighting for the Grade Nine Saintly Source Spring. With their abilities, they were only cannon fodder before the strong cultivators. It was better to leave earlier. At least they could preserve some vitality.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t impatient to fight. He and Blackie went to the edge of the defense formation to look for the weak spots.

“No need to look. It’s here.” Blackie had very high attainments in formations and arrays and had great eyesight. It quickly found one point of the formation.

Zhang Ruochen activated the power of space. He pointed at that spot. The space was torn apart and seven great spatial cracks flew toward that point of the formation.

The city defensive formation was very advanced and distorted the space. However, the spatial structure was normal at this point.

The spatial cracks flew over. With a rip, seven medium-sized cracks appeared on the formation. Combined with the attacks of the other strong cultivators, the defense formation collapsed like a popped balloon.

The royal capital of the Blue Dragon Dynasty became an undefended city.

Chapter 1139 - Eight-Dragon Martial Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Go! Get into the capital city.”

“Ao.”

Immortal vampires, savage beasts, human beings and other creatures were all exhilarated. They all rushed into the capital city to fight the aboriginal people.

More than half of the great beings in Blue Dragon Void World gathered in the capital city, and they had gathered abundant treasures. Everyone craved them.

Sikong One and Sun Dadi were both very excited. They wanted to rush in with the others, but they were stopped by Zhang Ruochen.

“There’re ten aboriginal saints in the capital city. It’s not a good idea to barge in,” Zhang Ruochen warned.

Sun Dadi said confidently, “If they’re only lower-class saints, there’s no need to be afraid.”

Sun Dadi was certain that he was able to defeat lower-class saints with his cultivation.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Lower-class saints are not all the same. Those who’ve been lower-class saints for long are way more powerful than those who just became lower-class saints. If you encounter those senior lower-class saints, you will be defeated.”

Some saints just entered the state of saint, while some had been lower-class saints for a century. Some lower-class saints

had special systems and practiced special saint spells.

Which meant the power gap among the lower-class saints was enormous.

Saints who were able to stay in Blue Drago Void World, even if they were only lower-class saints, were the top-tier ones among those at the same level. It would be a huge mistake to underestimate them.

Creatures from Kunlun's Field broke into the capital city and started the slaughtering and the robbing.

Human monks had relatively better restraint, as they didn't kill the innocent. On the contrary, immortal vampires and savage beasts didn't have any inhibitions.

Everywhere they went was turned to ruins. They either ate or drained the blood of the aboriginal people.

“Damn it! How can they be so cruel?”

White Li Princess couldn't be angrier. She clenched her silver teeth and entreated Zhang Ruochen, “Zhang Ruochen, you have to save them. You're the only one who can save them now.”

“There're at least ten million people in the capital city, and most of them are warriors and refiners. How am I supposed to save them? I am not a savior like that.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and sighed.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't without empathy, but he knew that if he used Universe Spiritual Map to put them all in Scroll World, it would lead to lots of misunderstandings. Perhaps the ten aboriginal saints would encircle them.

It would be like bringing trouble to himself.

Nobody would believe that an outer-realm demon was genuinely kind enough to help the aboriginal people in Blue Dragon Void World. They would all think he was up to something else.

Zhang Ruochen reckoned he was already showing mercy by not robbing and killing them.

White Li was heartbroken seeing the aboriginal people eaten by savage beasts and drained of blood by immortal vampires. She begged again, "If you save them, I'll join Sacred Sect and treat you as my overlord."

Zhang Ruochen still didn't change his mind. He said, "I have to be responsible for everyone's safety."

Blackie said, "Zhang Ruochen, all the aboriginal human beings are elites. If you can bring them under control, Sacred Sect can thrive in a short period of time. White Li Princess and I will do that for you. I'll meet you in Universe Spiritual Map when you start to fight for World Spirit."

If they could recruit the elites in Blue Dragon Void World, the quantity and the quality of lower-class and middle-class disciples would match those of an ancient sect.

Zhang Ruochen's interest was piqued, but he didn't find Blackie reliable. He was afraid that Blackie might go out for wool and come home shorn. After White Li Princess lost her memories, she had become incredibly empathetic and was innocent like a little girl. She wasn't dependable either.

This was not a small issue. If anything went wrong, they would be besieged by all the powers.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Huang Yanchen and said, "Sister, stay here to help them. Prevent the two cats from screwing things up. Save as many as you can, but don't outdo yourself."

After a discussion, they decided to separate into two teams.

Blackie, White Li Princess, Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo took Universe Spiritual Map and entered the capital city. Their main objective was to bring aboriginal people into Scroll World.

Zhang Ruochen enveloped Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi and Murong Yue with his Holy Qi. He performed Great Spatial Move and got into the center of the capital city.

Inside the capital city gathered a large group of aboriginal great beings, and they had set up many attack formations, stalling the great beings of all races from Kunlun's Field so

that they couldn't get into the center of the capital city in a short time.

Murong Yue stood behind Zhang Ruochen and looked at the battlefield outside the city. She said, "Blue Dragon Dynasty has great enough power to ward off so many first-tier great beings."

"This is an upper-class void world. It's certainly powerful. Although it's nothing compared to Kunlun's Field, we still can't underestimate them," Zhang Ruochen said.

The inner city was in chaos. All the formations had been activated. Light pillars ascended from all the streets. There were layers of defense light domes.

"We have to stall those outer-realm demons. We can't let them get into the palace to seize World Spirit."

"As long as we can protect World Spirit, Blue Dragon Dynasty can still be maintained when the World Son is born."

"Fight until we shed the last drop of blood."

All the aboriginal people in the capital city joined the fight. Some of them were guarding the formation while some others rushed out of the city.

The team of five led by Zhang Ruochen was very low-key and didn't attract any attention from aboriginal people.

Zhang Ruochen suddenly sensed a giant energy ripple. He looked down.

At the center of the capital city flew out eight giant dragons from the golden holy mountain, flying across Zhang Ruochen and the others.

A middle-aged man wearing golden armor was at the center of the eight giant dragons. He was holding a long spear, looking majestic. His holy Qi ripples were extremely strong.

A large group of aboriginal human monks roared in surprise, "It's Blue Sky Martial Saint. He's still guarding Blue Dragon Dynasty instead of leaving the world."

The rules of sky and land in Blue Dragon Void World were different from those in Kunlun's Field, so the practicing ways were not the same.

The more dragon shadows were refined in Blue Dragon Void World, the stronger he was.

Those with six dragon shadows were called 'Martial Kings.'

Those with seven dragon shadows were called 'Martial Knights.'

Those with eight dragon shadows were called 'Martial Saints.'

"This person must be one of the ten aboriginal saints in Blue Dragon Void World. He's indeed incredibly powerful, much stronger than ordinary lower-class saints."

Zhang Ruochen didn't even need to use mind power to inspect him. He could speculate the power of that Eight-Dragon Martial Saint by barely sensing him.

"What Martial Saint? Let me check how powerful you are."

The Royal Prince of the Kun still maintained the holy body of a human being. It flapped its wings and surged. It waved the long spear in its hand and chopped toward Blue Sky Martial Saint.

Red Ocean Vajra Spear was hefty. It was able to break a mountain.

"You creatures from Kunlun's Field are outrageous. You're only a junior, yet you dare be so reckless."

Blue Sky Martial Saint stared at Royal Prince of the Kun and pushed out the eight dragon shadows with his hands, clashing with Red Ocean Vajra Spear.

The Royal Prince of the Kun muffled and got knocked away.

It dropped on the ground, leveling all the ancient buildings on the entire street, leaving a long and deep gully.

"How powerful."

Sun Dadi's heart skipped a beat, seeing that in the inner city.

The Royal Prince of the Kun was a powerful first-tier great being, with the power to defeat lower-class saints, yet it couldn't even withstand one strike from Blue Sky Martial Saint.

“That Eight-Dragon Martial Saint has got to be a top-tier lower-class saint. Those who haven't reached the state of saint are in no way his match, no matter how great their constitution is.” Murong Yue looked solemn.

Zhang Ruochen then said, “There's an upper limit to any lower-class saint in Blue Dragon Void World. They can't compare with the top-tier lower-class saints from Kunlun's Field. To me, that Eight-Dragon Martial Saint isn't invincible.”

Hong Long.

Several other Eight-Dragon Martial Saints flew out of that golden holy mountain, joining the battlefield outside the city.

Every Eight-Dragon Martial Saint boosted the morale of the aboriginal people from the capital city.

Apparently, those Eight-Dragon Martial Saints who showed up were famous overlords in Blue Dragon Void World. They were all legends.

Zhang Ruochen didn't pay any attention to the battle outside the city. No matter how hard the aboriginal people tried, they couldn't do anything to change their fate. Today, they would be destroyed.

Zhang Ruochen looked to that golden holy mountain again.

That holy mountain sat at the center of the capital city. It was lofty and divine. On the mountain were dense palaces, from the foot of the mountain to the mountainside, making the entire mountain gleam with golden light.

“That must be the palace of Blue Dragon Dynasty,” Zhang Ruochen said.

There weren't any palace-style buildings at the peak of the holy mountain. The only thing there was a black altar.

Nine-colored light gushed out of that altar.

It could be inferred that Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring and World Spirit must be born at the peak of that holy mountain.

“Let’s rush there now and seize the holy mountain. As long as Grade-nine Saintly Source Spring comes out, we can definitely seize it,” Sikong One guffawed.

Zhang Ruochen’s pupils narrowed. He saw dozens of people standing at the top of the mountain, covered by countless dragon shadows. It was like a hundred-dragon hive... dangerous.

“There is definitely a large group of masters guarding the altar. We’ll be trapped in hard battle if we go there now.”

“Let’s wait for a while first. We don’t need to be at the point where the going is toughest.”

And then, Zhang Ruochen looked to that glowing palace and smiled. He said, “We can go check the palace of Blue Dragon Dynasty. Perhaps we’ll gain a lot from there.”

Sun Dadi’s eyes gleamed. He said, “That’s right! Perhaps we can get some beautiful princesses. Big brother, you’re so smart.”

Zhang Ruochen was speechless.

Sun Dadi couldn’t be more excited. He carried his iron rod and rushed out, racing toward the palace of Blue Dragon Dynasty. Sikong One also disappeared. He ran faster than Sun Dadi.

Chapter 1140 - Gold Light Ribbon

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The top fighters of the Blue Dragon Dynasty either went outside the city to fight or to protect the altar at the top of Saint Mountain. The brilliant and golden palace actually wasn't heavily guarded.

Zhang Ruochen's group was able to sneak in without alerting the native cultivators within the palace.

As a palace, it naturally had many precious treasures. For regular martial artists, any random item was valuable enough for them to live the rest of their lives in comfort.

However, Half-Saints wouldn't care about those items.

Sun Dadi and Sikong One charged toward the inner palace and disappeared. They seemed to really want to capture some concubines and princesses.

"Amitabha!" Sikong Two said. "I will go stop Senior Brother. I can't watch him make a mistake like this."

He put his hands together solemnly with worry in his eyes.

"Go!" Zhang Ruochen said.

After Sikong Two left, Zhang Ruochen captured a martial general who'd cultivated four dragon shadows. He found out where the national treasury was and hurried over with Murong Yue.

The Saints of the Blue Dragon Dynasty must have taken all the treasures away when they'd left the Blue Dragon Void World. However, many more treasures were produced recently. They

must be stored in the treasury still, not taken out of the Blue Dragon Void World.

The treasury was inside the Saint Mountain. It was only a wall away from the palace. There was a very powerful defensive formation outside the treasury. The various levels made it difficult for even a Saint to break through.

Murong Yue followed beside Zhang Ruochen. Staring at the stone gate, she said, "Sect leader, should I test how strong the formation is first?"

Zhang Ruochen grabbed her wrist and pulled her back. "No need to do it forcefully. I have a way."

With a shake, Zhang Ruochen's features and figure changed drastically. He became a middle-aged man with sallow skin. His shoulders were broad and he radiated with a powerful aura.

He looked identical to Martial Saint Qingkong. Even his temperament and eyes were identical. Opening his arms, strands of Holy Qi surged out of his body. They formed eight huge dragons that radiated with powerful dragon Qi.

Then he strode toward the stone entrance of the treasury.

The guards all knelt down. "Greetings, Martial Saint Qingkong."

"Open the formation immediately," Zhang Ruochen uttered in a deep voice.

"But...didn't you go outside the city to fight against the demons?" A six-dragon Martial King asked cautiously. "How come you're here at the treasury?"

Zhang Ruochen had an extraordinary temperament. Authoritative aura surged out of him, aweing them. "Do I have to explain myself to you all?"

An eight-dragon Martial Saint was the protector of the Blue Dragon Void World and also the most respected existence. In unusual times like these, they also had the highest authority. No one could go against their wishes.

The guards didn't dare to offend Martial Saint Qingkong and immediately opened the defensive formation.

After entering the formation, Zhang Ruochen stopped and surveyed the surroundings. He quietly released his spatial territory.

Hum.

The space shook violently, making the soldiers bleed from all their pores and collapse onto the ground. Zhang Ruochen controlled his power precisely, so that they'd only fallen unconscious instead of dying.

The six-dragon Martial King didn't faint. His advanced cultivation blocked the spatial attack. He remained standing.

"You...who are you..." He pointed at Zhang Ruochen in fear and retreated hurriedly, wanting to escape.

Whoosh.

Zhang Ruochen rushed out with his fastest speed and punched the man's head. The powerful fist flew out with bolts of lightning and dug into the Martial King's body.

The six-dragon Martial King's vision went black. He fell to the ground with a thud.

"I wonder how many treasures are stored in the Blue Dragon Dynasty's treasury."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and sliced down. He opened the stone gate and successfully broke into the treasury.

The treasury reached hundreds of feet into the ground. The inside was vast and open. One could imagine how many treasures were once stored inside.

But now, the treasury was empty. There was nothing there. It had been emptied long ago.

Zhang Ruochen smiled bitterly. "It seems like I'm still late," he muttered to himself.

Suddenly, he felt alarm. There was danger. He used the Spatial Move quickly, crossing hundreds of feet. He reached the edge

of the treasury, pressing his back against the cold wall.

Boom!

A ground-shaking explosion came from where he'd been standing. He could vaguely see eight dragon shadows appear and quickly vanish.

The treasury was a completely sealed space. Right now, immense waves of power rolled violently throughout the treasury. They crashed, making the metal walls ring, unable to settle down.

“There’s actually an eight-dragon Martial Saint hiding in the treasury. This is interesting.” Zhang Ruochen was both shocked and happy.

Since there was an eight-dragon Martial Saint here, it meant that there were still important treasures here. It hadn’t been emptied.

When the power waves settled down, a tall and thin figure was finally shown. This man was Wang Shidao. He was a Martial Saint of the Blue Dragon Void World. He looked ancient with silver hair and a bronze headpiece. However, he didn’t act old at all. He looked full of vitality.

With one hand behind his back, Wang Shidao’s eyes trained on Zhang Ruochen. “You are not Martial Saint Qingkong,” he said coldly. “Who are you?”

“As expected of a Martial Saint,” Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. “You have sharp eyes.”

Wang Shidao scoffed. “Your eight dragons aren’t made from the Blue Dragon Void World’s divine origin dragon Qi. Instead, it has the aura of Kunlun’s Field. It isn’t hard for me to see through your disguise.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his body. Crackles and pops sounded and he quickly returned to his original appearance. His eyes fell on Wang Shidao’s back with interest.

There was a gold ribbon on Wang Shidao’s back. The material was unique, like golden silk or golden liquid laid on silk. It was moving slowly.

“It actually has slight spatial ripples.” Zhang Ruochen was sure that the ribbon was a spatial treasure.

The Blue Dragon Dynasty had a spatial transfer formation and now produced such a spatial treasure. This filled Zhang Ruochen with curiosity. “Where did your golden ribbon come from?” he asked immediately.

Wang Shidao’s expression hardened as he grew guarded. “This is the national treasure of the Blue Dragon Void World—Gold Light Ribbon. It’s not something a demon like you can dirty.”

“Eighth Dimension Collapse.”

Wang Shidao drew a circle with his hands. Eight black dragons appeared in the center and transformed into eight bolts of lightning, flying toward Zhang Ruochen.

An eight-dragon Martial Saint was extremely strong, but Zhang Ruochen wasn’t afraid. He activated all his Holy Qi and slapped his hands forward.

“Dragon and Elephant Divine Furnace.”

As Zhang Ruochen released his palm print, golden flames surged out of his back. It filled the entire treasury.

The entire space turned into a blazing furnace. If a Half-Saint cultivator broke in now, he would be burned to death in the space of a breath.

Kaboom.

The two forces clashed. The powerful shockwave rippled out in all directions.

The four walls of the treasury were all carved with formation runes. They stopped the power. Otherwise, half of Saint Mountain would have collapsed.

The two continued fighting, exchanging dozens of blows. Their tactics were all the strongest ones. Fists and palms interchanged. They fought power with power; they competed over who was stronger.

Half a beat later, the two separated.

Wang Shidao was covered in sweat. He panted for breath. The skin on his fists had broken and blood seeped out. He stared at this outsider in shock. “How could you... You’re only a Ninth Level Half-Saint. How can you block my power?”

He was already 300 years old and a Saint with advanced cultivation. His martial techniques had transformed too. However, he was old and his Blood Qi had weakened. His explosive power and endurance both had decreased.

Dozens of strikes later, he became tired. Zhang Ruochen, though, was still full of energy.

He stood up straight before Wang Shidao. “It’s impressive for you to take so many of my strikes with your age.”

Wang Shidao didn’t feel any glory hearing these words. Instead, it felt like Zhang Ruochen was insulting him. A mere Grade Nine Half-Saint dared to speak to an eight-dragon Martial Saint like this.

Wang Shidao was obviously infuriated. “Kid,” he roared. “Do not be arrogant. I will kill you immediately. Demon-Defeating Print Technique!”

Wang Shidao’s body swelled. His hands formed a strange print. A wide circle of black light emerged under his feet. Eight dragons curled up within the light with deafening dragon cries.

Wang Shidao’s power ripples grew stronger and stronger, creating pressure for Zhang Ruochen.

“Your print can’t defeat demons.” Zhang Ruochen’s expression was still composed. Instead of retreating, he strode forward. His hands formed a print as he uttered, “Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.”

A blood-red demon with 12 wings gradually stood up before Zhang Ruochen. He was huge with menacing features and shocking evil Qi.

It was the apparition of Pluto.

Kaboom.

Zhang Ruochen sent his palm forward, forming a huge palm print. The blood-red demon also struck with his palm. It crashed against Wang Shidao's Demon-Defeating Print Technique and shattered it instantly.

Spitting out blood, Wang Shidao flew backward and crashed against the steel wall. He slid down like a piece of paper. Only a bloody mark remained.

Zhang Ruochen put his palm print away and walked over to Wang Shidao's side. His saint body was now broken. Half of his skull was missing and the back was completely caved in. Saint blood flowed out without stop.

A moment later, his vitality disappeared completely.

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel regret or excitement at killing a Martial Saint. He looked extraordinarily calm.

Taking the Gold Light Ribbon from Wang Shidao, Zhang Ruochen held it in his hands with a curious expression. "I finally saw another spatial treasure. I wonder what it holds. What kind of special powers does it have?"

Chapter 1141 - Princess Mo Ran

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The golden treasure bag was so light that it felt like it had no weight. It was like stroking the skin of a teenage girl when holding it in hand.

Hua!

Zhang Ruochen infused Holy Qi into the golden treasure bag, and then, it started to gleam with golden light. There seemed to be water engravings flowing on the surface of the bag, and a small hole emerged.

Zhang Ruochen slipped a trace of his mind power into the bag.

And then, he guffawed because of exhilaration. He had searched high and low only to find it when he least expected to.

The inner space of the golden treasure bag was vast. It was far huger than the space ring made by Zhang Ruochen. There were quite a few treasures inside the bag, including divine stones, divine jades and divine pills. Whatever Zhang Ruochen wanted, it was inside the bag. Zhang Ruochen couldn't even count how many treasures there were inside.

The entire treasury of Blue Dragon Dynasty was in that bag.

Even the hierarch of an ancient clan would be as exhilarated as Zhang Ruochen if he could obtain such a number of treasures.

After thinking for a while, Zhang Ruochen immediately understood what happened. He thought, That Eight-dragon Martial Saint must have been guarding the national treasury

for the entirety of time. He urgently put all the valuables from the treasury into the golden treasure bag, and I accidentally ran into him.

Golden treasure bag itself was already a true treasure, aside from the valuables inside the bag.

Based on Zhang Ruochen's inspection, the golden treasure bag also had great defense and attack power aside from storing objects.

Zhang Ruochen was far from powerful enough to refine such a space treasure.

He put his golden treasure bag away and walked out of the treasury vault to meet Murong Yue.

Murong Yue greeted Zhang Ruochen who walked out of the national treasury and said, "What did you get, overlord?"

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to hide the joy inside. He smiled. "I've gained a lot."

If someone like Zhang Ruochen said 'gained a lot,' that meant he had obtained a terrific number of treasures.

Murong Yue said, "The great beings from Kunlun's Field have already arrived in the inner city, and they'll get to the foot of the holy mountain soon."

"That fast?"

Zhang Ruochen performed Heavenly Eyes and looked outside the mountains. He saw several immortal vampire crown princes, and they were approaching the holy mountain.

They stood among the blood-red clouds and stood at the front, leveling everything that stood in their way.

Neither the formation in the city nor the eight-dragon martial saints were able to stop them.

Qitian Crown Prince held the God-destroying Cross in his hand as if he were the God of Death. He slew an eight-dragon martial saint first, then he severely injured another eight-dragon martial saint.

All the soldiers from Blue Dragon Dynasty were too scared to not flee.

The nine-colored light coming out of the mountain top turned brighter and brighter. The extreme shock waves cracked the holy mountain.

The crack became wider and wider, and it became ten feet wide immediately. If it kept getting wider, the holy mountain might be divided.

“The saintly source spring is about to be born, and the ultimate battle is about to come. Why are Sikong One, Sikong Two and Sun Dadi still away? Did something happen to them?” Murong Yue asked.

Zhang Ruochen turned around and looked to the palace. He said, “They’re back!”

Sikong One, Sikong Two and Sun Dadi rushed out of the palace and made it back, gathering with Zhang Ruochen and Murong Yue.

They had also brought back an exquisite woman.

Sikong One and Sun Dadi were having a fierce fight because of that woman. They were red in the face because of the arguing, and if it wasn’t for Sikong Two, they might have engaged in a physical fight already.

“I discovered her first. She should follow me to study the Buddha ways and become a disciple of Buddhism.” Sikong had a loud voice, and his words were rumbling.

Sun Dadi said, “Stop being a prude. Do you really think I’m stupid enough to believe you will admit a beautiful woman as your disciple? Besides, this princess from Blue Dragon Dynasty was captured by me. I should own her.”

“You’re talking nonsense. All I want is a disciple. Where do all these misunderstandings come from?” Sikong One said.

“Just a disciple? I can see the desire you have for her. I knew from the beginning that you’re not a good person,” Sun Dadi sneered.

...

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He couldn't imagine that Sikong One and Sun Dadi would fight like this for a woman.

When Zhang Ruochen took a look at that woman, he understood why they behaved like that.

That woman was young and in her prime. She was wearing luxurious clothes, and she had the perfect body. She had large breasts, a thin waist, and long legs. Every spot of her body was the perfect combination of seductiveness and elegance.

Even Zhang Ruochen, who had great mind power was amazed, not to mention Sikong One and Sun Dadi.

Zhang Ruochen walked toward that woman, and he smelled a fragrance emanating from her. The closer he got, the more beautiful he found she was.

She had a standard oval face, and her skin was smooth and white. Her brown eyes were gleaming, but she looked delicate. Even a guy who was stone-cold would be attracted to her.

The first time he saw her, she seemed like a shy teenage girl. At the second look, she looked like a sexy and seductive woman. At the third look, she seemed like an innocent girl.

Her temperament kept changing.

“Who are you?”

Zhang Ruochen could feel with his instinct that this girl was by no means ordinary. He needed to be cautious.

However, no matter how Zhang Ruochen inspected her, he couldn't feel any Holy Qi ripples from her. She felt like a completely weak girl.

That teenage girl couldn't seem more scared. She was shivering like a quail and said, “I, I'm the seventh princess of Blue Dragon Dynasty.”

Sikong One and Sun Dadi were almost about to fight. Seeing Zhang Ruochen interrogating the seventh princess, they immediately rushed to her side and looked worried.

Sun Dadi said worriedly, “Big brother, I've already promised seventh princess that I'll take her out of this world that's about

to be destroyed. Please don't kill her.”

Sikong One was also worried that Zhang Ruochen might hurt her. After all, he had a reputation for doing that. He said, “Uncle, seventh princess has great potential. I've already decided to have her as my disciple and to bring her back to Kunlun's Field.”

Zhang Ruochen still looked apathetic. He observed this seventh princess and was worried.

“Where did you find her?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Sun Dadi and Sikong One answered at the same time, “The palace deep down inside.”

Actually, Zhang Ruochen really wanted to kill that seventh princess with one strike. After all, the uneasiness he felt didn't come from nowhere.

However, both Sun Dadi and Sikong One had already been completely infatuated and lost their rationality. If Zhang Ruochen killed her now, they were likely to hate him forever.

What if she was really just a weak princess?

If he killed someone innocent, it would go against the one thing he stood for, which might corrupt his state of mind, which would be no good for him to practice.

This is tricky, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The eyes of the seventh princess were glinting, and her eyelashes were trembling. She could tell instantly that Zhang Ruochen was superior to Sikong One and Sun Dadi. She then kneeled in front of Zhang Ruochen and teared up. She begged him, “I really don't want to go back to Kunlun's Field with them. It was they who forced me here. Please, save me, my lord.”

Both Sikong One and Sun Dadi felt embarrassed.

Sikong One said, “Amitabha! Lady, I really want you as my disciple. I'll teach you everything I know. The Buddhists also admit female disciples.”

Sun Dadi said, “Your highness, I genuinely want to save you from Blue Dragon Void World and flee this world that’s about to crumble.”

“Stop fighting!”

Zhang Ruochen looked cold. He glared at Sikong One and Sun Dadi and said, “From now on, the seventh princess will follow me. Don’t think about owning her anymore.”

Both Sikong One and Sun Dadi were anxious. They thought Zhang Ruochen was also attracted to the seventh princess and that he wanted to have her all by himself.

“Brother, are you also attracted to the seventh princess?” Sun Dadi muttered.

“That’s right. The seventh princess is exquisite. Every man who sees her will be attracted, myself included.”

Sikong One and Sun Dadi didn’t dare fight anymore.

No matter how hard they tried, they were not Zhang Ruochen’s match.

Now, they could only wish for Princess Yanchen to come back. Perhaps she was the only one who could rescue the seventh princess from Zhang Ruochen.

That seventh princess from Blue Dragon Princess smiled bizarrely.

However, she was looking down the whole time, so Zhang Ruochen was the only one who sensed that smile, which made him all the more unsettled.

If she does anything inappropriate, I’ll kill her instantly, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The seventh princess from Blue Dragon Dynasty took a bow at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Thank you, my lord. I owe you a great deal.”

‘Mo Ran’ should be her name.

“No need for such courtesies, princess. I shouldn’t have let them frighten you. From now on, you’ll follow me. I’ll make sure that no one lays a finger on you.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Princess Mo Ran in her eyes. He grabbed her wrists and helped her up.

The hands of Princess Mo Ran were snow-white and soft. Each finger of hers looked aesthetic and felt comfortable.

Seizing this chance, Zhang Ruochen infused another trace of Holy Qi into Princess Mo Ran's palm.

He still didn't find any Holy Qi in her body.

Zhang Ruochen got more confused after that inspection. Was I being paranoid?

Sikong One and Sun Dadi clenched their teeth. Their eyes turned red and they couldn't have been more anxious. Princess Mo Ran's image tumbled in their minds. He now felt like a wicked demon.

Murong Yue also felt uncomfortable about what Zhang Ruochen did, but she didn't voice her objection. She said, "Overlord, the first-tier beings from the immortal race and savage beast race have already entered the holy mountain and reached the mountainside. If we don't go now, they might occupy all the convenient places, which will put us at a great disadvantage when seizing the saintly source spring and World Spirit."

Zhang Ruochen put back his hands and patted the wrists of Princess Mo Ran, signaling to her that there was no need to be scared. And then, he led everyone toward the peak of the holy mountain.

Chapter 1142 - Heaven-Earth Sword Formation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Blue Dragon Dynasty was indeed filled with strong cultivators. They also had the geographical advantage, but they still couldn't fend off the group of top-tier fighters. They were forced back and many lost their lives.

Some of the eight-dragon Martial Saints were killed, some heavily injured. Only four still maintained their combat abilities and led the group of seven-dragon and six-dragon Martial Kings to continue fighting.

The top figures of the Immortal Vampires arrived at the mountaintop first. They went to the side of the altar and took up an advantageous spot on the south side of Saint Mountain.

The Taigu Remains of the savage beasts all went into human form. They climbed the mountain and went to the side of the cliff on the west.

Now, only the east and north of Saint Mountain wasn't taken. Zhang Ruochen stood at the middle of the mountain and looked up.

“We'll take down the east.”

“I'll lead the way.” Sikong One held a golden zen staff. Flood-like roars left his mouth as he charged to the front. The natives guarding the east of the mountain were sent flying.

“Blue Dragon Dynasty cultivators, listen,” Sun Dadi yelled as he charged and killed. “Your princess has already joined the Sacred Sect. Give up on fighting and we won't kill the innocent!”

Sikong One and Sun Dadi were both very strong. Even six-dragon Martial Kings couldn't take their hits. Only seven-dragon Martial Lords could exchange some blows with them.

Had the princess submitted to these outsider demons? The cultivators of the Blue Dragon Dynasty were all doubtful. When the emperor left the Void World, hadn't he already taken all the princesses and princes away? Where did this other princess come from?

"Nonsense. The 13 princesses of the Blue Dragon Dynasty already left this world. Can't you think of a better excuse to destroy our morale?"

A seven-dragon Martial Lord clad in dragon armor picked up his halberd. He rushed down the mountain, breaking through the wind. Close to 1,000 runes appeared on the halberd's surface. He emitted an icy force and attacked Sun Dadi's chest with a powerful aura.

"The seventh princess of the Blue Dragon Dynasty has already joined the Sacred Sect. Why don't you believe me?"

Sun Dadi grabbed his metal staff with both hands. Using all his might, he swept it horizontally and clashed with the halberd.

The seven-dragon Martial Lord's body shook. He flew hundreds of feet to the right and almost fell down the cliff. However, since he could cultivate seven dragon shadows, he obviously wasn't a simple figure. He was able to fight against top-tier figures. He quickly steadied himself and attacked Sun Dadi again.

Mountaintop.

The four Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Dynasty stood at the side of the black altar. They all radiated with powerful auras. It was as if four gods stood on the mountaintop, fighting against the Immortal Vampires and savage beasts.

The four of them included an elder with youthful features, a middle-aged couple, and a young man in his twenties. They were the strongest of the natives that remained in the Blue

Dragon Void World. Each of them had eight dragons wrapped around them, radiating with heart-seizing energy waves.

“Seventh princess?”

The four Martial Saints felt that this outsider demon had high cultivation and didn’t seem to be lying, so they looked down the mountain to find out the truth. When they saw Princess Moran, they all froze. This was unbelievable.

“That can’t be... How can she be in the hands of the outsiders?”

The four Martial Saints exchanged glances and communicated hurriedly with their Spiritual Power. They finally came to a decision.

The young man in his twenties, named Wang Huanzhen, had a sharp aura. “I’ll save her,” he said. “You all continue to guard the mountain.”

Wang Huanzhen was the youngest, but his status was above the other three Martial Saints. He was the World Heir that the Blue Dragon Void World had chosen. Both his physical body and talent were top-tier. No cultivator in the same realm could take more than three of his strikes.

“No, the Heir is precious and can’t be lost. We can save her from a few outsiders who don’t know their place.”

Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing were a beautiful couple of the Blue Dragon Void World. Even if they fought alone, they still weren’t weaker than any eight-dragon Martial Saint.

Plus, they were skilled in a combined sword formation. Once displayed, they would possess unparalleled power.

Zhang Ruochen felt two strong bursts of Holy Qi rush down the mountain. Alarmed, he looked up. He was met by two beams of radiant Sword Qi, already reaching his head.

One person stood in each of the beams—one man and one woman. It was Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing.

The two Martial Saints didn’t waste time speaking. They attacked directly, going for Zhang Ruochen and Sikong Two.

Martial Saint Xuantian held a blue 70-foot-long saint sword. The sword was as wide as one's hand. When he struck with it, a long trail of light dragged out. He struck down at Zhang Ruochen's head.

This is a strong figure. He's more powerful than the eight-dragon Martial Saint in the treasury.

Zhang Ruochen was still calm. He raised his arm and pulled out the Abyss Ancient Sword to strike upward.

Bang.

The two saint swords crashed. Dense spots of light flew out from the point of intersection. The spots transformed into Sword Qi and hit the surface of Saint Mountain, creating various long cracks.

Martial Saint Xuantian retreated in shock. He had to re-judge this young outsider demon before him. His sword moves flowed like water and were very natural. It was clear that he'd reached a high level in the Sword Way. His level might even be higher than Martial Saint Xuantian.

Shock filled the eyes of Princess Moran, standing behind Zhang Ruochen. She couldn't believe this. How could a Ninth Level Half-Saint force back someone like Martial Saint Xuantian?

It seems like I've met a powerful outsider demon, Princess Moran thought. I wonder what noble status he has in Kunlun's Field? She smiled a mesmerizing smile while looking at Zhang Ruochen with her pretty eyes.

At the mountaintop, World Heir Wang Huanzhen, Qitian Crown Prince, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon and the others all watched the battle.

The two Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Void World are both powerful, Qitian Crown Prince thought. They'll probably force Zhang Ruochen to use the powers of time and space.

This entire time, Qitian Crown Prince feared Zhang Ruochen's time power the most. If he could witness Zhang Ruochen utilize those mysterious powers, he was confident in finding a way to counter them.

Then he would have a greater chance at defeating Zhang Ruochen.

Martial Saint Xuantian called Jingning back. They stayed a few feet away from each. The dragons that surrounded them intertwined, forming a huge white dragon.

“Combination sword formation?”

Zhang Ruochen was finally unsettled. He had to take this seriously. The two were already stronger than Wang Shidao. If they combined, their combat ability would definitely rise to a terrifying level.

“Heaven-Earth Sword Formation.”

Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing stood at the head and stomach of the white dragon. One above and one below, they attacked Zhang Ruochen.

Martial Xuantian struck with his sword again. The power of the saint sword had doubled completely. The air cracked and popped as if it was about to burn.

Zhang Ruochen didn't dodge it. Instead, he stood up straight, activated the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns and struck Martial Saint Xuantian.

Boom.

The two forces of Sword Way crashed violently. This time, Zhang Ruochen was the weaker one. He took four consecutive steps back. Many small cuts opened up on his clothes from the Sword Qi.

Not even the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns can stop it?

He furrowed his brows slightly. He considered activating the 3,000 runes of the Abyss Ancient Sword to utilize more of the Sword Way's power.

“Die!”

The power on Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing grew even stronger. The white dragon around them radiated with blinding light that traveled hundreds of miles away. The entire Saint Mountain shook as if it was going to collapse.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes narrowed. He slowly lifted the Abyss Ancient Sword over his head. A blue dragon appeared on his arm. Dragon scales grew out of his skin.

Poof, poof.

The 3,000 runes all appeared on the Abyss Ancient Sword. Black light flooded out in all directions, battling the light of the white dragon.

“Sword Five!”

Zhang Ruochen became one with the black sword. He disappeared from his spot with a whoosh and charged into the white dragon's mouth, piercing its body. The black sword crashed 12 times in a row, leaving 12 black sword paths in the air.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen broke through the defense of the two Martial Saints. With a bang, the white dragon split apart and dissolved into white Holy Qi. The two Martial Saints flew back like scarecrows.

Blood trailed out of their mouths; their faces were sheet-white.

“How can this be... No one has ever broken our Heaven-Earth Sword Formation... Just how skilled is he in the Sword Way?”

Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing were both injured, but they hadn't lost all of their ability to fight. They continued to stand up straight in the middle of the mountain with their saint swords.

However, there were complex emotions in their eyes. It was hard to believe that the sword formation they were so proud of was defeated by a Ninth Level Half-Saint. He'd injured them too.

Was the Sword Way of the Blue Dragon Void World really that much weaker than that of the Kunlun's Field?

I've still underestimated Zhang Ruochen. Qitian Crown Prince's eyes narrowed as he sighed, feeling quite a bit of pressure. He's so powerful even without using time and space.

“So powerful.” Princess Moran was in disbelief. She had to rethink Zhang Ruochen's abilities.

Kaboom.

Saint Mountain suddenly started shaking. Small web-like fissures appeared in the royal capital. They seemed to be about to rip apart the underground formation.

In the universe, Shangguan Xianyan, Cai Jinglun and the others stood on a Void Ship flying toward the Chaotic World Mountain. They gazed toward the Blue Dragon Void World and saw this shocking scene.

This huge world was caving inwards like a broken egg. Some of the earth broke apart and became meteorites. Other parts were just swallowed by the broken space, vanishing.

All the planets and meteorites within billions of miles of the Blue Dragon Void World were all shaking.

An upper Void World that had remained for 12,960,000 years had still gone toward destruction. It would soon become dust in the vast universe.

Chapter 1143 - The Battle

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blue Dragon Void World crumbled faster and faster, permeating toward the capital city.

The whole world was shaking, and the pressure coming from the sky and land terrified even the first-tier great beings.

Peng Peng.

There was lightning in the sky, which made deafening sounds. On the ground, all the mountains turned into volcanos, with smoke and lava bursting out of them.

The entire world was dark, with the exception of the lava that was glowing with crimson light, rushing toward the capital city. All the buildings it touched were melted.

Inside the capital city.

All the aboriginal people were too scared to stand up. Some of them were crying, some of them were kneeling down, while some were praying to God. Nobody could stay calm seeing the apocalypse coming.

Blackie and White Li Princess carried Universe Spiritual Map, walking on the roads that were broken into pieces, bringing the aboriginal people into the Scroll World.

Xuantian Martial Sant and Ningjing Martial Saint stopped fighting Zhang Ruochen. They received the transmitted voice from Wang Huanzhen, after which they rushed toward the mountain peak, gathering with other aboriginal monks.

Zhang Ruochen, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi and Murong Yue arrived at the east side of the holy mountain without any obstacles, occupying a higher ground.

Zhang Ruochen was able to see Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Rosefinch Fairy at his spot, and dozens of savage beast Taigu remains.

All the Taigu remains turned into human shapes. There were men and women, and most of them looked beautiful, yet they were all powerful.

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon sneered and said, “Zhang Ruochen, when I get the World Spirit, I’ll settle all the grudges between us.”

“If you can actually get the World Spirit.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Qiu Yu and Emperor Tianming arrived at the holy mountain almost at the same time.

They were both immensely powerful, but they didn’t go fight the aboriginal people. Instead, they were preparing themselves.

Until now, Qiu Yu and Emperor Tianming still hadn’t attacked the human beings. They were standing aside, observing the fight among Qitian Crown Prince, Zhang Ruochen and aboriginal monks.

After a short while, human heirs and first-tier great beings arrived at the holy mountain.

Everyone knew that the saintly source spring and World Spirit were about to be born. Every creature who had arrived was fully prepared to attack.

Hong!

The crack at the center of the holy mountain kept being widened, moving toward both the south and the north. It became one hundred and fifteen feet wide, completely dividing the mountain.

More than half of the palaces at the mountainside collapsed, turning into ruins.

A giant white light ball flew up from the crack, flying through the nine-colored mist and surging.

Inside the light ball was a white holy flower with a diameter of dozens of feet. The petals were transparent like crystals, giving out an enchanting fragrance.

Inside the flower was water reflecting the light, which was a fountain of saintly source liquids, worth one million small cups.

A holy flower like this was priceless. If it were born in Kunlun's Field, it would make even an ancient clan crazy.

“The saintly source spring is about to be born!”

“Quick! If we can get one holy flower, we'll be as wealthy as a top-tier clan.”

In an instant, at least twenty first-tier great beings rushed forward, fighting each other and trying to seize the white holy flower.

Motian Crown Prince led another three first-tier great beings of the immortal vampire race, approaching the holy flower.

Six Taigu remains all performed their best attacking skills, fighting other competitors.

As for human beings, the deity of Demonic Sect, Ouyang Huan, led three pre-saints from Moon Worship Demonic Sect to join the battle.

The four martial saints from Blue Dragon Dynasty didn't do anything. Obviously, their ultimate goal was to seize the World Spirit. They didn't want to lose the greater for the less.

Zhang Ruochen, Qitian Crown Prince, Emperor Tianming, Qiu Yu, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Xue Wuye, Lidi Monk and other top-tier great beings were all calm, watching the fight in the sky.

Sun Dadi and Murong Yue also joined the fight, trying to get the white holy flower.

Hua.

Before the battle for the first holy flower ended, a cluster of blue light rushed out from underground. A blue holy flower flew out.

Inside the blue holy flower were grade-two saintly source liquids.

Obviously, this holy flower was much more valuable.

A large group of great beings rushed forward.

Sikong One's eyes gleamed and he couldn't stay calm anymore. He took out his golden scepter and trampled on the floor. He surged and yelled, "This holy flower and grade-two saintly source liquids are mine!"

However, before Sikong One could reach the blue holy flower, he was knocked back by more than ten saint weapons.

Those who were able to join the final battle were all exceptional great beings. It wasn't an easy task to get a holy flower.

The battle for the first holy flower had already gotten three pre-saints and one Taigu remains killed. Bodies kept falling from the sky, and blood tainted the clouds. The fight was brutal.

"Let me help you, big brother!"

Sikong Two was worried about the safety of Sikong One. He mobilized all the Buddha Qi in his body, which condensed into a dragon shadow, which surged and gathered with Sikong One.

The two monks teamed up, which gave them incomparable power, knocking away all the creatures fighting for the holy flower. Only a few creatures were able to withstand that strike.

"Those two monks became stronger!" Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon said.

It had fought Sikong One and Sikong Two before. It used all its power, yet it was only at a slight advantage instead of defeating them.

Now, their cultivation had improved again, which made it more difficult for Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon to fight them.

Qitian Crown Prince frowned and whispered to himself, "I can't believe there're two beings this powerful following

Zhang Ruochen. Perhaps only super-first-tier great beings can stop them.”

In the end, Sikong One and Sikong Two defeated other competitors and seized the blue holy flower. They brought it back to the mountain top and gave it to Zhang Ruochen.

The battle for the first flower ended.

Eventually, Motian Crown Prince of the immortal vampire race killed one first-tier great being and four pre-saints, taking the white holy flower and becoming the biggest winner.

In the next half hour, a blue holy flower, a green holy flower, a red holy flower and a purple holy flower flew out from the underground, which led to four fights.

Sikong One and Sikong Two flew out toward the purple holy flower.

The holy flower carried grade-six saintly source liquids, emanating a rich fragrance. One look could trigger strong urges.

“You’ve taken a holy flower. Is that still not enough for you?”

Motian Crown Prince flapped the two pairs of flesh wings on his back. He flew incredibly fast and rushed to the front of Sikong One and Sikong Two, wielding his Emperor-killing Demonic Sword.

Sikong One and Sikong Two were stopped. Yellow Sky Crown Princess and Jingtian Crown Prince seized this chance and flew by the two monks, approaching the purple holy flower.

Two crown princes and one crown princess of the immortal vampires rushed toward the purple holy flower. Obviously, they were determined to get the sixth holy flower, and they would kill anyone who fought against them.

“There’re still three other holy flowers, yet you have to fight against us for the sixth purple holy flower. Do you really think we’re weak?” Sikong One yelled.

Motian Crown Prince sneered, “As long as we can get the holy flower, you are weak.”

When Sikong One and Sikong Two teamed up, they could indeed manifest power several times greater than their own, but Motian Crown Prince was no weak. He was ranked the third place on 'Half-Saint Outer Rank,' which meant he was almost a super-first-tier great being.

The two monks couldn't get anywhere near. They could only watch Yellow Sky Crown Princess and Jingtian Crown Prince getting closer to the sixth holy flower.

"Damn it."

Sun Dadi grabbed his iron rod and prepared to join the fight.

He was already upset that he couldn't manage to get the first holy flower, which meant this time, he had to seize the sixth holy flower from the immortal vampires at all costs.

Zhang Ruochen said, "There are way more immortal vampires than us. There's no need to confront them."

"Big brother, that holy flower isn't my only goal. I need to fight for the dignity of Sacred Sect. Immortal vampires stand against us on purpose. We must fight back."

Sun Dadi's eyes gleamed with fire, and the forces coming from him surged. He became larger and larger, turning into a Flame Giant Spirit Monkey.

The iron rod in his hands turned into a pillar, thick like a bucket.

"As long as you can seize a holy flower, you protect the dignity of Sacred Sect, no matter which flower you get. It can also make the immortal vampires jealous."

Zhang Ruochen still kept his calm. He pointed at the third holy flower and said, "The fight is the least intense there. You can have a try."

"I'll get that holy flower."

Murong Yue stepped forward and rushed toward the third holy flower.

Sun Dadi hesitated for a while, after which he took Zhang Ruochen's advice, rushing toward the third holy flower.

Four flowers showed up at the same time, and the third holy flower had the lowest value, so fewer monks aimed at that flower. It was likely for Murong Yue and Sun Dadi to get that flower as they teamed up.

At the other end, Yellow Sky Crown Princess and Jingtian Crown Prince defeated others and finally got to the sixth holy flower.

“So long as we get this holy flower, we immortal vampires will obtain two holy flowers in total.”

Jingtian Crown Prince looked excited. He reached out his hands and tried to take the sixth holy flower.

Hong Long.

A bony dragon tail extended from the space, splashing the body of Jingtian Crown Prince, knocking him away. He fell off the holy mountain and fell into the capital city dozens of miles away.

The creatures were all shocked as the bony dragon bone that hit Jingtian Crown Prince appeared out of nowhere. Nobody was aware of a great being hiding there.

It had to be an incredible creature given its exceptional disguise skills.

Where did it come from?

Zhang Ruochen looked to the bony dragon tail. He thought for a bit, then he smiled.

Hua La.

An enormous bony dragon rushed out of the space and arrived atop the holy mountain.

Han Qiu was dressed in black, standing on top of the bony dragon, giving out cold and dark power. Behind her was a team of Wuchang and corpse kings.

“These holy flowers and World Spirit are mine now.”

Han Qiu gave out terrifying evil forces, rushing toward the four holy flowers with the army of dead spirits following her, trying to get all four holy flowers.

Chapter 1144 - Set Off With One Touch

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Han Qiu had summoned her army from the netherworld. It was formed by Half-Saint dead souls. Their Death Qi hovered in the air, forming grayish-black clouds.

If there were only a few Half-Saints or a dozen Wuchangs and Corpse Kings, the competitors present could fend them off. However, this was an entire army with thousands of Wuchangs and Corpse Kings. They crushed forward, intimidating even the top-tier figures.

“She can actually summon a dead soul army. Is she some sovereign from the netherworld?”

“This woman has a unique power. It gives me a horribly evil feeling.”

...

All the competitors gasped and retreated slowly.

Only Sun Dadi, still in his mode of fury, didn't retreat. His huge eyes were like lanterns. Firelight poured out as he stared at the approaching Han Qiu. “Traitor,” he roared. “You finally appeared! Let's see if I can kill you.”

Zhang Ruochen had only told Murong Yue that Han Qiu had left the Sacred Sect. When Sun Dadi learned of this later, he hated Han Qiu. He felt that she was ungrateful.

Boom, boom.

Sun Dadi rushed out quickly. He waved his metal staff, cutting down, sweeping to the side, or striking. The Wuchangs and

Corpse Kings all exploded into ghostly fog or bone dust.

Han Qiu rolled her eyes in disdain. “You?”

She reached out, fingers moving. A black vortex appeared in her palm. It grew bigger and bigger until the space above Saint Mountain started spinning too.

The black vortex swept Sun Dadi in. The powerful force quickly made him lose control of his body.

Boom!

Han Qiu snapped her fingers and the black vortex shattered. Sun Dadi transformed into a streak of light. He flew out, hitting the side of Saint Mountain. A large portion of the wall caved in.

“Zhang Ruochen, you better control your followers. If you dare offend me again, I’ll squeeze his head in.”

Han Qiu had a sharp aura. She jutted out her snow-white chin and stared straight at Zhang Ruochen.

Everyone present was shocked. Earlier, they’d witnessed how strong Sun Dadi was. He was even stronger than the typical top-tier figure, but he was like a child against this woman clad in black. He couldn’t even fight back.

This woman in black with evil Qi was probably similar to a super-top-tier figure.

“Was she once Zhang Ruochen’s follower?”

“Such a powerful figure would never submit to anyone. She would definitely betray.”

“Zhang Ruochen really has a lot of talents beside him. Each one has the abilities to become a Saint King.”

...

Zhang Ruochen had Sikong Two dig Sun Dadi out of the mud. Sun Dadi was very strong. He only had some scratches, but it was fine.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes fell upon Han Qiu with an odd gaze. Even with his cultivation, he couldn’t see Han Qiu’s level

clearly. The Form of Darkness and Dark Way truly became stranger and stranger.

The four saint flowers had all been taken by Han Qiu. No super-top-tier figure attacked this entire time. No one wished to offend a strong enemy at this critical point.

Han Qiu collected the four saint flowers. She looked at Zhang Ruochen arrogantly, wanting to find regret in his face. However, Zhang Ruochen was as indifferent as ever. He didn't think Han Qiu snatching the four saint flowers was anything special.

Zhang Ruochen! Zhang Ruochen! Han Qiu thought. Huang Yanchen will only drag you down. She can't help you at all, but you chose her. You are destined to be a failure.

At that moment, Huang Yanchen, Qing Mo, Blackie and Princess White Li climbed Saint Mountain, grouping with Zhang Ruochen and the others.

The once-lively capital below the mountain was now a sea of fire. Scalding lava swallowed the entire ancient city. The cracks on the ground grew bigger. It was hard to find another living creature.

“We put some of the natives into the scroll world, but most of them died tragically. We tried our best.”

Huang Yanchen handed the Universe Spiritual Map to Zhang Ruochen and immediately sensed two gazes filled with animosity. They came from Han Qiu, standing above the bone dragon's head, and Princess Moran behind Zhang Ruochen.

Han Qiu bit her lip, cold light emitting from her eyes. With her current cultivation, she was confident in defeating Huang Yanchen and erasing her past humiliation. She could make Zhang Ruochen see who was qualified to become the crown princess.

Princess Moran wasn't only staring at Huang Yanchen with animosity. Her eyes were also locked onto the Universe Spiritual Map. Earlier, she'd personally seen Huang Yanchen and the others send many natives into it. It was strange, but she was also curious.

It was only a map scroll. How could it fit so many people? Could it be a spatial treasure like the Gold Light Ribbon? But living beings couldn't survive inside spatial treasures at all. They would die quickly.

After hypothesizing, Princess Moran suspected that they collected the cultivators of the Blue Dragon Dynasty to collect their blood and souls. As an elite of the Blue Dragon Dynasty, Princess Moran was naturally furious. She couldn't control her emotions.

Sikong One felt the animosity from her and quickly explained, "Amitabha! Princess, please do not worry. We are saving them. They're living happily in another world now."

Princess Moran smiled thinly and stiffly. It was clear that she didn't believe him.

Huang Yanchen was curious. "Who is she?"

Sikong One's heart jumped. He felt that his chance had finally come, so he quickly said before Zhang Ruochen could speak, "This is Princess Moran of the Blue Dragon Dynasty. I think that her talent is extraordinary, so I wish to take her as a disciple and teach her Buddhist techniques. However... Senior Uncle seems to be interested in her."

After speaking, Sikong One quickly turned around. He didn't dare meet Zhang Ruochen's eyes.

"I see!"

Smiling, Huang Yanchen walked to Princess Moran. She studied the princess from her face to her feet, not missing a single detail.

Princess Moran held her breath, extremely nervous. Huang Yanchen's eyes were penetrative. Standing before her, Princess Moran was practically transparent and couldn't hide any secrets.

"Not bad," Huang Yanchen said to Zhang Ruochen. "She truly is a beauty. You have quite good taste."

As she spoke, she also used Spiritual Power to send a message to Zhang Ruochen. This woman has problems. She definitely

isn't a regular person. Her abilities might even be above yours. Be careful.

Zhang Ruochen also used Spiritual Power to send a secret message. Indeed, she definitely isn't a princess. She'll probably reveal herself when the World Spirit appears.

Since Zhang Ruochen was being careful, Huang Yanchen didn't say anything else.

"Qing Mo," Huang Yanchen said. "Watch her. If she dares to do anything, suppress her immediately."

Right now, Sun Dadi and Sikong One both guarded Princess Moran. Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen couldn't attack at all. If they did, they might cause an internal conflict. This was disadvantageous toward competing for the World Spirit.

Kaboom.

As the Saint Mountain shook violently, more saint flowers flew out of the ground. The seventh saint flower carried the Grade Seven Saintly Source Spring. It was like a black lotus and dozens of feet long. A huge beast carried the lotus and flew into the distance.

The eighth saint flower carried the Grade Eight Saintly Source Spring. It shone with golden light. Two spiritual cranes carried it and flew into the sky.

These two saint flowers both had shocking value. A large portion of top-tier figures went out to fight for them.

The savage beasts had their eyes on the seventh saint flower. The Rosefinch Fairy and Kun Prince led dozens of Taigu Remains forward and sent the other competitors flying.

There was another group of mutants that were also interested in the seventh flower. They became the savage beasts' biggest competitors.

The humans aimed for the eighth saint flower. Monk Lidi, Chi Wansui, and Qi Feiyu led them. The group formed by a dozen top-tier figures and Pre-Saints followed close behind.

Three crown princes and many strong cultivators of the Immortal Vampires started fighting with the humans.

This time, Han Qiu didn't act impulsively. The competition was very intense. Dozens of top-tier figures were fighting on the two battlefields. Even though she had the dead soul army, she wouldn't be in a good spot either.

Zhang Ruochen stopped Sikong One and Two from joining the fight. "The World Spirit will probably appear with the ninth saint flower. Don't join. Prepare for the battle. We must take the World Spirit no matter what."

When the eighth saint flower had appeared, Zhang Ruochen had sensed the faint aura of the World Spirit. That was why he'd made this guess.

Blackie lay down and pressed its ear to the ground. Listening closely with serious eyes, it added, "The World Spirit will indeed appear at the same time as the ninth saint flower."

Qitian Crown Prince, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, Xue Wuye, Emperor Tianming, Qiu Yu, and the four eight-dragon Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Void World all had that feeling.

Their eyes sharpened and their auras were completely different from before. They were like a sword about to be unsheathed.

Whoosh—

Qitian Crown Prince shone with blood-red light. The three pairs of blood wings flapped at once. With a whoosh, he rushed toward the ground in a streak of light.

"Stop him!" Wang Huanzhen, Heir of the Blue Dragon Void World, roared.

A humongous force of the Saintly Way poured out of him. It transformed into eight long blue dragon shadows. These eight were much stronger than the dragons of other eight-dragon Martial Saints. They seemed to be made out of bronze. When they flew, there were metallic clangs and many sparks.

Clearly, Wang Huanzhen was even stronger than super-top-tier figures. After all, they hadn't reached the Saint Realm, while Wang Huanzhen had.

Chapter 1145 - Kill Son of World

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Nobody expected Qitian Crown Prince to be bold enough to rush toward the underground. Is he trying to confront World Spirit directly?

It didn't matter whether he could succeed or not. Everyone agreed that he needed to be stopped.

Wang Huanzhen flew out first. He stepped on eight dragon shadows, and blue light came out of his body as he dived.

What was surprising was that a monk from the immortal vampire team who had passed two pre-saint trials flew straight toward Wang Huanzhen.

"You've overestimated yourself," Wang Huanzhen looked forward and yelled.

He took a deep breath which condensed a sharp blue blade, hitting the head of that second-trial pre-saint.

That second-trial pre-saint smiled wickedly, and he said something that confused everyone, "As long as I can kill you all, my death will not be worthless."

The body of that second-trial pre-saint made sizzling sounds. Blazing fire gushed out of his pores, and each inch of his skin turned gold, bulging at the same time.

"No! His lower abdomen is going to explode."

Wang Huanzhen's eyes glinted. It was too late for him to dodge it. He could only mobilize all the Holy Qi in his body and put his hands together.

“Shield!”

The eight dragon shadows integrated and flew back to the hands of Wang Huanzhen, forming an eight-dragon shield.

The destruction power from an exploding lower abdomen was terrific, which was devastating to an area of one hundred square miles. Even creatures under the state of saint might be killed.

“Spatial Mirror.”

Zhang Ruochen reached out his right hand and froze the space in front of him, which turned into a transparent mirror as if it were a spirit mirror.

Hong Long.

After the pre-saint exploded, the destruction power coming out of him spread everywhere. It was so forceful that even the sturdy holy mountain was leveled immediately. Many areas were even melted.

Creatures who hadn't performed their defense skills in time were all knocked away, and some of the weaker ones were killed on the spot.

The aboriginal monks from Blue Dragon Void World were all killed, aside from the four eight-dragon martial saints.

Several Taigu remains were also annihilated because they were too close to the explosion. The only thing left of them were skeletons, falling from the sky.

The space mirror condensed by Zhang Ruochen didn't only ward off the destructive power, but also threw the power back, hitting toward the third immortal vampire crown prince fighting for the third holy flower.

Motian Crown Prince stood in the sky and shot a glare at Zhang Ruochen. He wielded his Emperor-Killing Demonic Sword and slashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Peng.

The light pillar formed by the destruction force broke the Sword Qi from Emperor-Killing Demonic Sword, hitting

Motian Crown Prince, knocking him to the sky.

Seizing this chance, Monk Lidi, Chi Wansui and Qi Feiyu fought off the other immortal monks and seized the eighth holy flower.

The destructive power from the explosion of the pre-saint withered away.

Wang Huanzhen crawled out of the ruins with dust all over his body. Both his hair and clothes were burnt to ashes. He only had bronze armor on his body.

The bronze armor was called ‘Blue Dragon Emperor Armor,’ which was a holy device with the best defense power in Blue Dragon Dynasty.

Because of the Blue Dragon Emperor Armor, Wang Huanzhen wasn’t even injured standing at the center of the explosion. He just looked a bit awkward.

“After I get World Spirit, I’ll kill all you outer-realm demons.”

Wang Huanzhen cursed and rushed to the underground.

At this moment, a trace of blue light shot out of the central area formed by the remains of the collapsed holy mountain, piercing through the dark clouds and the atmosphere, extending out of Blue Dragon Void World.

Hua!

More blue light was shot out from underground.

Qitian Crown Prince hit the mud and bounced by after being attacked by the blue light.

He was carrying God-killing Cross Shield, so he wasn’t severely injured. He quickly balanced himself again and stood firm on the ground. There were bruises on him. He said, “The world spirit is already walking toward destruction, yet it’s still so powerful.”

Obviously, instead of bringing the World Spirit under his control, Qitian Crown Prince was knocked back by the World Spirit.

World Spirit was the master of a world, so it naturally had a tremendous amount of power.

However, Blue Dragon Void World was ending, which meant its World Spirit was also frail now.

Yet it was shown that even the weakest World Spirit was very difficult to suppress, unless its approval was granted.

Wang Huanzhen guffawed, “I am the Son of World. The World Spirit will only approve of me. You outer-realm demons are not going to stand a chance bringing the World Spirit under your control.”

Qitian Crown Prince looked disdainful. He looked to Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Emperor Tianming, Qiu Yu and Zhang Ruochen, and said, “Let’s team up and kill the Son of World first, then we’ll compete for the World Spirit, shall we?”

“Okay.”

Emperor Tianming answered first. His eyes started to gleam with light, attacking Wang Huanzhen.

“Then let’s slay the Son of World first so that he won’t be in our way.”

Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon wielded his dragon bone whip and cracked the space around him.

Qitian Crown Prince jumped two hundred and fifty feet high, grabbing his God-killing Cross Shield, smashing downwards.

Qiu Yu stepped on the ground, and a fiery godly tree grew. Dozens of branches swept through and left wide cracks on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen looked up and saw cracks in the space. The land was also disintegrating. He thought, The space structure of Blue Dragon Void World became more fragile, and it might crumble at any time.

Zhang Ruochen also performed his attacking techniques. He triggered Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, wielding his Abyss Ancient Sword.

No wonder Wang was the first being in Blue Dragon Void World, he was indeed incredibly powerful. He also had Blue Dragon Emperor Armor to protect himself, so he couldn't be defeated.

However, the five masters who attacked him were all peerless talents from Kunlun's Field. Even with his power, he was still being suppressed.

Pu Chi.

The branches of Fiery Godly Tree swept across Wang Huanzhen, knocking him away, spinning him in the air.

Abyss Ancient Sword hit the back of Wang Huanzhen, clashing with the Blue Dragon Emperor Armor. The shock waves knocked Wang Huanzhen to the sky.

Wang was famed in Blue Dragon Void World for being invincible. He was definitely a legend.

However, this legend, who was called Son of World, was kicked like a soccer ball. He couldn't look more miserable.

If it wasn't for his Blue Dragon Emperor Armor, he would have been killed by the five masters.

“We need to protect the Son of World. We can't let those outer-realm demons kill him.”

The other three martial saints from the aboriginal human beings also joined the fight, trying to save Wang Huanzhen.

“Die.”

Qitian Crown Prince was extremely aggressive. He used all his strength to wield his God-killing Cross Shield.

Peng.

The oldest out of the three martial saints, Red Light Martial Saint, was knocked to the ground, and his bones were cracked at the same time.

After an instant, an immense amount of saintly blood gushed out.

Xuantian Martial Saint and Ningjing Martial Saint performed sky and land sword formation, but they still couldn't last for too long. After three breaths, the two martial saints who used to be a perfect couple were killed by Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Qiu Yu. Even their saintly bodies were burnt to ashes.

Even the three eight-dragon martial saints were nothing compared to the five masters. They were like stones being thrown into the ocean, making nothing but tiny ripples.

All the other creatures were holding their breath while they looked on. They now realized the gap between them and the super-first-tier great beings was inconceivably large.

Of course, the three eight-dragon martial saints didn't die in vain, as they had still bought some time for Wang Huanzhen.

Wang Huanzhen barely managed to stand. He stood in the air a hundred feet above the ground. He clenched his teeth as he felt both shameful and infuriated.

“World Spirit, I hereby summon thee! Combine with me and kill the demons!”

Wang Huanzhen slashed his left wrist, and he started to bleed.

Some of the saintly blood fell on the ground and merged with the mud.

Some saintly blood rose and turned into blood-red mist.

Ao!

A rumbling dragon sound came out from underground. It echoed in the sky and land and was transmitted to the universe, shaking the asteroids.

Fortunately, the creatures in Blue Dragon Void World were all top-tier great beings, otherwise, that sound alone could kill lower-class half saints.

The blue light became brighter. A powerful force rushed to the ground, gushing out of the surface and flying toward Wang Huanzhen.

World Spirit showed up!

It was a moderate-sized blue dragon which was only eight feet long. It looked as if it were made of jade. Each of its scales was delicate and mysterious. It seemed like the embodiment of the natural order.

The eyes of all creatures gleamed when they saw World Spirit. It was more exciting than a naked and exquisite beauty.

“We can’t let that Son of World merge with World Spirit, otherwise, we’ll all die here.”

Emperor Tianming performed an ancient extreme speed technique, racing toward Wang Huanzhen like a trace of white light and hitting his chest. He yelled, “Sky-killing Ten-level Force.”

Peng Peng!

In less than half a second, the palms of Emperor Tianming performed ten print techniques, hitting the chest of Wang Huanzhen.

This was a martial technique akin to ‘the Kung-fu of In-between,’ yet it was much more brilliant than that. The force exerted could easily go through Blue Dragon Emperor Armor.

The organs in Wang Huanzhen’s body were all crushed. He was knocked away to the outer sky. No one knew whether he survived it or not.

Chapter 1146 - Sky Upended, World Ended

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Emperor Tianming's control over power had reached a peak level. Not a bit of power was wasted. This gave off a strange, miraculous, and amazing feeling.

After he sent Wang Huanzhen flying, he used a strange step technique and formed an odd arc. He flew toward the World Spirit that had transformed into a small blue dragon.

“If you want the World Spirit, get past me first.”

Qitian Crown Prince was very aggressive. He transformed into a horrible demon and slowly lifted the God-Killing Cross Shield. The shield grew larger and larger until it was hundreds of feet tall. Thousands of bolts of lightning surged out, combining with the cross.

Sizzle, sizzle.

The God-Killing Cross Shield pressed down. It fell down on Emperor Tianming who was approaching the World Spirit, exploding with destructive might.

Looking at the shield that was pressing down, even a Pre-Saint would be terrified, feeling that he was insignificant.

Even if Emperor Tianming continued going and caught the World Spirit, he would still be heavily injured by the God-Killing Cross Shield. He wouldn't be able to take the World Spirit away.

He was forced to stop. His long black hair flew up. Pushing up, the huge mountain behind him rose up like bamboo shoots

after a rain. They rose thousands of feet to face the God-Killing Cross Shield.

Boom, boom.

The space between Emperor Tianming and Qitian Crown Prince popped and exploded. Thousands of pounds of huge boulders dropped from the sky.

The two were equally powerful. It was difficult to produce a winner in a short time. They stopped each other from approaching the World Spirit.

Roar.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon yelled. Boundless barren Qi surged out of it. Its body quickly swelled, going into its true form. The miles-long-dragon was like a black mountain range.

“The World Spirit belongs to the dragons. Anyone who competes with me is looking for death.”

The huge dragon flew across the sky, lifting a strong gale.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon flew above the World Spirit with unprecedented speed. It extended a talon and clawed downward, covering the World Spirit.

Xue Wuye stood in the wild wind. Hands behind his back, he stood up straight. His temperament grew sharper as he uttered two words. “Sword Six.”

Whoosh!

Seven saint swords flew out of him. The Sword Qi became one with his sword intent. At this moment, Xue Wuye was no different from a horrible Sword Saint. He seemed to be the physical incarnate of the sword.

The seven swords and one man transformed into one streak of light. It crashed against the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon’s claw with extreme speed.

Poof.

Even the scales on the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon couldn’t stop Sword Six. Its claws were pierced by the sword

light. Dragon blood gushed out, dyeing the sky red.

The Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon lost the best timing to capture the World Spirit. “Ancient Dragon Scale,” it roared in anger.

One scale on its stomach was twice as big as the other scales. Rings of black light shone from it as it fell from its body.

The Ancient Dragon Scale had specks of golden light. An ancient aura flooded out of it. It was unknown how many ages it had existed for.

Whoosh!

White light flew out once again. A patch of Sword Qi pierced the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon’s forehead. The Ancient Dragon Scale flew out, crashing against the white sword light. Like a spear hitting the shield, it produced a deafening sound.

Boom.

The white sword light changed its direction. The Ancient Dragon Scale did as well. One attacking and one defending, they fought intensely. Dense sword light and soundwaves filled the sky.

Only the shockwaves could kill a Half-Saint.

At the most critical moment, every creature used their full power and all their trump cards. They didn’t hold back.

Qiu Yu glanced at Zhang Ruochen. Controlling the Divine Flame Tree, he made the branches stretch toward the World Spirit like vines. The fire from the divine tree wasn’t normal. It was the Fire of Destruction and as horrible as the Wuliang Divine Fire.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to compete with Qiu Yu personally, but he resisted the urge. Logic told him that getting the World Spirit was most important now.

“Qing Mo, stop him. I’ll get the World Spirit.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move and disappeared from the spot.

Qing Mo spun and transformed into a dark sacred vine. She whipped toward the Divine Flame Tree that Qiu Yu had casted. At the same time, a mass of Wuliang Divine Fire surged forward, crashing against the Fire of Destruction.

The two types of fire that could burn Saints clashed, turning this area into a sea of fire.

While fighting against Xue Wuye, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon roared, “Beast Kings of the savage beasts, listen. If you don’t wish to die, hurry and leave the Blue Dragon Void World. This battle isn’t for you.”

Qitian Crown Prince and Chi Wansui both issued similar orders. They made the Immortal Vampires and human cultivators leave.

Other than the top figures, all other creatures flew out of the Blue Dragon Void World’s atmosphere and into the universe. Since they were already Pre-Saints, they could fly short distances in the dark, cold, and deathly universe.

As for traveling between stars, they still weren’t powerful enough.

“Go to the outside world and take up a small star,” Huang Yanchen said to Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess White Li and Sun Dadi. “Be prepared to cooperate with Zhang Ruochen and me at any time.”

Huang Yanchen had Qing Mo go with them as well, mostly to look after Princess Moran.

“Second Junior Brother and I should stay to help Senior Uncle with the World Spirit,” Sikong One said. “Princess Yanchen, you should leave the Blue Dragon Void World.”

He doubted Huang Yanchen’s abilities. He thought that she might not be able to help Zhang Ruochen and might even bring him down.

“We’re going!” Qing Mo’s hands transformed into dark vines. She swept up Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess White Li, Sun Dadi, and Princess Moran, and flew out of the world.

Blackie stayed. It looked at Huang Yanchen suspiciously and said, "You should leave too. With my help, Zhang Ruochen will definitely be able to get the World Spirit."

Huang Yanchen ignored Blackie. In a gust of cold wind, she flew toward the World Spirit. Zhang Ruochen stepped out from somewhere in the void and appeared very close to the World Spirit.

Faced with the World Spirit's strong power, Zhang Ruochen didn't show any fear. He took a big step forward.

"Zhang Ruochen!" a feminine cry sounded above his head.

Han Qiu stood on the bone dragon's head. She was as cold and beautiful as a snow lotus. Behind her, the dead soul army was organized in a formation. Death Qi above the formation formed the apparition of a huge black city.

She'd used some strange power to consolidate the powers of the dead souls.

Zhang Ruochen looked at her. "Can we not throw a tantrum? I must take the World Spirit. It is very important to me. If you get in my way, we will completely be against each other from now on."

"Do you think I'm afraid?" Han Qiu laughed coldly.

Just then, Chi Wansui, Qi Feiyu, Ouyang Huan, the Rosefinch Fairy, the Kun Prince, and the strong cultivators of the Immortal Vampires hurried over to the World Spirit.

Han Qiu's cold eyes that stared at Zhang Ruochen showed some hesitation. Biting her lip, she said, "This time, treat it as me repaying you."

With that, Han Qiu steered the bone dragon toward the approaching group. She pointed forward. The dead soul army behind her attacked. They lifted up the huge black city and threw it down.

An attack from thousands of Half-Saint dead souls together was obviously terrifying. Even with Chi Wansui and the Rosefinch Fairy's cultivations, they were still restricted. They couldn't charge forward for now.

“So what if you can summon dead souls? This isn’t anything. It can stop them but not me.”

Stepping on a fiery cloud, Qiu Yu raised his arms. Blinding firelight was released from his palms. One could vaguely see a fist-sized phoenix being born out of thin air.

“Fire of the Phoenix.”

With a phoenix’s chirp, the entire sky and earth shook violently. Qiu Yu released the phoenix as if it was a dove.

The fire phoenix collided with the black city. A shattering sound rang out. In a breath’s time, the city was burned to black wisps of smoke. The dead soul army suffered great losses too. Both Wuchangs and Corpse Kings were turned to smoke if they touched the Fire of the Phoenix.

Zhang Ruochen lifted the Universe Spiritual Map with his hands. Activating the power of the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree, he tried for the World Spirit with all his might. However, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree’s power was mostly inside the scroll world. Only a bit could be guided outside. It couldn’t take over the Blue Dragon Void World’s World Spirit.

Roar!

The World Spirit let out many earth-shaking roars. It fought against the Universe Spiritual Map, trying to escape. This was a battle between two World Spirits. It was very dangerous. If Zhang Ruochen wasn’t careful, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree might be taken over by the Blue Dragon Void World’s World Heir instead.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was collecting the World Spirit, Emperor Tianming and Qitian Crown Prince separated immediately. They stopped fighting and hurried over.

“Zhang Ruochen, your death date is here!” Qitian Crown Prince yelled.

Four beams of light shot out of Emperor Tianming’s eyes. They traveled past hundreds of miles to hit Zhang Ruochen.

While collecting the World Spirit, Zhang Ruochen controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword to fend off Emperor Tianming’s

attack.

“Zhang Ruochen, I’ll take over the Universe Spiritual Map!” Blackie said. “You go stop them. If you can fend them off for a while, I’ll be able to take the World Spirit.”

Blackie took the Universe Spiritual Map from Zhang Ruochen’s hands and continued to collect the World Spirit.

“You want to stop me from taking the World Spirit? It’s not that easy! First let me destroy the world and then I’ll fight you to the end.”

After Blackie took the Universe Spiritual Map, Zhang Ruochen was finally free. He had a powerful temperament. He grabbed with both hands and split apart, tearing the space before him. He created a huge crack that connected the sky with the earth.

Whoosh!

The next moment, the Blue Dragon Void World began caving in even faster. Various void spatial cracks formed one after another. They swallowed the earth. At the same time, some structures that couldn’t be swallowed formed irregular stars and the beginnings of lower-level Void Worlds.

The entire Blue Dragon Void World turned to turbid chaos. Danger lurked everywhere.

At that time, even if a powerful Saint broke in, he might die in the empty void.

Chapter 1147 - Outer-World Hunting

Chapter 1147: Outer-World Hunting

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

The upper-class void world was enormous. It was like a continent located in the dark universe.

At this moment, this upper-class void world was walking to destruction, making rumbling sounds. The energy exerted from the destruction was terrifying, which was transmitted to the astral space, trembling the asteroids nearby.

They were power ripples that human power couldn't resist.

Qitian Crown Prince flew in the air, staring at Zhang Ruochen below him. His aggressiveness was simmering. The God-killing Cross Shield gave out destructive power ripples.

However, the space started to crack around him, and some space structure collapsed, turning into chaos.

“Retreat.”

Qitian Crown Prince suppressed his urge to fight and gave an order.

And then, first-tier great beings from the immortal vampire race all left Blue Dragon Void World and flew to outer space.

Even Qitian Crown Prince didn't dare stay in Blue Dragon Void World anymore.

This place had become chaotic, and in the next tens of thousands of years, or even hundreds of thousands of years, it would stay like this and become a forbidden area in the universe.

Qiu Yu looked hesitant, but he still wanted to rush out to stop Zhang Ruochen from seizing World Spirit. However. As he saw Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and Emperor Tianming

flee from Blue Dragon Void World, he stopped hesitating. He flew toward an asteroid close to Blue Dragon Void World like a trace of fiery light, getting through the chaotic atmosphere.

Zhang Ruochen shattered the sky and landed to push them out of the collapsing Blue Dragon Void World to buy time to suppress World Spirit.

He was a descendant of Time and Space, so he could survive even in the chaotic world.

The land under Zhang Ruochen, Blackie and Huang Yanchen disintegrated and became an embryonic form of a lower-class void world.

This lower-class void world hadn't been completed yet, so the space structure wasn't steady at all. There was lightning everywhere. The space kept cracking and healing, and was full of dangers.

“This land doesn't have the potential to become a lower-class void world. It is going to crumble a second time soon, so we need to leave instantly.”

Zhang Ruochen reached a conclusion after observation.

Zhang Ruochen felt grave dangers coming. He kept exerting Holy Qi and infusing in Universe Spiritual Map, suppressing World Spirit with Blackie.

Universe Spiritual Map became larger and larger. Green branches extended out of the map, enveloping the World Map in Blue Dragon Void World.

They too were fighting. Natural orders gushed out and clashed with each other, forming circles of space ripples.

Qiu Yu stood on an asteroid eight hundred feet long, staring at the broken chaotic world below him, sensing a bizarre force.

He sensed an unprecedented threat from that force.

“Zhang Ruochen?”

Qiu Yu shook his head. He could tell that the threat didn't come from Zhang Ruochen.

This wasn't the first time he'd met Zhang Ruochen. Though Zhang Ruochen was also forceful and gave him pressure, he'd never had the soul-shaking pressure he just did.

"It seems that there's a huge secret behind Zhang Ruochen."

Qiu Yu's eyes gleamed.

World Spirit of Blue Dragon Void World was too frail to take the attacks from Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

"Zhang Ruochen, it'll take all my power to suppress World Spirit of Blue Dragon Void World. Before I can completely suppress it, Universe Spiritual Map will be closed. Care about yourself then."

The sound of Divine Sky-Connecting Tree was transmitted into Zhang Ruochen's mind.

"How long is it going to be closed?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Divine Sky-Connecting Tree didn't answer and got back to Scroll World.

It wasn't easy for Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to completely suppress World Spirit in Blue Dragon Void World.

"The World Spirit of Blue Dragon Void World is pretty weak. It should be easy to suppress it. I'll go help it."

Blackie rushed into Scroll World like a trace of black light before the space door closed.

Zhang Ruochen put back his Universe Spiritual Map into his lower abdomen. He didn't feel happy for taking World Spirit. Instead, he had a sense of danger and said to Huang Yanchen, "Those great beings are all waiting outside the world. It won't be easy for us to get out. I should've brought you into Scroll World first."

"I'm not going to stay in Scroll World. We'll fight together no matter how hard it's going to be. We can fight our way out if we stick together."

Huang Yanchen held the holy sword and looked firm like iron.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Huang Yanchen. He felt like he was seeing Chi Yao from her.

Huang Yanchen looked gentle and said, "I've studied Yin Yi Nine Sword. We can perform Yin and Yang Sword Formation."

"Um...?" Zhang Ruochen said.

Yin Ying Sword Formation was called the best two-person sword formation, which was highly confidential in Taichi Sect.

Emperor Ming used to be a disciple under Yin and Yang Sect, and that was how he learnt Yin and Yang Sword Formation and taught Zhang Ruochen that.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised that Huang Yanchen had learned the Yin Nine Sword.

Huang Yanchen continued, "Empress taught me Yin Nine Sword before."

Zhang Ruochen felt a bit irritated. After a short while, he said, "Let's try it."

Yin Nine Sword and Yang Nine Sword required a couple who had a deep emotional bond to practice together, as that was how they could comprehend the ingenuity and integrate the sword techniques and sword formation.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen had never practiced Yin and Yang Sword Formation together. Even if they were well-coordinated, they might not be able to truly utilize the power of the sword formation.

Which meant that using Yin and Yang Sword Formation would be a burden, and it was better for Zhang Ruochen to fight the enemies by himself.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Huang Yanchen's hands and performed Luan Phoenix Deity Print Speed, travelling among the space cracks, getting out of Blue Dragon Void World instantly.

Zhang Ruochen didn't use the power of the saint decree, as he could be as fast as creatures under state of saint using that. Qitian Crown Prince, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon, Qiu Yu and the others must have similar valuables. He couldn't escape them.

“Look, Zhang Ruochen is here now!”

“Stop him! We can’t let him get away!”

“He should’ve taken World Spirit now. Everyone, kill Zhang Ruochen and get the World Spirit.”

...

The masters standing on asteroid aerolites flew out and tried to stop Zhang Ruochen.

At this moment, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi and the others were all standing on an asteroid three thousand miles away. By fully utilizing their sight, they could see the blurry shapes of Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

Sikong Two had the best mind power, which could stretch thousands of miles away. He transmitted a trace of his mind power, telling Zhang Ruochen where he was.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen immediately flew toward the asteroid where people from Sacred Sect stayed.

The six blood-red wings of Qitian Crown Prince became enormous. He flapped his wings and manifested terrific speed, quickly approaching Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

When he was only one hundred miles away from Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, he wielded his God-killing Cross Shield, which spun in the astral space like a meteor.

In another direction, Qiu Yu was also approaching Zhang Ruochen, which was why Zhang Ruochen chose not to confront Qitian Crown Prince directly, as he didn’t want to be encircled by several great beings.

“Shua!”

Zhang Ruochen performed great spatial move and vanished. He teleported himself to another spot. Not only did he dodge God-killing Cross Shield, he also got farther away from Qitian Crown Prince.

The universe space was vast. The monks from all the powers were all at least one thousand miles away from each other.

They flew in the cold and dark space, and they looked slow, like snails, from afar.

It was very difficult for them to encircle Zhang Ruochen.

However, with time going by, masters from all other powers kept approaching Zhang Ruochen, and they were now all three hundred miles away from him. All they needed was Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons to make effective attacks.

“Fight.”

Zhang Ruochen prepared to make a sortie. He chose a direction and flew forward.

There were more than ten immortal vampire great beings in that direction, and the weakest among them were pre-saints.

They were standing in a curve, only five hundred feet away from each other.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen rush toward them, an ancient immortal vampire monk laughed with a hoarse sound. “Die.”

That immortal vampire was a blood saint named Yi Gu. He was already a pinnacle lower-class saint who had been using techniques to suppress his power below the state of saint.

Hong!

Yi Gu Blood Saint opened his arms and broke the seal in his body. His state-of-saint power burst out, and rich Holy Qi condensed into a blood sea under his feet. He yelled, “Finally, I can utilize the power of the state of saint. Amazing! Zhang Ruochen, did you come here to die?”

Now, everyone had already left Blue Dragon Void World, so even Yi Gu Blood Saint had recovered his cultivation at state of saint, he wouldn't shatter the space.

“Slay.”

Yi Gu Blood Saint carried a blood blade which was a Thousand-patterns saint weapon. He triggered the three thousand inscriptions in the blood blade and Destruction of Thousand-patterns, slashing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Yi Gu Blood Saint was a real saint, and now, after the restraints on his power were gone, the power from his attack was tremendous.

Zhang Ruochen was already located by the blade Qi, which meant he couldn't dodge it anymore. He had to fight.

Zhang Ruochen triggered the three thousand inscriptions in his Abyss Ancient Sword and slayed forward.

The blade and the sword hit each other, and two destructions of thousand-patterns clashed with each other, shaking loose the other immortal vampire great beings.

Both of them bounced back at this confrontation.

“That Zhang Ruochen is indeed a great threat to immortal vampires. He's only a level-nine half saint, but his power is already this impressive.” Yi Gu Blood Saint's arms started to bleed, and the blood started to drip.

He originally thought that he could easily suppress Zhang Ruochen after regaining the power under state of saint, but it turned out that Yi Gu Blood Saint had underestimated the power of super-first-tier great beings.

Certainly, that blade from Yi Gu Blood Saint had helped a lot in stalling Zhang Ruochen, dragging him into the encirclement.

Behind Zhang Ruochen were Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon and other saints who had regained their cultivation and caught up with him.

Huang Yanchen said again, “Let's perform Yin and Yang Sword Formation! The only way we can kill that immortal vampire saint before other great beings catch up with him is to perform our sword formation, otherwise, we'll be at a huge disadvantage.”

Chapter 1148 - Empress Moran

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“You won’t be able to escape even if you use the sword formation. We Immortal Vampires will definitely receive the Blue Dragon Void World’s World Spirit.”

Blood Saint Yigu smiled with his sword horizontal before him. His Blood Qi grew thicker.

He was indeed a bit weaker than Zhang Ruochen. If they continued fighting, he might lose. However, it wasn’t hard for him to delay Zhang Ruochen for a bit. By the time Qitian Crown Prince and the other Immortal Vampires hurried over, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to keep going.

“Use the formation,” Zhang Ruochen said.

He wasn’t confident in releasing the power of the Yin and Yang Sect sword formation with Huang Yanchen, but he had no other choice now.

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen’s bodies shook. They flew to the left and right with 300 feet between them. Immediately after, they began practicing the Yang Nine Sword and Yin Nine Sword. Their sword intents transformed into beams of light that flooded out.

Blood Saint Yigu was calm. “In ten more breaths’ time,” he proclaimed, “the strong figures of the Immortal Vampires will all be here. What is the point of your desperate actions?”

But gradually, a serious look appeared in Blood Saint Yigu's eyes. He felt stronger and stronger pressure coming from Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

What were they going to do?

The sword intent coming from these two quickly intertwined. A huge Taichi symbol appeared beneath their feet. Zhang Ruochen was split into nine copies, Huang Yanchen as well.

The next moment, 18 figures appeared at once, dancing with their swords on the Taichi symbol. The symbol's shockwaves traveled very far. Soon, Blood Saint Yigu was swept into it.

The Yin and Yang Sect used people as the foundation and the sky and earth as two compasses. Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen really had great chemistry now, so they were able to reach the state of "sword intent connection."

"This is...the Yin and Yang Sect Sword Formation..."

It was many times more powerful than the Heaven and Earth Sword Formation of Martial Saint Xuantian and Ningjing. Blood Saint Yigu had lived for almost 500 years. He'd obviously heard of its name before.

Sensing danger, he didn't hesitate and flew back with his wings out.

"Want to escape?"

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen raised their swords at almost the same time. Controlling all the Spiritual Qi in the surroundings, guiding it to their saint swords, they cut down in the direction that Blood Saint Yigu ran toward.

Whoosh—

The brilliant light was like a bright moon. It flew toward Blood Saint Yigu, who was running for his life.

Blood Saint Yigu felt strong danger. He used his secret technique for escape. His blood burned and his speed multiplied many times.

I have to use my secret escape technique for two juniors. This is so embarrassing.

He'd already flown for dozens of miles, but he still felt the terrifying Sword Qi chasing after him. Cold sweat rolled down his back.

Ugh, I can't escape even with my secret escape technique.

All his meridians bulged, making him extremely menacing. He turned quickly and brought his blood sword down.

Boom. Blood Saint Yigu's sword cracked into metal shards. A crescent Sword Qi sliced Blood Saint Yigu in half as if cutting tofu.

The Sword Qi carried both Yin and Yang power. It burned half of Blood Saint Yigu's body while freezing the other half. He didn't die. Instead, he cried out as he suffered pain like he'd never felt before.

"I have already formed a saintly source and cultivated saintly blood. My life's level has far surpassed you two. My vitality obviously can't be...imagined...by you mortals... You can't kill me...cough..."

Blood Saint Yigu roared. Despite using all his might, he still couldn't reconsolidate his body. His voice grew weaker and weaker.

"I...cannot accept this..."

A moment later, the upper half of his body was burned to the bone while the lower half of his body was forever frozen. This extremely powerful Saint couldn't escape death.

Many creatures were shocked at this scene. After all, a Blood Saint at his full power was at the top of the lower Saint Realm. But he couldn't stop Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen's one strike. This was terrifying.

"Together, we'll suppress those two."

Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, the Sky-Swallowing Demonic Dragon, and Emperor Tianming were all within 100 miles. They allied with some other Saints and attacked at once.

The Taichi print spun quickly. The power it released grew stronger and stronger. The nearby stars were attracted as well.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen dipped forward. They sent forward the Sword Qi, Spiritual Qi, and Taichi print made of stars.

Kaboom!

The Taichi print was miles long. Within it, the Yin and Yang forces spun rapidly. It blocked all the powers and continued flying.

“It’s only a sword formation, but it can utilize the power of the stars. It is terrifyingly strong.”

Seeing the approaching Taichi print, Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, Emperor Tianming and the others all grew serious. They used all their Consummate Skills, fending off the Taichi print with all their might.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen didn’t continue using the Yin and Yang Sword Formation. From Zhang Ruochen’s calculations, that last hit had used up 70 or 80 percent of Huang Yanchen’s Holy Qi. It was difficult to maintain it.

“Go.”

Hitting out a beam of white Sword Qi to form a bridge, he held Huang Yanchen and used the Great Spatial Move. He sped toward the star with Sikong One and Sikong Two.

Boom.

Dozens of strong cultivators shattered the Taichi print. They continued after Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. Other than them, there were hundreds of strong cultivators from various races. They also flew quickly from all directions.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Clear Day Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He shot while flying forward.

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

Shooting three arrows in a row, Zhang Ruochen killed three Beast Kings who were 100 miles away.

Two 30-meter-long fiery wings sprouted from Qiu Yu's back. He chased after Zhang Ruochen, saying, "Zhang Ruochen, if you give me the World Spirit, I can spare your life. I treasure talents and don't wish you to die within these stars."

Zhang Ruochen laughed. "Those are big words. You want to spare someone's life, but can you save your own?"

"To you, there's no other choice today," Qiu Yu said. "You can only choose to believe me."

Zhang Ruochen paused and looked back. Qiu Yu thought that he'd decided to give him the World Spirit for a chance to live. His lips curled up into a soft smile. "You've made a wise... choice..."

The shadows of a blue dragon and elephant emerged on Zhang Ruochen's arms. He pulled back the Clear Sky Bow. Aiming at Qiu Yu, he shot the arrow. He used all his might in this.

The Shining Sun Arrow broke through the air with a deafening roar. Dozens of thick lightning bolts intertwined on the arrow. In an instant, it was before Qiu Yu.

This Shining Sun Arrow was much stronger than Qitian Crown Prince's. Qiu Yu didn't dare to catch it. He had to dodge to the right. The arrow scraped past him and cut off a strand of hair.

Poof, poof.

The Shining Sun Arrow pierced the body of a Vampire Pre-Saint behind Qiu Yu. Then it flew back into Zhang Ruochen's hands.

Qiu Yu's expression turned cold. "You will regret taking advantage of my nice side. You're the one searching for death. Don't blame me."

In the vast starry sky, Qing Mo, Princess White Li, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess Moran, and Sun Dadi stood on a star. They looked at the distant shocking battles with worry.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen were chased after by hundreds of strong cultivators. This included Saints too. Many

times, they were almost surrounded but still managed to create an opening and rush out.

Dozens of corpses floated in the universe. The weakest ones were still Pre-Saints who'd gone through one trial already.

After the endless fighting, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen were also injured. Their bodies were bloody.

"No, I must go help them," Qing Mo said anxiously. Ignoring Huang Yanchen's orders, she stopped guarding Princess Moran and undid the seal within her. Using her Saint Realm cultivation, she rushed out toward 500 miles away.

Qing Mo's true form was a saintly vine that had grown for 40,000 years. Her cultivation was extremely high and had surpassed every lower Saint.

An odd smile appeared in Princess Moran's eyes. "Unseal," she uttered.

Thirty-six cracks sounded within her. Thirty-six saintly runes broke deep within her blood. Powerful Holy Qi surged out, forming nine dragon shadows.

Roar!

The black dragons carried a demonic Qi. They flew out in nine beams of black light. In that instant, they flew out as nine streaks of black light and pierced Sikong One, Sikong Two, Sun Dadi, and Princess White Li.

Princess Moran's attack had been sudden, extremely fast, and unavoidable. The three people and one beast spat out fresh blood. They flew out with a pained cry.

"No!"

Qing Mo had just flown out. Sensing the change behind her, she turned immediately...

The moment she turned, Princess Moran was already before her. A foxy smile appeared on her face.

Poof.

Princess Moran's fingers pierced Qing Mo's chest. The snow-white fingers poked through Qing Mo's back with drops of red

blood.

“Ah...” Qing Mo cried out. Her entire body shook in pain. Shreds of Holy Qi floated out of the wound in her chest. Her vitality was slipping away.

“No!”

Seeing this, Sun Dadi and Sikong One both yelled in anger. Their eyes were bloodshot and they were furious. They couldn't bear to see Qing Mo die, but they were heavily injured and couldn't even crawl, let alone save Qing Mo.

Sun Dadi had fully woken up. He realized that Princess Moran was a very dangerous figure. Eyes filled with tears, he yelled, “Who are you?”

Princess Moran no longer had any disguises. She showed her cold and foxy aura. Looking down at Sun Dadi and Sikong One, she said, “You idiots. I am Emperor Blue Dragon's first empress, Empress Moran.”

Chapter 1149 - Comet Light

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Princess Moran pulled her hands out of Qing Mo's chest. Her skin was still crystal clear, and her long fingers still looked aesthetic without any blood on them.

Qing Mo's body was softened and fell down, without any life force.

Princess Moran smiled seductively and turned around to Sikong One, Sikong Two and the others. "My cultivation is so powerful that it's been sealed in Blue Dragon Void World the whole time. Do you really think I'm just some powerless princess?"

Both Sikong One and Sun Dadi were bitterly remorseful. They both thought they were smart, and they had never expected to be tricked by a woman.

"Amittabha! Master, is this the temptation you told me about before? I can't believe this whole world is so wicked."

At this moment, Sikong One seemed to have a revelation and he looked much holier than before.

If he could pass the trials today, he might become a saint in the future.

"You've pissed me off!"

Sun Dadi felt that he was a pest. It was because of him that Qing Mo was killed by Princess Moran. He was infuriated like never before.

Princess Moran didn't consider them her rivals. She moved her waist and walked toward them. She smiled, "You really

want to take me to Kunlun's Field, right? Unfortunately, you don't have that chance anymore. I'll send you all to hell first!"

The hair of Princess Moran was thirty feet long, and her jet-black hair had luster. It was waving in the astral space. She raised one of her arms, and holy light gushed out of her fingers, carrying nine dragon shadows and hitting them outward.

A light spot emerged between the eyebrows of Qing Mo, who had already fallen down. The light spot looked like a star.

"Hua!"

Qing Mo suddenly opened his eyes and stepped forward. She surged like lightning, and she used a silver blade to cut toward the neck of Princess Moran.

Princess Moran didn't know that Qing Mo had woken up, but she could sense the dangerous ripples behind her. She turned around instantly and put her hands together, mobilizing the nine dragon shadows which were condensed into a nine-dragon shield.

The silver blade was terrifically sharp. Qing Mo wielded the silver blade and cut the nine-dragon shield.

The blade Qi pierced through the nine-dragon shield and hit Princess Moran.

Peng.

Princess Moran made a gloomy sound and bounced back dozens of miles.

Demonic engravings emerged from her thin waist, her perky breasts and long legs, and those engravings warded off the silver blade like ninety-nine black chains.

She was only knocked away. She wasn't injured.

"How is it possible... How is she still alive..."

Princess Moran stared at Qing Mo who was dripping with blood. She was horrified. She had punched through Qing Mo's body already, and she was certain that Qing Mo had lost her life forces.

How had she been revived?

The ninety-nine demonic engravings on Princess Moran's body were made of ninety-nine ground veins. They had tremendous attacking power, and their defense power was also exceptional. Even creatures under the state of saint who were ten times stronger than her couldn't hurt her.

Yet that silver blade cut off sixteen engravings.

If Qing Mo attacked Princess Moran again, she might not be able to ward it off.

Qing Mo was already severely injured, and she had used all her power in that attack. She couldn't make another strike.

Princess Moran could tell that Qing Mo couldn't be weaker. She flew toward Qing Mo with a smile and said, "What a powerful plant. If you weren't this week, I might not have been able to resist that strike. Now, let me crush both your soul and body. Let's see whether you can recover from that or not."

"Life or Death Chessboard."

Sikong One and Sikong Two sat on the ground with their legs crossed, chanting. Their bodies started to spin.

Sikong One emanated white light like the white of a chessboard; Sikong Two gave out black like the black of a chessboard.

At the next moment, a chessboard showed up under the two monks.

Half the chessboard was white, and the other half was black, covering Qing Mo, White Li Princess, Murong Yue and Sun Dadi. Then it flew toward the astral world like a light ball.

The speed of Life or Death Chessboard was so fast that even Princess Moran couldn't catch it.

"Can't believe those two monks had a trump card. I shouldn't have underestimated them."

Princess Moran sneered, and her eyes glinted with complications. Other creatures all felt the great forces coming

out of Princess Moran. She was in no way a lower-class saint. Instead, she must've reached a higher level.

“Princess Moran?”

Chi Wansui pondered her identity seriously, and then he realized who she really was.

As the rising star of the army department, Chi Wansui knew something about Blue Dragon Dynasty.

“I heard that there's a very exceptional princess in Blue Dragon Dynasty. She is exquisite like an angel and proficient in seducing with her wicked techniques. Every man is attracted to her and would become her slave.”

“Even Blue Dragon Emperor, who has great cultivation, is obsessed with her and gave her the authority to rule the entire dynasty. Princess Moran is the real master of Blue Dragon Dynasty.”

Other creatures all figured out who Princess Moran was, and they all looked unsettled.

Qitian Crown Prince stared at Princess Moran from afar and said, “Princess Moran is at least a mid-class saint, possibly stronger.”

Even the weakest mid-class saints were much more powerful than him.

Mid-class saints were way stronger than lower-class saints. They weren't at the same level.

It was pretty impressive even for super-first-tier great beings to survive mid-class saints.

Qitian Crown Prince said, “How long will it take for Wukong Blood Saint and Yuanyi Blood Saint to get back?”

A lower-class saint answered Qitian Crown Prince, “The immortal vampire saints are all staying on an asteroid one hundred thousand miles away. When Blue Dragon Void World started to crumble, they started to rush here. It'll take them a short period of time to arrive here.”

There were top-tier beings among the immortal vampires staying near the astral domain around Blue Dragon Void World. They were the main powers to fight for World Spirit Qitian Crown Prince and the others were mere vanguards.

There was likely to be a battle among saints in the astral sky later.

Princess Moran was aware that great beings from Kunlun's Field were about to get here, so she needed to seize World Spirit as soon as possible to leave this place.

She smiled gently and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. She said, "Do you really think you killed the Son of the World of Blue Dragon Void World by killing Wang Huanzhen? The whole concept of 'Son of the World' is a joke. I'm the real master of Blue Dragon Void World, which means World Spirit belongs to me, doesn't it?"

Princess Moran stepped on nine giant black dragons, flying toward Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. The demonic forces coming out of her body condensed into vigorous demonic clouds.

Bang.

Zhang Ruochen Drew Blue Sky Bow and shot Shining Sun Arrow out.

Princess Moran smiled and flicked her fingers. A dragon shadow flew forward and clashed with the Shining Sun Arrow.

Peng!

The power on Shining Sun Arrow was immediately dissolved and went sideways.

"My dear overlord, is that what you've got? Do you really think you can fight me with that power?" Princess Moran's voice was melodious but sarcastic.

"You go first. I'll stop here," Huang Yanchen said.

"Let's go."

Zhang Ruochen didn't allow Huang Yanchen to risk her life. He took out the saint decree given to him by Saint Lady,

triggering the power inside and becoming as fast as Saint Lady, flying to the distance.

“Don’t you dare run!”

Princess Moran also took out a saint decree, getting faster than Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, approaching them.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen saw a trace of light from afar, gleaming.

That is...

It was a star flying rapidly, which looked like a comet.

“We have hope now!”

Zhang Ruochen looked exhilarated, and he quickly reckoned the best time and position to land on the comet.

Comets flew much faster than saints. Ordinary creatures under the state of saint would definitely die if they tried to get on a comet.

As for Zhang Ruochen, he was the descendant of time and space, which meant he was able to use the space power to get on the comet.

Princess Moran, who was chasing them, got surprised as, she didn’t understand why Zhang Ruochen would rush toward a fleeting comet.

Did he really want to use the power of a comet to repel her?

That comet was gigantic, with a diameter of more than five thousand miles. It looked like an enormous light ball. Even saints would find it terrifying.

The closer he got, the more he could feel the terrific power of that comet. Even saints would be smashed into pieces if they got hit.

Zhang Ruochen got closer and closer to the comet. Suddenly, he felt a bizarre force from the comet drawing near him.

The closer he got to the comet, the stronger he could feel the force.

Princess Moran was chasing him at the back, so Zhang Ruochen had to keep going forward.

“Great spatial move.”

Zhang Ruochen clenched his teeth and stepped forward. He finally got through the space and landed dozens of miles away.

And then he teleported himself fourteen times in the space, after which he finally resolved that power from the comet, landing on it.

Princess Moran stopped and looked like the comet flying across from her. Obviously, she couldn't catch up with it anymore. She swung her sleeves and said, “Zhang Ruochen, I've already marked your force of saintly way, which means I can track you all the time. You won't get away.”

And then, Princess Moran performed physical techniques and flew toward an asteroid that was only tens of thousands of miles away from Blue Dragon Void World.

That asteroid was relatively larger with a diameter of more than eight hundred miles. It looked like an oval, and it was a complete grey rock.

Blue Dragon Emperor and the saints from Blue Dragon Void World stayed on that asteroid after escaping Blue Dragon Void World.

At this moment, Princess Moran was heading there to meet them. She was going to utilize all the powers in Blue Dragon Void World to find Zhang Ruochen.

Chapter 1150 - Emperor Blue Dragon

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The star was covered in a light shield from a formation. Empress Moran flew over. The light shield opened immediately. Two eight-dragon Martial Saints rode on 300-foot-long metal kylin beasts and flew up, taking Empress Moran to a black stone city.

The inside of the star had a huge spiritual crystal mine. The formation masters of the Blue Dragon Void World used the mine, spending hundreds of years to turn this star into a place cultivators above the Fish-Dragon Realm could live temporarily.

“Greetings, Empress Moran.”

The cultivators within the city all bowed to her respectfully, including the Saints with cultivations higher than hers.

Emperor Blue Dragon was the 76th ruler of the Blue Dragon Dynasty and one of the most powerful beings of the Void World. He looked to be around 50 or 60 years old. Even though he was strong, he looked frail.

Seeing Empress Moran return, Emperor Blue Dragon put down his wine immediately. He rushed down the steps and grasped Empress Moran’s hands. “My love,” he said affectionately. “Did you take the World Spirit?”

Empress Moran glanced at him coldly. Taking her slender hands back, she slapped his face. After the loud crack, he fell to the ground.

Emperor Blue Dragon ruled the world but was slapped by Empress Moran. Thankfully, the cultivators of the Blue Dragon Dynasty didn't see this. Otherwise, they would be so shocked.

“Your failure. The Blue Dragon Dynasty is destroyed and you're still drinking wine here?”

Emperor Blue Dragon climbed up from the ground. Instead of being angry, he tried comforting Empress Moran. “My love, don't be angry, don't be angry. I only have a saint soul body here to anchor the place. My true form is already in the stars near the Void World, fighting with the strong cultivators of Kunlun's Field. I didn't lose my will.”

Empress Moran stared at him. She realized that this emperor was only a saint soul body and not the true body.

“How many strong cultivators were sent by Kunlun's Field?” Empress Moran asked.

“Apparently, there's chaos in Kunlun's Field,” Emperor Blue Dragon said. “The forces are unable to take care of themselves. Even the Ministry of War called back most of the warriors from the Void Worlds. Only a few Saints came to compete for the World Spirit, but none of the legendary figures have appeared.”

“There's chaos in Kunlun's Field?” Empress Moran's eyes brightened and she smiled.

Seeing this, Emperor Blue Dragon was overjoyed. “We caught a very strong human cultivator,” he quickly said. “We pried some information about Kunlun's Field from his mouth.”

“I heard that the revered Empress has gone missing. She might've died already. Kunlun's Field has no leader. The forces are all ambitious and wish to take this chance to overthrow the First Central Empire. There's chaos in both the humans and Savage Barren Territory. Blood flows like rivers; corpses are piled like mountains.”

Empress Moran touched her chin softly and chuckled.

“There's chaos in the Savage Barren Territory too?”

“Earlier, an unparalleled Taigu Remain in Kunlun’s Field reached the Beast Emperor Realm. He wanted to unite the beastly races and unify the Savage Barren Territory. This caused the most violent battle since the middle ages.”

Empress Moran pursed her pretty lips. “What powerful figures have come from Kunlun’s Field to compete for the World Spirit?” she asked.

“There are at least six or seven equal to me. For example, Heavenly King Qingxiao of the Ministry of War, Blood Saint Wukong and Yuanyi of the Immortal Vampires. However, the top fighters all constrain each other. It’s hard for them to participate directly in the competition. There were already four or five battles before the World Spirit even appeared.”

Empress Moran nodded. “Give me the Blue Dragon Dynasty’s emperor mark. I want to lead all the Martial Saints here and get the World Spirit back.”

The emperor mark represented Emperor Blue Dragon and could control all the power in the dynasty. However, he didn’t hesitate at all. He took the mark out and placed it in Empress Moran’s hands with a smile. “My love, when you return, I will —”

But before he could finish, Empress Moran had already left with the emperor mark.

“You’re always like this. You look down on me more and more. Who’s the true emperor of the Blue Dragon Dynasty?”

Boom!

Emperor Blue Dragon didn’t unleash his anger until Empress Moran flew out of the star with a group of Martial Saints. He pulverized the stone palace.

He didn’t dare to show any anger when Empress Moran was before him. He could only try to get on her good side. Merely touching her hand was enough to make him the happiest man.

Even he didn’t know when he’d become so cowardly and fearful of her.

...

The surface of the comet was covered in dark ice. Snowflakes floated down. It was extremely cold. Even with Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen's cultivations, they were still chilled to the bone.

Zhang Ruochen was like an ever-standing monument. He stood on the ice, enclosing Huang Yanchen's thin frame in his arms. The Masculine Yang Qi within him turned into flames that drove away the coldness.

"We finally escaped. What are your plans now?" Huang Yanchen looked up at Zhang Ruochen's handsome side profile.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were sharp and emotionless. "Who are you?"

Huang Yanchen froze. "Brother Chen, why are you asking? What's wrong?"

Zhang Ruochen stared at her eyes from the close distance. He felt a lot of confusion. After a long while, he said what he'd been thinking. "There are too many hints of her on you. I don't know who you are anymore."

Earlier, when Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen had performed the Yin and Yang Sect Sword Formation, they'd worked together so well. It was like they'd practiced this many times before.

In that moment, Zhang Ruochen almost thought that the woman before him was Chi Yao from 800 years ago. Together, the two had practiced sword, traveled through the world, and gazed at the stars in the sky.

Zhang Ruochen didn't believe that he could reach that extent while performing the Yin and Yang Sect Sword Formation with Huang Yanchen for the first time.

Huang Yanchen bit her lip. Eyelashes fluttering, she lowered her head with a pitiful expression.

"What's wrong?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Huang Yanchen shook her head and sighed. "You still haven't forgotten her. The one you love has always been her. I... am

just her shadow, right?”

“No.”

“It’s useless even if you deny it. Don’t you hate her because you love her so much? You can’t fool me because when we made love for the first time, you called out her name.” Huang Yanchen’s tears rolled down. She was heartbroken.

Zhang Ruochen felt guilty, so he didn’t continue arguing with her. Eyes dazed, he said, “Pretend I didn’t say anything!”

Huang Yanchen didn’t press further because continuing to ask could make things worse. She could feel that there was already distance between them.

The comet flew very quickly. They grew further away from the Blue Dragon Void World and came to another starry sky. They might get lost in the vast universe if they continued to stay on the comet. They would be unable to return to Kunlun’s Field.

Zhang Ruochen used the Great Spatial Move to leave the comet. They came to the surface of a bigger lone planet.

He used the Heavenly Eyes and looked up to observe the planet’s orbit. He quickly discovered a more familiar region and calculated the general location of Kunlun’s Field.

“We’re too far away,” Zhang Ruochen said. “With our current speed, we won’t be able to return in 1,000 years. We must find a wormhole and use a Space Jump.”

“There’s a wormhole near the Blue Dragon Void World,” Huang Yanchen said. “I know its general location. It’s not too far from us.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “There must be many Saints guarding it. If we hurry over, we’ll be jumping into the trap.”

He wanted to use the Spatial Transfer Formation to return to Kunlun’s Field. But with his current skills, he could only construct a basic formation and transport himself 300,000 miles each time.

In this vast universe, it was too short. Any two stars would be hundreds of thousands of miles apart, or even billions of miles.

Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped. He thought of the Spatial Transfer Formation they had dug out at the bottom of Dragontop Mountain. He was curious as to what place was represented by the coordinates on the formation.

Right now, he'd already gotten the World Spirit. He could activate the Spatial Transfer Formation to get some answers. Saint Monk Xumi couldn't have built a formation in the Blue Dragon Void World for no reason. It must have some extraordinary function.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Universe Spiritual Map. He tried to communicate with the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree and Blackie, but the scroll world was still closed. He didn't receive any answer.

The formation was placed within the scroll world. Since it was sealed, he obviously couldn't take it out.

"Brother Chen, don't be so impatient," Huang Yanchen comforted Zhang Ruochen. "As long as I'm with you, I will be happy even if I live on this uninhabitable comet for the rest of my life."

Zhang Ruochen's guilt deepened. Grabbing Huang Yanchen's small hands, he looked with determined eyes. "Don't worry. I will take you back to Kunlun's Field."

After that, Zhang Ruochen waited for Blackie and the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree to tame the World Spirit while cultivating the remaining Divine Pill's spirit to improve more. The starry sky seemed quiet and peaceful, but danger could arrive at any time. Zhang Ruochen didn't dare lower his guard. He had to try his hardest to become stronger.

Three days later.

Dozens of small planets flew around Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. Each planet had a Martial Saint from the Blue Dragon Void World on it. Under Empress Moran's orders, they surrounded the larger planet.

"They still caught up!"

Zhang Ruochen felt something. His eyes opened immediately and he stood up, looking at the starry sky above him.

Chapter 1151 - Slay the Saints and Kill the Enemies

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Mr. Overlord, we meet again!”

Princess Mo Ran’s melodious voice was transmitted from outside the planet, echoing in the sky and land.

She stood on the ground and looked up.

The sky was completely covered by demonic clouds, with dozens of stars hanging above the clouds, emanating thrilling forces of saintly way.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He took out Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He drew the bow, and the sand and stones in this area started to move rapidly.

Xiu!

The white arrow surged like a light pillar and shot toward one of the stars.

Hong! The star crumbled, and an eight-dragon martial saint on the star was also shot, forming a blood-red hole in his chest.

There wasn’t an atmosphere around this planet, so the body fell from the sky directly.

There was nothing to negotiate. The only thing he needed to do was to fight.

Zhang Ruochen was powerful enough to kill lower-class saints and eight-dragon martial saints.

“Carnivorous Holy Flower!” Zhang Ruochen yelled.

Silver branches of Carnivorous Holy Flower trailed from his back, piercing through the body of that eight-dragon martial saint and starting to absorb its Bloody Qi and essences.

The arrow from Zhang Ruochen intimidated the others, forcing all the martial saints from Blue Dragon Dynasty to retreat, keeping their distance from Zhang Ruochen.

Princess Mo Ran was still smiling. She wasn't annoyed by the death of a martial saint. She said, "Overlord is indeed a peerless genius. You're only a level-nine half saint, yet you're already able to kill a saint. You have an immeasurably bright future ahead of you."

Zhang Ruochen shouted, "Your highness, there're still some creatures alive from Blue Dragon Dynasty, which means it's not annihilated yet. I suggest that you do not make yourself my enemy, otherwise, those survivors will also be crushed by me."

"If you spend another ten years refining yourself, I won't dare challenge you. As for now, I reckon you don't have that power." Princess Mo Ran smiled.

Princess Mo Ran was leading a group of eight-dragon martial saints and five nine-dragon martial saints, six including herself.

A team like that was enough to kill a mid-class saint, not to mention a level-nine half saint.

Zhang Ruochen said, "You know that I'm the overlord of a sect, but do you know which sect I come from?"

Princess Mo Ran didn't know why Zhang Ruochen asked that, but she responded, "No, I don't."

Zhang Ruochen said, "Sacred Sect."

Princess Mo Ran pondered it for some time. She frowned and shook her head. She said, "I've been to Kunlun's Field to learn techniques before, and I've refined in Blood God Sect for thirty years. I know something about Kunlun's Field, but I've never heard of something like Sacred Sect."

There were tens of thousands of void worlds in the astral space around Kunlun's Field. Some of the aboriginal people from some void worlds sometimes went to Kunlun's Field in secret to study the top-tier martial techniques to make themselves stronger.

It wasn't strange that Princess Mo Ran had been to Kunlun's Field.

What was surprising to Zhang Ruochen was that she used to be a student in Blood God Sect. Who was her teacher? Why hadn't Zhang Ruochen heard of a saint in Blood God Sect? Did she use an alias?

Zhang Ruochen said, "It doesn't matter whether you've heard of Sacred Sect or not, but you shouldn't underestimate it. There's a saint in Sacred Sect. If she fights you, these people you brought won't be enough."

Just as Princess Mo Ran led the saints from Blue Dragon Dynasty to get here, Blackie transmitted a trace of its mind power and told Zhang Ruochen that Sky-connecting Divine Tree had suppressed World Spirit of Blue Dragon Void World, and Scroll World could be opened again.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen also talked to Blood Moon Ghost King in Scroll World and confirmed that she could fight.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen looked calm and didn't rush to run away. He wanted to lead the saints from Blue Dragon Dynasty to the surface of a planet and teach them a hard lesson.

Princess Mo Ran smiled, as she didn't believe that there were any impressive saints from Sacred Sect.

In Kunlun's Field, any sect that had a saint was an exceptional power. There was no way that Princess Mo Ran had never heard of it.

"You'd better reconsider it, your highness. Don't bring danger to yourself." Zhang Ruochen notified him.

"Why are you still talking to him, your highness? I'll go kill him now and get our World Spirit back."

Holy Qi in Wang Shizu's body gushed into his feet and kicked the asteroid five hundred feet long away, hitting Zhang Ruochen.

The asteroid kept spinning and burning, turning into a gleaming fireball.

Zhang Ruochen drew the Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow, hitting the diving asteroid.

That asteroid was made of black iron. Shining Sun Arrow didn't manage to crush that asteroid.

Zhang Ruochen took Huang Yanchen and performed great spatial move, escaping this area.

Hong Long.

The asteroid hit the ground, shaking the entire planet, raising up waves hundreds of feet tall and thick dust, permeating everywhere.

Even though Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen were already more than forty miles away, they were still shocked and flew dozens of miles away before landing on the ground again.

“How powerful a nine-dragon martial saint is! No wonder people say there's no way for a low-class saint to fight a high-class saint.”

Zhang Ruochen kept panting and emanating mind power. He carefully inspected the surroundings.

Nine-dragon martial saints from Blue Dragon Void World were mid-class saints, and some powerful ones were borderline upper-class saints.

Wang Shizu, who was kicked out of the asteroid, just became a nine-dragon martial saint, which meant he was one of the weakest mid-class saints, much weaker than Princess Mo Ran, who was also a nine-dragon martial saint.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to resist the strike.

“No wonder he managed to get away from Princess Mo Ran. He's able to utilize the power of the space.”

Wang Shizu wielded nine golden dragon shadows, flying out of the black dust and hitting Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen with his iron fists.

“Use the heir stamp. Chen, help me.”

Huang Yanchen mobilized the Holy Qi inside her body and wielded her heir stamp, which became as large as a city, gleaming.

Zhang Ruochen pushed forward, and Holy Qi gushed out, hitting and infusing Tianxin Aperture on Huang Yanchen’s back.

Because of the concern of the space in Kunlun’s Field, they couldn’t wield the power of the heir stamp at all.

And now, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen utilized the heir stamp together, and the emperor Qi from the heir stamp gushed out, hitting the fist print of Wang Shizu.

Hong Long.

He resisted it? The power from the heir stamp not only warded off the attacks from Wang Shizu, but knocked him away as well.

That was the real power of the heir stamp.

Wang Shizu took a look at his fist, which was causing him pain, and he took a look at the heir stamp in the air. He saw emperor Qi gathering together, forming the phantom of an empress.

One look from the phantom of the empress shook Wang Shizu’s heart, and he couldn’t help bending his knee, almost kneeling on the ground.

It was a mental pressure. Even saints weren’t able to resist it.

Princess Mo Ran looked delighted. She said, “It’s an heir stamp. That woman is one of the nine heirs from Kunlun’s Field.”

Other martial saints were also excited. An old nine-dragon martial saint said, “Heir stamp is a valuable bestowed by Holy Queen of Majesty and Morality, and it’s definitely true

treasure. If we can get that heir stamp, we can definitely establish our dynasty again.”

Princess Mo Ran and the other four nine-dragon martial saints flew down, forming five powerful saintly Qi ripples.

Wang Shizu mobilized the nine dragon shadows and dashed forward again. He wanted to suppress Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen before other martial saints got to them, then he could take all the credits.

“Hong Long Long!”

The power of the heir stamp was endless, which shattered all the nine dragon shadows at the same time. Wang Shizu had to retreat again.

His cultivation was far from enough to ward off the power of the heir stamp.

Princess Mo Ran and the other four nine-dragon martial saints landed on the ground, standing at five different directions. They had encircled Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen.

Kuyan Martial Saint sneered, “Wang Shizu, I can’t believe you’re not even able to defeat two half saints. You’re a shame to Blue Dragon Dynasty.”

Wang Shizu said, irritated, “They used the heir stamp, so they can use a trace of power from Holy Queen of Majesty and Morality. Who can resist that? If it weren’t for the heir stamp, I would’ve crushed them completely already.”

“You’re weak. Stop looking for excuses.” Kuyan Martial Saint said.

And then, Kuyan Martial Saint rushed forward, clapped and formed two pieces of palm clouds. Purple lighting shuttled back and forth in the cloud, making whistling sounds.

Kuyan Martial Saint was much stronger than Wang Shizu.

The two palm clouds knocked Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen away, looking invincible.

Wang Shizu was rendered speechless after witnessing that. He had to admit that Kuyan Martial Saint was indeed impressive.

Kuyan Martial Saint swung his sleeves and walked forward. He sneered, “Two immature half saints. Do you really think you can fight nine-dragon martial saints? You’ve so overestimated yourselves.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed, “I’m not at the same level as them. I can’t make it up.”

“Too late!”

Kuyan Martial Saint didn’t want to give Zhang Rouchen any chance. He rushed toward Zhang Ruochen.

From where Zhang Ruochen stood, there were tumbling holy Qi waves crushing toward him. Normal half saints would have been too terrified to stand already.

Princess Mo Ran smiled ruthlessly, then she said, “What a shame! You’re an inimitable genius. It’ll be great that you can be used by me.”

Princess Mo Ran knew for sure that she couldn’t control Zhang Ruochen. Any man who saw her was tempted by her, and none of them could still be rational.

Zhang Ruochen was the only exception.

The mind power of that man was too powerful. He was her bane, and she had to kill him.

What Princess Mo Ran wished to see didn’t happen.

“My saintly soul...”

Kuyan Martial Saint made a blood-curdling scream and kneeled in front of Zhang Ruochen. His entire body was trembling, and he became more and more emaciated. In the end, he lost his life force completely.

As for Zhang Ruochen, there was a cluster of ghost Qi flowing around his body, which became an enormous ghost shadow dozens of meters tall.

That ghost Qi killed Kuyan Martial Saint.

Chapter 1152 - :

Unparalleled Ghost King

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The ghost shadow was very big with a horn and fangs. Ghost King Bloodmoon stood in its palm. She radiated with holy white light. Only the blood-red crescent between her brows looked demonic.

Ghost King Bloodmoon put her hands together. Using ghostly fire, she turned Martial Saint Kuyan's saint soul into a snow-white pill. She held it between her fingers and placed it in her mouth.

Sizzle.

The light and darkness within her alternated. Holy Qi and Ghost Qi intertwined and gradually, the crescent moon mark on her forehead turned redder.

All the Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Dynasty, including Empress Moran, felt their scalps go numb and chills running down their spines. No matter how advanced and calm they were, their legs trembled uncontrollably.

Martial Saint Kuyan was a nine-dragon Martial Saint. He was so powerful and yet, he'd been killed mysteriously. Even his saint soul had been extracted and refined into a pill.

How could this Ghost King be so terrifying?

“Run...run...hurry and run...”

Empress Moran's plump breasts rose up as she cried out. Riding nine black dragons, she flew out with the fastest speed.

“Dammit. Why didn’t Zhang Ruochen invite this Ghost King out when he was in the Blue Dragon Void World?”

Right now, Empress Moran was full of regret. If she had known that the Sacred Sect had such a terrible Ghost King, she wouldn’t dare to offend Zhang Ruochen no matter what.

“She must be a Ghost King even stronger than upper Saints.”

The other four nine-dragon Martial Saints were all pale from fear. They felt the terribly evil Qi coming from Ghost King Bloodmoon and used techniques to escape as fast as possible.

“Come back!”

Ghost King Bloodmoon uttered a demonic sound. The four nine-dragon Martial Saints were already in the air and about to leave this planet. But hearing the demonic sound, their saint souls were all injured. Searing pain came from their brains. They could no longer control their Holy Qi and dropped to the ground.

Empress Moran was also affected, but she’d flown far away already and had higher cultivation. She only dipped down but quickly stopped.

“So powerful.”

Cold sweat beaded on Empress Moran’s forehead. Her face was as pale as paper. She was very strong, but she was still scared enough to use a saint decree. Using it could help her escape even faster.

The four nine-dragon Martial Saints who’d landed were bleeding from their openings. It was very tragic, but they were all lower Saints. Their physical bodies and souls were both strong, so they didn’t die from the demonic sound.

“We cannot escape anymore. How about we fight her to death? We might be able to survive.” Wang Shizu climbed out of a ditch. He was covered in blood but filled with battle intent.

The other three Martial Saints also had strong wills. They knew they couldn’t escape, so they decided to go full out.

“Celestial Dragon Connection Technique.”

Wang Shizu hit his body nine times and activated a secret spell that stimulated his own body.

The Celestial Dragon Connection Technique and the other divine spells from Kunlun's Field all originated from the ancient Witch Way. As a taboo spell, it could burn the Blood Qi, Spirit Qi and Holy Qi within one's body. This could unleash ten times one's power for a short period.

The other three nine-dragon Martial Saints also used this spell. Their auras grew stronger and stronger. Their blood roared and surged like rivers.

These four were all extraordinary Saints. After using the taboo spell, they naturally grew even more terrifying. Like four savage monsters, they could swallow the heaven and earth.

Ghost King Bloodmoon remained calm. With her bare feet, she stepped onto the bridge of ghostly fog. She walked towards the four Martial Saints like a moonlight goddess.

"Fentian Print." A thinner Martial Saint tossed out a huge fireball.

The fireball was wrapped around a Thousand-pattern metal stamp. All the runes appeared, radiating with blazing power.

Using a backhand slap, Ghost King Bloodmoon's jade-like hand sent the Fentian Print flying back. The thin Martial Saint was shocked. He retreated and dodged the flying Fentian Print.

Before he could steady himself, Ghost King Bloodmoon was already before him, punching toward his head.

"No..."

He couldn't stop Ghost King Bloodmoon's hit. With a boom, Ghost King Bloodmoon's palm slammed his head into his stomach. A fountain of blood sprayed out of his neck.

Ghost King Bloodmoon pointed at his body and took out his saint soul. Using ghostly fire, she began producing another soul pill.

The other three nine-dragon Martial Saints used this chance to attack. They all used their strongest tactics.

Ghost King Bloodmoon refined the pill with one hand and fought the three Martial Saints with her other hand. They finally realized how big the difference was between them and Ghost King Bloodmoon. It was laughable that they thought they could kill her.

“Her cultivation has improved greatly again,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Did she complete the third Ghost Trial?”

Ghost King Bloodmoon ate the soul pill. Her movement was graceful, as if she was tasting a cake. No one could imagine that it was a Saint’s soul.

Then she stared at the three Martial Saints on the ground. Her eyes blazed and she couldn’t help but lick her lips as if looking at delicious food. Seeing her gaze, the Martial Saints’ hearts skipped a beat. A chill ran down their spine.

“It was hard for us to become Saints,” one of them said with a trembling voice. “Ghost King, please spare us.”

Even a Saint couldn’t face death calmly. They had to lower themselves to beg pitifully for a chance to live.

Boom, boom, boom.

Heartless, Ghost King Bloodmoon crushed down. The three Saints all exploded into clouds of bloody mist. Only their Saintly Sources and some hard bones dropped to the ground.

Ghost King Bloodmoon opened her hands and the three saint souls lowered into her palm. They quickly became three saint pills. Refining the first two that she’d eaten would take some time, so she didn’t consume these three. Instead, she put them away.

She looked at Zhang Ruochen. “That empress used a saint decree from a Heaven Pass Realm’s Saint. She isn’t any slower than me, so I can’t catch up. As for those eight-dragon Martial Saints, should I take care of them?”

The many eight-dragon Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Dynasty were all fleeing for their lives, but they weren’t fast. Ghost King Bloodmoon could kill some if she tried her hardest.

“No need,” Zhang Ruochen said. “They’re homeless after the Blue Dragon Dynasty is destroyed. No need to finish the job like this.”

Taking the World Spirit of the Blue Dragon Void World wasn’t anything honorable. If he massacred them all, it would be too much! Plus, even if the eight-dragon Martial Saints escaped, they still weren’t much of a threat to him. With Zhang Ruochen’s speed of cultivation, he could surpass them quickly.

Why should a dragon be hung up on snakes?

Ghost King Bloodmoon didn’t ask about anything else. She returned to the scroll world to continue cultivating.

“Ghost King Bloodmoon’s cultivation is truly terrifying,” Huang Yanchen said, fluttering her lashes. “She’s on the level of the Five Heroes List. How did you trick her to stay by your side?”

“Well, it wasn’t the honeypot tactic,” Zhang Ruochen said half-jokingly.

He collected the saintly sources from the five nine-dragon Martial Saints. He also sent the Abyss Ancient Sword out so it could refine the leftover weapons.

The five saintly sources all shone with saintly light. They were as dazzling as stars. Within the saintly sources, each one had the shadow of a dragon. They were energetic and lively.

“Five saintly sources. I can give them to the native human Half-Saints in the scroll world to absorb. Maybe I can produce five Saints.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that Princess White Li and Blackie had put many human Half-Saints into the scroll world. He could have them join the Sacred Sect.

“Zhang Ruochen, you must give the five saintly sources to me. I’ll become a Saint soon. I need a large amount of nutrients.”

The Holy Carnivorous Flower rushed over. Five roots reached out to ask Zhang Ruochen for the saintly sources. After absorbing the Spirit Qi and Blood Qi of that eight-dragon

Martial Saint, its fruit finally ripened. It shone with dazzling silver light and had a tempting fragrance.

After a while, the “virtual body” within the fruit could be refined. If it was combined with the real body to a certain extent, it could really become a Saint. Of course, the Holy Carnivorous Flower was already strong enough to kill a lower Saint.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. “You want to absorb too many nutrients to become a Saint. At least ten times more than others.”

“If I become a Saint, my combat abilities will far surpass any other Saints. Killing an enemy in another level isn’t hard.”

“In that case, I can’t give the saintly source to you,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower had already surpassed him. If it became a Saint, Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to suppress it anymore. He could suffer from the backlash.

The flower’s voice was youthful but also aggressive. “Aren’t you afraid I’ll end things with you right now? I can eat you!”

“You can try and see if I can suppress you.” After a pause, Zhang Ruochen added, “I’m pretty interested in that fruit of yours. I wonder what it tastes like.”

If the flower had another master, it would have already turned its master into food. Zhang Ruochen was different though. The flower feared him and didn’t dare attack easily.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower fell silent. In the end, it didn’t attack and returned inside Zhang Ruochen. This flower was admittedly a double-sided blade. It could help multiply Zhang Ruochen’s abilities, but it could also hurt him.

I must refine the Pill Spirit within me so I can raise my cultivation, he thought. Otherwise, the Holy Carnivorous Flower will become my biggest threat.

Chapter 1153 - Surge of Cultivation

Chapter 1153: Surge of Cultivation

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

“The saint-level fight caused fierce holy Qi ripples. It’s likely to attract saints from other powers. We have to leave now.”

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen left the deserted planet and flew to a rock asteroid. He flew to afar following that asteroid.

After hiding Universe Spiritual Map, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen entered Scroll World.

Zhang Ruochen came to Sky-connecting Divine Tree and looked forward. He saw a blue dragon made of jade suppressed on the trunk. More than three hundred branches wound it. It couldn’t move at all.

“Ao!”

The blue dragon made a gloomy sound, shaking the spirit Qi around it, which spread like waves.

“What’s happening now? How long will the Scroll World turn into Universe World?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Sky-connecting Divine Tree transmitted a trace of mind power and told Zhang Ruochen, “As long as I can refine the World Spirit from Blue Dragon Void World, the Scroll World would be drastically changed, turning into a vast and stable Universe World. However, you’re not powerful enough to hold an entire world, unless you can sanctify your body.”

“Sanctify my body.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath, and he looked solemn.

He needed to sanctify all one hundred and forty-four apertures in his body to become a saint. It sounded easy, but it was

actually incredibly difficult.

Qingtian Crown Prince and Motian Crown Prince of the immortal vampire race had an advantage because of their race. They were able to drink blood to refine their bodies, yet they still hadn't sanctified their bodies yet. They could only approach that goal gradually.

Zhang Ruochen had already sanctified one hundred and eight apertures. It seemed that he had finished more than half of them, but he actually still had a long way to go.

Sky-connecting Divine Tree said, "You need to understand that when Universe World was born, Sky-connecting Divine Tree Picture will be shattered. Once your body can't withstand Universe World anymore, it'll be exposed to the vast universe and be ravaged by other creatures."

"I understand!"

Zhang Ruochen nodded and exited.

"How is Qing Mo?"

Zhang Ruochen saw Qing Mo be severely injured by Princess Mo Ran. He was worried about her safety. She was so wounded that even Withered Pill might not be able to save her life.

Huang Yanchen was very calm. She said, "Don't you worry about her. Qing Mo has a very special constitution, so it's not that easy for her to die. We need to refine the Pill Spirit of the divine pills in our body to improve our cultivation. If we don't have powerful cultivation to support us, we might not be able to get out of Kunlun's Field."

Huang Yanchen also took divine medicinal pills. She didn't have time to refine the pills because she needed to fight for World Spirit, so she used she Holy Qi to suppress that.

And now, they had seized World Spirit. She could finally slowly absorb the Pill Spirit from the divine medicinal pills.

Huang Yanchen was about to make a breakthrough on her cultivation. She was triggering 'Eight Nine Trial', which was the second pre-saint trial, and she passed the trial.

Zhang Ruochen was also refining the Holy Qi of his divine medicinal pill. He fully utilized level-six technique of 'Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture'.

His cultivation quickly improved with time going by.

Mid-level-nine half saint.

Upper-level-nine half saint.

Pinnacle half saint.

His cultivation was improved three levels, and he stayed stable until he reached a pinnacle half saint.

Level-nine half saints were different from other half saints. The gaps between small levels were enormous. The gap between a low-class level-nine half saint and a pinnacle half saint was as large as that between level-one half saints and level-two half saints. Zhang Ruochen was powerful enough to defeat everyone who was below a mid-class saint.

Pill Spirit of the divine medicinal pills had been completely refined, and the Holy Qi inside him reached a limit already.

Inside the abdomen Zhang Ruochen, fiery masculine Qi was tumbling as if it was burning, turning the skin of Zhang Ruochen into crimson.

"It's indeed difficult to control the masculine Qi ten thousand times stronger than that of a normal person. If my level became a little bit unsteady, it'll explode and turn me into ashes.

Zhang Ruochen's cultivation surged. He still couldn't master that powerful forces, so he couldn't stay stable.

When someone was not stable, the disadvantages would all be exposed. It was easy for him to be swallowed by the power inside him, after which he might go mad.

"Do I really need a tripod for safety issues?"

Zhang Ruochen snuffed that thought out immediately.

"Luo Water Fist Technique."

Zhang Ruochen stood up. He clenched his fist and tried to control the Holy Qi and masculine Qi inside his body, performing all the thirty-six moves of Luo Water Fist Technique.

A continuous feminine destruction force permeated the body of Zhang Ruochen from the fist.

Luo Water Fist Technique was a fist technique that was created by Luo Xu based on the reflection of stars. It contained mysterious rules of the sky and land.

Even though Zhang Ruochen had already mastered the seventh level of Luo Water Fist Technique, he could still have different comprehensions every time he refined that.

Luo Water Fist Technique was extensive and profound. Refiners could keep practicing it, and with the refiners' comprehension of the fist techniques getting deeper, the power of the fist techniques would also get stronger.

Zhang Ruochen practiced the fist techniques countless times before stabilizing the masculine Qi inside his body.

Zhang Ruochen stopped refining and relaxed his fingers. He took a long breath and whispered to himself, "Luo Water Fist Technique is indeed able to constrain my masculine Qi. I need to find a chance to get back to Heavenly Devil Mountain so comprehend it beside Luo Water. What's inside that river which comes from the sky."

Zhang Ruochen hadn't stabilized his power yet, so he couldn't pass the first pre-saint trial.

It would be dangerous for him to try to pass the trial.

After all, his pre-saint trial would be much more devastating than that of other half saints. He shouldn't try it before he was certain he could pass it.

His cultivation was enough to suppress Carnivorous Holy Flower without worrying that it would swallow him back.

And then, Zhang Ruochen started to adjust himself and tried to try the thirty-six apertures in his head.

Zhang Ruochen tried more than ten times, but he couldn't succeed, instead, he felt light-headed as if his brain were about to explode.

And then, Zhang Ruochen changed his strategies and tried one aperture first.

“Both my eyes have a trace of deity print. Perhaps I can borrow the power of the deity print and open them first.”

Instead of using divine blood, Zhang Ruochen used White Tiger Divine Dew.

Heads were different from legs, arms and bodies. It was more fragile, and it needed to be dealt with gently.

White Tiger Divine Dew was the dew picked from the leaf of Seven Star Sacred Tuber, and compared to divine blood, it was smoother. Even if he failed, he wouldn't injure his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen swallowed White Tiger Divine Dew, and he performed his techniques, infusing his eyes with two traces of deity prints using the essence contained in the divine dew.

Both traces of deity prints started to glow. They got brighter and brighter as if two fiery saintly stones were inlaid in his eyes.

“Hua.”

Two fiery light pillars flew out of his eyes, and they only withered away after flying hundreds of miles away.

“I've finally opened the apertures in my eyes. I can kill a half saint a hundred miles away with one look.” Zhang Ruochen was pleased.

The more apertures monks opened, the more magical and fantastic power they would discover.

One punch was strong enough to rival that of a saint spell.

One look could kill the enemies and penetrated mountains.

One breath could turn into a hurricane and kill thousands.

And then, Zhang Ruochen tried to use the power of the deity print to open the apertures in his eyes, nose, temples and

throat. He then sanctified all those apertures with White Tiger Divine Dew.

“I’ve sanctified twelve apertures in my head. Together with the one hundred and eight apertures I sanctified before, I have sanctified one hundred and twenty apertures.”

There were one hundred and twenty light spots on his body, which composed a strange picture, emanating fierce power ripples.

Zhang Ruochen could distinctly feel that his power was improved.

“If I can sanctify more apertures, I can even fight mid-class saints.” Zhang Ruochen thought.

Zhang Ruochen was able to open the twelve apertures in his head so efficiently because of the power of the deity prints.

However, he couldn’t use the deity print to open the remaining twenty-four apertures. It’d be very difficult for him to open them, and it would take more time.

This time, Zhang Ruochen was determined to refine himself for a longer while for the remaining twenty-four apertures.

It took Zhang Ruochen eight months to open twelve apertures.

Zhang Ruochen had sanctified one hundred and thirty-two apertures, but he didn’t feel excited, instead, he was gloomy, “It took me two months to sanctify the one hundred and thirty-second aperture. It might take me almost three months to open the one hundred and thirty-third aperture.”

Although Zhang Ruochen wasn’t in a rush to get out, he still cherished time and didn’t want to waste it.

It might take him eight years to open all his apertures and to sanctify his body.

“Is it really that difficult to sanctify my body?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Refining was like sailing against the current, he either kept forging ahead or kept falling behind.

If he couldn't forge ahead quickly, he would be surpassed by other talents.

Qitian Crown Prince, Qiu Yu, Emperor Tianming and Sky-swallowing Demonic Dragon were all chasing time and wanted to refine faster. They became stronger and surpassed almost all their peers.

Aside from them, the human heirs also refined in Tianlun Mark. He took a lot of divine medicinal pills, and after all the training, their power would surge.

Universe Spiritual Mao and Tianlun Mark weren't the only time and space treasures in Kunlun's Field. Similar treasures could also distort time within them.

Even Zhang Ruochen was the owner of Universe Spiritual Map, he would fall behind if he was slack.

Chapter 1154 - Edge Of The Stars

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen didn't continue trying to open his apertures. He stopped and prepared to rest for a bit.

He went to Huang Yanchen's cultivation residence and asked, "Did you go through the third Pre-Saint Trial yet?"

Huang Yanchen shook her head. "I refined all the Pill Spirit half a year ago and reached the pinnacle of the second trial. However, the third trial is very dangerous. It's known as a life-or-death trial. I don't dare to try before I'm fully confident. I need more accumulation."

She poured a cup of spiritual spring water for Zhang Ruochen. "What about you?" she asked. "How come you haven't gone through the first trial yet?"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and smiled. "There were some problems with my cultivation. It's hard to solve."

Huang Yanchen had a concerned expression. "Tell me. Maybe I can give you some suggestions."

"You?" Smiling, Zhang Ruochen sipped the spiritual spring water.

Huang Yanchen pouted unhappily. She thought that Zhang Ruochen looked down on her, so she said, "First, you've been learning by yourself since you entered the Half-Saint Realm. You lack a wise teacher to give you advice.

"Second, you study many different paths. In addition to martial arts, you also cultivate your physical body, Spiritual

Power, Sword Way, fist techniques, and time and space. Everyone has their limits. How can you take care of every aspect?

“You’re undefeatable in the same realm, but your cultivation process is tens or hundreds of times more difficult than the others. If you continue like this, there may be a big problem.”

Zhang Ruochen was impressed with Huang Yanchen because her every word hit him. It was true that he was a once-in-a-century talent, but he wasn’t a god. Without a teacher’s guidance, it was easy to make mistakes.

Huang Yanchen seemed to have guessed what he was thinking. Smiling, she asked, “Why are you looking at me like this? No matter what, I’m the personal disciple of Kunlun’s Field’s top figure. I have her inheritance. My knowledge of the Saint Way is above most Saints. Are you scared that your wife is a bit powerful?”

Zhang Ruochen touched his nose and smiled. He revealed the problems that he’d encountered and started discussing with Huang Yanchen.

“I see now.” Huang Yanchen smiled. There was a flirtatious look in her eyes. “You really did go the wrong way.”

“What do you mean?” Zhang Ruochen asked for advice humbly. He wanted to know the reason.

As the saying went, there was always a teacher in a group. Those who were too arrogant couldn’t succeed.

If it was someone who could help answer his questions, Zhang Ruochen would humbly ask for help even if the man was from the Huang Realm.

“If you’ve gone through the first Pre-Saint Trial, it’ll be easier to open up your apertures,” Huang Yanchen said. “It’ll be even easier after the second Pre-Saint Trial. These trials aren’t only a test for cultivators. They also exercise the body and saint soul. Cultivators can transform their bodies and create a stronger foundation for becoming a Saint.”

Huang Yanchen rolled her eyes and continued. “You haven’t even gone through the first trial and already saintified 132

apertures. This is already a dream for a cultivator of the physical body. What more do you want?”

“I see.” Zhang Ruochen was instantly overjoyed. It felt like the skies suddenly cleared. “Senior Sister Huang, I’m so impressed by you!”

“As your senior sister, is it strange that I know more than you?” Huang Yanchen lifted her chin proudly but then smiled quickly. “Since we’re cultivation partners, we should help and support each other. Before, you kept helping me and I felt useless.”

As the saying went, slow and steady won the race. Since Zhang Ruochen found the reason, he didn’t hurry to cultivate his body anymore. He prepared to go through the first Pre-Saint Trial and then try for the other apertures.

He knew that his trial would be very violent. Thus, he didn’t go through it immediately. He thought of the Space Transfer Formation from Dragontop Mountain again.

Why did Saint Monk Xumi build that in the Blue Dragon Void World? Are there more formations in the vast universe?

The more he thought, the more questions he had. He couldn’t resist his curiosity. A while later, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Blackie took the Space Transfer Formation out of the scroll world. They came to the surface of this planet.

The formation was more than 200 meters wide. It shone with seven-colored light, turning the planet colorful and beautiful.

Blackie was shocked to know the secret of the formation, so it insisted shamelessly on coming.

“That old donkey Xumi actually set up a Space Transfer Formation underground in the Blue Dragon Void World,” Blackie muttered as he investigated the formation. “He must’ve hidden some huge secret. Did he hide some treasure in the stars?”

Zhang Ruochen walked to the center of the formation. Staring at the coordinates carved into it, he said, “I’m more curious where the coordinates point to. There should be another Space

Transfer Formation to ensure the transportation between them.”

“Maybe it’s a secret place in Kunlun’s Field?” Blackie rushed over and reached out a paw to touch the coordinates.

“That’s not likely.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “I’ve already observed the general location of Kunlun’s Field. It’s very different from the coordinates carved here. It’s not even in the same mass of stars... What are you doing?”

The Space Transfer Formation started running. Every saint stone and jade shone brilliantly. Then the space around it distorted.

Zhang Ruochen looked down in surprise. He saw that Blackie had put Holy Qi into the saint stone carved with the coordinates. It had activated the formation.

Chuckling, it said, “Since you want to know the answer, let’s go see.”

Zhang Ruochen quickly composed himself. He also wanted to learn the truth of the coordinates.

Whoosh!

The formation’s lights grew brighter and brighter. The spatial waves strengthened as well. Zhang Ruochen’s body turned light and he lost feeling of gravity. He seemed to have lost all feeling too. After a long while, he finally recovered.

The formation’s light slowly faded. Zhang Ruochen regained his vision.

He looked around. His surroundings had completely changed. Earlier, they’d been standing on the surface of the small star. Now, they were on an island surrounded by a boundless golden sea.

Yes.

The seawater was golden like liquid gold.

The coordinates landed them on the skull of a corpse in the middle of the island. Clearly, this was a different formation

from what Zhang Ruochen had dug out in Dragontop Mountain.

The skeleton below them was only a skull, but it was as big as the star. He couldn't tell what creature's skeleton it was. However, the bones were golden. It was like a skeleton made out of pure gold.

“What is this place? Are we back in Kunlun's Field?” Huang Yanchen was very shocked.

For as far as she could see, the island had golden plants, golden dirt, golden beach, and golden water.

“This isn't Kunlun's Field. It should be an upper Void World,” Zhang Ruochen concluded after observing this unfamiliar world with his Heavenly Eyes.

The laws here were completely different from Kunlun's Field. The Spiritual Qi was thinner than in Kunlun's Field too. It was around the same level as the Blue Dragon Void World. This was why Zhang Ruochen thought it was an upper Void World.

Blackie's eyes lolled. “Could this be the legendary Goldshine Void World?”

“Goldshine Void World.” Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped as his eyes sparkled. “In the legends, the Goldshine Void World is very far from Kunlun's Field. It's deep in the stars. Very few people can reach it.”

“The Goldshine Void World where everything is gold?” Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “It should be right. There aren't many upper Void Worlds in the first place. One filled with golden Spiritual Qi must be the Goldshine Void World.”

“Then aren't we at the edge of the stars? Can we still go back?” Huang Yanchen asked with worry.

After all, they were very far from Kunlun's Field now. If something happened to the Space Transfer Formation, they'd never be able to return.

“The edge of the stars? I don't think so.”

Zhang Ruochen's gaze fell upon the center of the formation. He stared at the two-meter-tall saint stone. There were actually spatial coordinates carved into it too. These coordinates were different from the previous ones. It pointed to another place that seemed to be even further.

"Why do I feel like this is only a transfer station?" Zhang Ruochen muttered to himself.

"I feel that the Blue Dragon Void World was also a transfer station," Blackie added. "I wonder how that old donkey Xumi came to such a faraway place? Do you think we'll run into a world as large as Kunlun's Field?"

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen's heart sped up. He even stopped breathing, because he just had the same thought.

The universe was vast and boundless. Since there could be so many Void Worlds of various sizes, it didn't sound strange to find a world as large as Kunlun's Field.

However, everyone thought that Kunlun's Field was the heart of the universe. It was the strongest world that ruled the millions of Void Worlds. If they really did find a Void World as large as Kunlun's Field and news spread, it would create such a storm.

The Goldshine Void World was already at the edge of the cultivators' knowledge of the universe. What would they encounter if they continued forward?

Zhang Ruochen contemplated investigating for more clues in Goldshine Void World. However, Blackie was impatient. It added Holy Qi into the saint stone again and activated the formation.

Whoosh—

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen's vision was covered in colorful light and they lost feeling again.

They had no clue where they would be taken to now.

Chapter 1155 - Netherworld and Gate to Hell

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After the light of the space transfer formation disappeared, Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen found out that they arrived at a white planet.

It was a planet covered by white sand and white stones. There wasn't any other color on it. It seemed that the entire world was bleached.

This planet was much larger than ordinary planets. Even though Zhang Ruochen completely let his mind power out, he couldn't reach the edge.

The land structure of the planet was also much stabler than that of Kunlun's Field.

Zhang Ruochen punched the ground, testing its hardness.

He was strong enough to break off a mountain easily in Kunlun's Field, but he couldn't do it here.

The rocks on the planet were solid like saint jades.

"There was spiritual Qi in the air, and it's thick. It isn't a deserted planet." Huang Yanchen said.

Blackie checked all the saintly stones in the transfer formation. It said, "There're no other space coordinates in the transfer formation. Have we reached the end?"

"The end?"

Zhang Ruochen pinched his jaw and frowned. He reckoned there was something more going on.

Saint Monk Xumi was a supreme being. Even if he wasn't a god, he was just as powerful as them. There was no need for him to set up these space transfer formations.

Was there a secret on this white planet?

“This planet is enormous with spiritual Qi, yet I can't sense any life forces here. This is just bizarre. Be careful, everyone.” Huang Yanchen said.

Blackie rushed out of the transfer formation and dug the sand with its claws. It managed to dig out a broken stele from the underground.

The broken stele was millions of pounds and more than seventy feet long. There were two words on the stele, ‘Bai Chang’.

Half the word ‘Chang’ was gone missing.

Zhang Ruochen opened his heavenly eyes and searched the ground. He quickly found the missing part of the stele and dug it out.

As he combined the two halves of the stele, he saw the complete word, ‘Bai Chang Planet’.

Blackie scratched its hairy head and said, “This name of this planet is Bai Chang Planet. Why haven't I heard of it before? This isn't a planet around Kunlun's Field.”

Zhang Ruochen looked up and stared at the shining sun using his heavenly eyes. His pupils shrunk suddenly because of shock, “Look at the sun there.”

Blackie and Huang Yanchen looked up at the same time, and they were both shocked also.

They didn't even notice the shining sun in the sky before. The only knew that the light coming from the sun was so glaring that they couldn't even look at it straight.

After they did it, they were both shocked.

“Why is the sun rectangular? I've never seen something like that before!”

Blackie's eyes popped with astonishment. Even with its experience, it found it incredible.

The sun in the sky was indeed rectangular.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Why do I feel like that's a door?"

Blackie was staggered, and its fur became so stiff that it looked like a hedgehog. It said, "Are you kidding, Zhang Ruochen? Bai Chang Star is incredibly far from that rectangular sun. It's at least one hundred million miles away. If that's really a door, how large can that be?"

Huang Yanchen said, "I also think that's a door."

"A door in the astral space that is as large as a sun?" Blackie also shared the idea, but it couldn't believe it.

The scene it saw had far surpassed its knowledges.

"I want to get closer to check it."

Zhang Ruochen looked serious. He knew that there was some secret behind this.

Blackie yelled, "Are you crazy? With your cultivation, it'll take you at least a year to get there without any rest. If something happens to you on your way there, you might be killed. There're too many dangers in the space. It's not as easy as you think."

Zhang Ruochen said, "It won't take that long. I can transport myself there using the transport formation. Even if the formation doesn't transport me there directly, I can still get there in time."

Blackie thought that Zhang Ruochen was taking a huge risk. It said, "If that's not a door, but a sun, it'll burn you to ashes instantly."

"And besides, even if it is a door, you can't get back here using the transport formation. Are you going to spend years flying back here? Aren't you afraid that you might die on your way back here?"

What Blackie said made sense.

The decision made by Zhang Ruochen would indeed bring lots of dangers. If he transported himself there recklessly, it might be the pathway to death.

“Let me calculate the exact location of that shining sun first, then I’ll consider whether I can go or not.”

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his mind power and started to calculate.

Time flew, and when Zhang Ruochen finally calculated the distance between Bai Chang Planet and the sun, it was already dawn.

The night came, and an astral sky showed up above them.

The astral sky got more bizarre. Billions of stars gathered and formed a river of stars. The river lied across the universe, which gave people endless imagination.

The light coming from the river of stars looked like a yellow river flowing in the universe.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the astral sky for a long time. He shook his head and said, “I can’t find any stars and planets anymore. We’ve arrived in an alien astral domain, which is very far from Kunlun’s Field.”

“It doesn’t look so far though. I can see the light coming from Golden Void World.”

Huang Yanchen pointed at the north. At the edge of the astral sky, a planet emanated dimming golden light.

“How are you so sure that the planet is Golden Void World?” Blackie asked.

“I feel like it.” Huang Yanchen said.

“Pst.” Blackie was speechless.

It only believed in facts, not feeling.

Zhang Ruochen was still staring at the yellow astral river above them. Countless stars gathered there.

“Do you think that there’s a booming civilization there?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

This time, Blackie was also silently pondering what Zhang Ruochen said.

If that Netherworld Astral River was an actual civilization, it would be more prosperous than the combination of Kunlun's Field and tens of thousands of void worlds.

Huang Yanchen said, "What do you think that Netherworld Astral River is made of? Stars or water? Are those stars just islands floating on the river?"

Blackie rolled its eyes at Huang Yanchen and said, "You're so imaginative."

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the astral sky, and this was the first time he realized he was insignificant compared to the vast sky and land. Thoughts flooded his mind.

In the morning of the second day, when Huang Yanchen and Blackie were still sleeping, Zhang Ruochen walked into the space transport formation by himself and activated it.

Huang Yanchen and Blackie immediately woke up and tried to stop Zhang Ruochen, but it was too late.

The glowing light gushed out of the formation, forcing Huang Yanchen and Blackie to step back.

"Wait for me on Bai Chang Planet. I'll definitely come back!" Zhang Ruochen said.

"Hua!"

The light from the formation withered away, and Zhang Ruochen vanished, leaving Bai Chang Planet.

It wasn't a spur-of-the-moment decision for Zhang Ruochen to go to the sun, instead, he was guided by an invisible force.

Also, he did suspect the sun was a door.

A glowing door floated in the cold, dark and serene universe. The door was so enormous that even a star looked like a sand compared to it.

"Hua."

Space ripples showed up one hundred and seventeen thousand miles away from the light door.

Zhang Ruochen walked out from the center of the space ripples, looking at the front. He couldn't be more shocked and felt like being suffocated.

That was indeed a door.

“What is that place?”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath, and a pair of dragon wings emerged from his back. He rushed toward that door as fast as possible, riding Blue Luan and Fiery Phoenix.

The temperature of the door wasn't high at all, instead, the door felt cold.

As Zhang Ruochen got closer to the door, he got palpitations. The forces coming from the light door shrank the pores of his body.

It was the art of God. Definitely the art of God.

Only God could create something like this.

“Go back. You're not supposed to be here.”

When Zhang Ruochen was only ten thousand miles away from the light door, a mind power ripple came into Zhang Ruochen's mind out of nowhere.

Zhang Ruochen immediately slowed down and stopped. Although he was startled inside, he looked calm. He said, “Who are you?”

At the right corner of the light door floated a palace.

The palace looked splendid, but compared to that light door, it was tiny. One needed to observe carefully to find that palace.

The trace of mind power came from that palace.

And then, a second trace of mind power came out from the palace again, “I'm just a doorman. Boy, the fact that you can come here means you have some power, but your cultivation is far from enough for you to enter the door. When you get powerful enough in the future, you might come back!”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What is this place?”

“Gate to Hell.”

That trace of mind power came into Zhang Ruochen’s mind.

“What? Gate to Hell?”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t be more shocked as the mythical Gate to Hell was lying in the astral sky.

“Can I get into hell if I step into the door?” Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help asking.

“There’re eighteen levels of Gate to Hell. You can only get into hell after getting through all those levels.” That voice said.

Chapter 1156 - Returning To Kunlun's Field

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was filled with questions. Why would there be 18 levels of the Gate to Hell among the stars? Where was Hell? Who constructed these?

He glanced behind the gates and saw a yellow starry river cut across the universe. It was boundless.

“Can I go through the Gate of Hell now?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“No, your cultivation is too weak and aren't qualified yet. Even the first level will destroy you.”

“How high must my cultivation be?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“At least a Saint King.”

Hearing “Saint King,” Zhang Ruochen's heart jumped. After all, only cultivators from Kunlun's Field divided the Saint Realm into Half-Saint, Saint, Saint King, and Supreme Saint. Could this mysterious man in the palace be from Kunlun's Field?

“Senior, are you an elder of Kunlun's Field?” he asked.

“You can say that!”

“May I know your name?” Zhang Ruochen bowed respectfully. Someone who could guard the Gate to Hell couldn't be an average man. He must be an important figure from Kunlun's Field.

“There is no point in speaking of the past.”

Since he didn't want to answer, Zhang Ruochen didn't continue asking. Instead, he asked, "Why do you guard the Gate to Hell? Who constructed it? What is the motive for constructing it? What is Hell?"

"You are not qualified to know these," the other said.

Zhang Ruochen was frustrated. He was able to counter Saints now and was definitely the top figure of Kunlun's Field. But here, the man looked down on him and wouldn't tell him anything.

He didn't want to leave without accomplishing anything, so he activated the Man Sword state of the Sword Way. He transformed into a sword to try and break into the Gate to Hell.

He couldn't even get through the first level? He didn't believe that.

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to approach the door of light, a large hand more than thousands of miles wide extended from the palace. It slammed down on Zhang Ruochen.

Bang!

His vision went black and the world spun. He didn't know what he'd experienced. When he saw light again, he felt himself plummeting.

He wanted to control his weight and stop falling, but he couldn't.

Boom.

He crashed onto the ground, creating a huge ditch. He lay in the bottom. It felt like his body had fallen apart. Gradually, he recovered his senses. Looking up at the sky, he wondered, Where have I been...slapped to?

"Brother Chen!"

"Zhang Ruochen."

Huang Yanchen and Blackie's voice sounded one after another. Then Zhang Ruochen pushed himself up with difficulty. Massaging himself, he realized that he wasn't too

badly hurt. He looked up at Blackie and Huang Yanchen and asked with confusion, “Am I back on Bai Chang Star?”

Huang Yanchen and Blackie were taken aback. Then Blackie said, “Earlier, we saw a meteorite streak across the sky and crash onto the ground. We came to check and didn’t expect that it was you. Did the teleportation fail?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Shocked confusion filled his eyes. “He slapped me back to Bai Chang Star,” he said to himself. “What kind of powerful figure is that?”

Everything that had just happened was like a dream. It was unreal. Zhang Ruochen still found it impossible.

“Brother Chen,” Huang Yanchen said. “What did you experience? Did you reach that square sun?”

Zhang Ruochen had thousands of questions. Standing up slowly, he pondered and finally told them everything he’d seen.

“What...Gate to Hell...”

Huang Yanchen and Blackie were just as shocked as Zhang Ruochen had been. Then Blackie rushed toward the Space Transfer Formation. It wanted to check the Gate to Hell personally, but Zhang Ruochen stopped him.

“I believe that you shouldn’t go,” he said seriously. “If that guard is annoyed, the consequences might be unconceivable.”

Blackie calmed down. “You’re right. He was able to slap you back to Bai Chang Star and you’re not even hurt? How can this be possible? Even a Supreme Saint can’t be this powerful.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “I suspect that there’s a wormhole that connected the Gate to Hell with Bai Chang Star. That guard just slapped me into the wormhole instead of straight to Bai Chang Star.”

Blackie and Huang Yanchen agreed with his deduction. If someone was really able to slap a man to millions of miles away, then his cultivation must be at some horrifying level.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Blackie. “Blackie, you have a vast knowledge about many things. Have you heard of the Gate to Hell before?”

Blackie fell into deep thought and then shook his head. “No.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit disappointed. “Saint Monk Xumi was able to create these various Space Transfer Formations all the way to the Gate to Hell. This means that he must know of its existence. You’re from his same era and you never heard of anything?”

Blackie was also thinking about the Gate to Hell. Like Zhang Ruochen, it had many questions and desperately wanted to know the answer. If it wasn’t worried about angering the guard, it would’ve gone personally.

“Was the Gate to Hell born naturally?” Huang Yanchen asked. “Did it appear in the universe or is it a pass that the various Saints of Kunlun’s Field built?”

“It would be stranger if the Saints built it,” Blackie said. “I suspect that it’s a miracle. Only divine beings have the power to be so mysterious. If this door was born spontaneously and has been among the stars since the beginning of time, then I believe there must be some legends.”

“What if it has something to do with Saint Monk Xumi?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

When he’d charged toward the Gate to Hell earlier and almost approached it, he sensed that the spatial structure around the door of light was odd. With the door as the center, the entire starry sky seemed to have been locked by an invisible force.

That was why he suspected Saint Monk Xumi had participated in building the Gate to Hell.

“That old donkey is pretty powerful,” Blackie said. “It might really have something to do with him.”

They continued discussing but couldn’t come to a result. In the end, they could only prepare to go back to Kunlun’s Field with the questions.

They might be able to find some clues back home.

“Since we can transport to Bai Chang Star according to the spatial coordinates, we should be able to return to Goldshine Void World if we reverse the formation.”

Zhang Ruochen had read an explanation about reversing formations in the Time and Space Secret Guide. He started studying closely.

Half a day later, Zhang Ruochen grasped the techniques for formation reversal. He brought Blackie and Huang Yanchen into the transfer formation. They started the way back to Kunlun’s Field.

Before activating the formation, Zhang Ruochen looked at the Gate to Hell and Yellow Spring Star River one last time. It felt like this was a forgotten history. Perhaps, it could be brought back one day.

Whoosh—

The formation was activated. Zhang Ruochen left the Bai Chang Star. When they passed by Goldshine Void World, they didn’t stop and went back to the star near the Blue Dragon Void World.

Finally coming back to the familiar starry sky, it felt like they’d come back home. Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen both let out a long sigh.

“Next, we have two choices,” Zhang Ruochen said. “One, we can go toward the nearest wormhole. We’ll go through the turbidity and return to Kunlun’s Field through spatial jumps. Two, we can continue reversing the Space Transfer Formation. We might be able to return to Kunlun’s Field.

“These two choices are both dangerous. The first one might lead us into a fight by the various forces. For the second one, the other end of the Space Transfer Formation might not be Kunlun’s Field. The other end might have been destroyed too.

“Choosing the first one is relatively safer. I can use the Traceless 36 Changes and turn into Gu Linfeng. I might be able to fool them.”

“Let’s choose the second one!” Huang Yanchen said. “It’s dangerous, but if we can find Saint Monk Xumi’s starting

point, we might find some clues about the Gate to Hell. There can't be a glowing door deep in the universe for no reason. There must be an answer and I really wish to know."

"I support the second choice too," Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen thought the same as them, so he activated the Space Transfer Formation without hesitation.

After who-knew-how-long, the light of the formation faded. They were in a cold, pitch black, and quiet world. There was no light anywhere. They couldn't even see their hands before their eyes.

Their cultivations were also restricted. The Holy Qi within them seemed to have been frozen and could only circulate slowly.

"The rules here are completely different from Kunlun's Field," Blackie said, frustrated and with regret. "Oh no, we might've come to an unfamiliar world."

Zhang Ruochen took out a light-element spiritual crystal. Holding it in his hand, he observed the surroundings. Disbelief filled his eyes. "How is this...this is incredible..."

"Brother Chen, what did you discover?" Huang Yanchen asked.

"This is Kunlun's Field," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Kunlun's Field?" Blackie asked. "The laws here are so strange and completely different from Kunlun's Field. How can it be?"

"This is the first gradient of the Bottomless Abyss," Zhang Ruochen answered. "I came here before, but you didn't dare come down, so you obviously don't know."

"The first gradient?" Blackie yelped.

"How can the starting point of the Space Transfer Formation be here?" Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure it out.

Zhang Ruochen had once come to the first gradient to save Saint Lady while investigating the secrets of the blood beasts.

He was very familiar with this place and couldn't have mistaken it.

Roar!

There was a deafening roar. Levels of soundwaves swept over like a tide. Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen and Blackie were thrown out.

Kaboom!

A blood beast with two wings and sized like a mountain landed on the ground. Its sharp claws tore up the ground by stepping on it. Many thousand-pound boulders flew out in all directions.

“Who are you? Why did you come to the Bottomless Abyss?”
A man clad in black stood on the beast's back. He had a hood on so his features and age were unclear.

Hearing his voice, it sounded familiar. Zhang Ruochen thought back and shock flashed past his eyes.

It was the Hierarch of the Blood God Sect.

The light from the Space Transfer Formation must have lured him over. However, why was he in the Bottomless Abyss and able to ride a blood beast?

Chapter 1157 - Hierarch

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“The hierarch of Blood God Sect sent Nether Heavenly Palace to guard the endless abyss because he wants to suppress the blood beasts to prevent them from escaping Ancient Snow Mountain and getting into the territory of Blood God Sect. Why is the hierarch of Blood God Sect riding a blood beast?”

Zhang Ruochen was confused.

Zhang Ruochen had wondered where blood beasts came from for a long time.

The banner kings from Nether Heavenly Palace said that after Blood Empress was killed by Emperor Ming during the fight, her blood was spilled on the first level of the endless abyss. Some of the savage beasts absorbed the ferocious bloody Qi, and then they turned into ferocious beasts with the strong blood lust.

Zhang Ruochen suspected that it might have something to do with the hierarch of Blood God Sect.

What happened?

The hierarch from Blood God Sect was wearing a huge black rope, standing on the back of the dragon blood beast. Even though the rules of sky and land suppressed his cultivation, the forces coming from the hierarch of Blood God Sect was still awing.

He was one of the top overlords in Kunlun's Field. Everyone respected him.

“Ao!”

Dragon Blood Beast looked up and roared again.

The roaring sound shook the air around it, paining the heads of Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. They felt that their eardrums were about to explode.

The hierarch of Blood God Sect stared at the transport formation on the ground, and he looked suspicious. He didn't expect that there was a formation on the first level.

“Space transport formation?”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect hadn't studied the time and space himself, but he was the hierarch of a sect after all. His experience and knowledges were incomparable, which was why he could recognize the space transport formation.

He somehow figured out what happened. He looked to Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen, “Who are you? Where do you come from?”

These two random words already created great pressure for Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. They felt like being pressed by a mountain. They couldn't breath, and their mind and saintly souls were being intimidated.

Other half saints would have been completely crushed already.

Everyone would be scared by someone like the hierarch of Blood God Sect. Zhang Ruochen had to control the fear inside him so that he didn't panic.

He was thinking rapidly of a way to survive this.

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was one of the most top-tier saints, if not already a saint king.

Even Ghost King Bloodmoon wasn't in his class. If he asked Ghost King Bloodmoon for help, he would expose Universe Spiritual Map, which might accelerate his demise.

He could only rely upon himself to get away.

Zhang Ruochen slowly stood up and looked into the eyes of the hierarch of Blood God Sect. He said, “Who are you?”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was a bit surprised to see a level-nine half saint stand up under his pressure.

But again, no matter how powerful a level-nine half saint was, it was nothing compared to him. The hierarch could kill him with a finger.

The only thing keeping Zhang Ruochen alive was the questions the hierarch of Blood God Sect had.

“You don’t have any right to ask me anything. If you answer my question honestly, I might give you a quick death.” The hierarch of Blood God Sect said calmly.

Zhang Ruochen said, “What if I don’t tell you?”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect chuckled as he found Zhang Ruochen very immature. He said, “If you refuse to answer me, I’ll have to seize your memories now.”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect stopped talking. He reached his hands out of the black rope.

“Hua.”

Blood Qi whirlpool was condensed on his palm, forming destruction Qi that was quickly spinning, racing toward Zhang Ruochen.

Something was not right.

The hierarch of Blood God Sect wasn’t as powerful as what Zhang Ruochen thought.

What happened?

Zhang Ruochen didn’t have time to overthink. He mobilized all the power in his body, and the power gathered in the arms.

All the one hundred and thirty-two apertures on his body emerged, and the sound of dragons and elephants was transmitted from his arms, giving out gleaming light. He pushed his palms forward, clashing with the Bloody Qi whirlpool.

“Hong Long.”

Zhang Ruochen stepped ten feet back, making three deep footprints before balancing himself again.

Zhang Ruochen was surprised that he could ward off the attacks from Blood God Sect without being injured.

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was also surprised. He said, "What an impressive youngster. You might become a saint soon."

Zhang Ruochen was more confident as he could ward off the attacks from the hierarch of Blood God Sect. He said, "This body of yours isn't a real one. It's only a saint soul stunt double of yours."

However, even a saint soul stunt double could crush Zhang Ruochen easily.

However, the rules of sky and land in the abyss were different from those in Kunlun's Field as they could greatly reduce the cultivation of monks.

As long as a monk had great enough constitution, he or she could defeat those who were at a higher level.

Which was why a saint soul stunt double of the hierarch of Blood God Sect wasn't able to suppress Zhang Ruochen.

"Impressive. You can tell that this is only my stunt double." The hierarch of Blood God Sect smiled.

"Not only can I tell that this is your saint soul stunt double, but I've already figured that your original body is already a saint king. You're definitely a great power to be reckoned with in Kunlun's Field." Zhang Ruochen said.

"You've already known who I am?"

The hierarch of Blood God Sect suddenly became extremely aggressive.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Why are you so tense. Actually, we can have a nice chat. You have questions about me, and I have questions about you too. Why can't we just be nice to each other and answer each other's questions?"

"Do you really think you're qualified to ask me questions?"

The hierarch of Blood God Sect found it amusing. He was the hierarch of an ancient sect. Even saints needed to tiptoe in

front of him, yet he could suppress a half saint today.

“Don’t overestimate yourself, boy. Even though I’m only a saint soul stunt double, it’s easy for me to take you down. I don’t even need to do it myself.”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect didn’t want to talk to Zhang Ruochen anymore. He said to the dragon blood beast beside him, “Take him. Remember to keep him alive.”

The blood-red eyes of the dragon blood beast glinted with bloodlust, coldness and cruelty. It grabbed toward Zhang Ruochen with its sharp claws that were fifty feet long.

It reeked of blood. Obviously, it had swallowed many creatures.

The dragon was a mid-tier level-seven savage beast, which was as powerful as an upper-class saint.

And now, it had turned into a blood beast and swallowed lots of bloody Qi, which further improved its power.

Besides, it had great constitution, which gave it a huge advantage in the endless abyss. Even upper-class saints couldn’t ward off its attack.

Zhang Ruochen was stunned. He performed spatial movement and dodged the attack from Dragon Blood Beast. He stood close to a stone wall on high alert.

“Power of the space.”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect noticed the small ripples in the air. He asked, “Are you that descendant of time and space? I’ve been looking for you for a long time, but I didn’t expect you to come to me.”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was certain that he could keep Zhang Ruochen, so he stopped hiding his identity.

Zhang Ruochen noticed that the hierarch wasn’t as vigilant as before, so he wanted to seize the chance to get some secrets out of him.

Zhang Ruochen pretended that he didn’t know the hierarch’s real identity and said, “Hierarch? Which sect are you from?”

Where is this place?”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was still cautious. Instead of answering Zhang Ruochen’s questions directly, he said, “Why are you asking so many questions? You’re Zhang Ruochen, aren’t you? Give me your Taotian Sword!”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect was in a high status. Even saints would greet him with absolute respect when they saw him. Though he was shrewd and ruthless, he didn’t even consider a half saint any threat. He had exposed his motivation.

“He wants my Taotian Sword. Interesting.” Zhang Ruochen thought.

Everyone knew that Zhang Ruochen obtained lots of valuables, including saintly source liquids, World Spirit, heir stamps and and sariras of Buddha Emperor. They were more valuable than Taotian Sword.

Why didn’t the hierarch of Blood God Sect want Taotian Sword instead?

There was only one explanation, which was Taotian Sword was more important than everything else to the hierarch of Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Are you an immortal vampire?”

The hierarch of Blood God Sect realized that he mispoke, so he stopped talking to Zhang Ruochen. He gave an order to the dragon blood beast again.

Zhang Ruochen knew that he wasn’t a match of the dragon blood beast, so he took out Universe Spiritual Map and let Ghost King Bloodmoon out.

Ghost King Bloodmoon didn’t ask for anything from Zhang Ruochen. She immediately attacked the dragon blood beast.

Her smooth hand formed a giant hand print, hitting the belly of the dragon blood beast, knocking the giant body of the dragon blood beast away.

The dragon blood beast roared and flew up, flapping its giant wings and charged Ghost King Bloodmoon.

“A dragon is powerful enough to ward off my attack and able to fight back.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon found it unbelievable Her eyes gleamed, and the bloodmoon print between her eyebrows glinted with red light. A lighth pillar was shot out.

“Pu Chi.”

The blood-red pillar penetrated the left wing of the dragon blood beast, leaving a bloody hole.

And then, Ghost King Bloodmoon turned into a ghost shadow and flew to above the dragon blood beast. She pressed her palm again, and the cold waves gushed out of her hand.

“Pa!”

The head of the dragon blood beast cracked. A bloody wound that was more than twenty feet long extended from the top of its head to its eyes.

The dragon blood beast screamed in agony, shaking its body and trying to use its tail to splash Ghost King Bloodmoon.

Chapter 1158 - True Form Arrives

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“He really does have a hidden card and actually summoned a Ghost King.”

The Blood God Sect Hierarch knew that he couldn't defeat Ghost King Bloodmoon with a saint soul body, so he used a technique to escape.

“Where are you going?”

Zhang Ruochen took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and used Sword Five. He gathered thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi to block the Hierarch's path.

“You think you can stop me?” The Hierarch was extremely skilled at utilizing power. He flicked his finger and struck the Abyss Ancient Sword. Thousands of pounds of fine force were instantly applied to destroy Zhang Ruochen's Sword Five.

Zhang Ruochen felt a sea of power crash down on him. It almost broke his arm. “So powerful.”

He took five hurried steps to the side to dissolve the power from the Hierarch's one finger. His right arm was numb and his pulicue cracked open. Blood slid down to the tip of his finger.

The Blood God Sect Hierarch's level was too terrifying. He was almost a god at martial technique and usage of power.

“You don't know your place. If we were on the surface, my saint soul body could kill you with just a finger.”

He attacked again, wanting to kill Zhang Ruochen as soon as possible and take away the Taotian Sword.

“Blood Shadow Hand.” His two hands shone with bloody light. Thirty-six hand shadows appeared, each one with elongated fingers. They attacked Zhang Ruochen from 36 directions, sealing off all of his exit paths. With this move, a string of bursts sounded.

The Hierarch had to finish quickly, so he'd used this advanced martial technique. He wanted to take Zhang Ruochen down with one move.

Zhang Ruochen activated all the Holy Qi within him. He struck with his sword with the fastest speed, creating 108 sword shadows that crashed against the Hierarch's hand shadows.

Boom, boom.

The 36 hand shadows were all tangible. They created spark after spark when they clashed against the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“As expected of the Time and Space Descendant. You are indeed powerful.”

The Hierarch quickly turned his palm into a finger. His right forefinger transformed into a string of firelight and struck Zhang Ruochen's chest. His change in movement was as fast as lightning and difficult to fend off.

Zhang Ruochen gasped. His speed couldn't catch up to the Hierarch at all. He could only block it by horizontally placing his sword.

Kaboom.

The finger with the firelight struck the blade. It distorted the Abyss Ancient Sword, bending it. The next moment, Zhang Ruochen flew backward like a rocket. He slammed against the stone wall, caving it in.

Zhang Ruochen's arms were covered in blood. Immense pain came from his heart. He felt something sweet in his throat and he coughed out blood.

The Abyss Ancient Sword had indeed stopped the Hierarch's finger. However, the force had passed through the blade and hit Zhang Ruochen's chest, injuring him internally.

"The difference in level is too big. The result has already been decided. If you had handed up the Taotian Sword earlier, you wouldn't suffer like this."

The Hierarch shook his head. He flew up like a big black bird. His fingers bent into claws and struck toward Zhang Ruochen below him.

"Heir Stamp!" Huang Yanchen cried out. She waved her arm and sent the Heir Stamp toward the Hierarch flying in the air. Her cultivation was repressed in the Bottomless Abyss, so she was unable to use a large amount of Holy Qi or activate the Heir Stamp's true power.

The Hierarch didn't even look at her. He slapped backward and sent the Heir Stamp flying back, hitting Huang Yanchen's chest. In the last moment, Huang Yanchen protected her chest with her arms and blocked the Heir Stamp.

Crack!

It was the sound of bones snapping. Huang Yanchen was thrown back. She crashed onto the ground. Her arms were broken and mangled. She couldn't raise them anymore.

The Hierarch's saint soul body was overly powerful. It wasn't easy to block his attack.

"Die!"

His black robes fluttered. Every edge of the robe was like a blade, cutting in the air with loud whooshes. His claw print was about to fall onto Zhang Ruochen's head.

Suddenly, his speed started slowing down.

No, it wasn't that his hand was slowing down. The time around him and Zhang Ruochen started flowing more slowly. This scene was very odd. The Hierarch's claw was only a foot away from Zhang Ruochen's head. If it dropped down, it could pierce his skull.

However, Zhang Ruochen stood in place without moving.

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen cut down with his sword.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen's sword attack was impossible to see with the naked eye. By the time he pulled it back, the Hierarch's saint soul body was already split in half.

“Destroy!” Zhang Ruochen wasn't satisfied yet. He was worried that the saint soul body could regroup, so he used two palms to turn the two halves into clouds of bloody mist.

“Just then, I thankfully developed my time sword technique to the third level, Twelve Hour Sword Technique. Otherwise, we would have had a bad ending today.”

Forced into that life-or-death situation, Zhang Ruochen had a new understanding of the time sword technique. He finally reached the third level.

Right now, there were 12 figures in a circle in his mind. They performed different sword moves, each one representing two hours of the day. If he didn't have more important things to do, Zhang Ruochen really wanted to go into the scroll world to study the sword technique.

Intense pain traveled from his heart. It made him quiver in pain. Clutching his chest, he coughed twice, spitting out blood again. Then he used a technique to repress the injury.

He rushed toward Huang Yanchen to check her injuries. Not only had her arms broken, her organs all had varying injuries. Zhang Ruochen was heartbroken. She'd gotten hurt to save him.

“You're heavily injured. Go into the scroll world to heal.”

Carrying her from her neck and waist, Zhang Ruochen lifted Huang Yanchen up and took her into the scroll world.

By the time he came out again, Ghost King Bloodmoon had already killed the blood beast with dragon wings. She'd also taken its beast soul and created a pill. No wonder she was working so hard. It was all for the soul pill.

Ghost King Bloodmoon put the soul pill away and looked at the huge dragon corpse. “This winged dragon is very strange.

Its physical body's power and defense are both far stronger than a regular dragon."

Zhang Ruochen dug out its saintly source and placed it in his spatial ring. "I've destroyed the Hierarch's saint soul body. His true form must have felt something and should be hurrying toward the Bottomless Abyss."

"With my current state, I'm not his match yet," Ghost King Bloodmoon said nonchalantly. "I advise you to escape for your life."

Then she went into the scroll world. She didn't plan on fighting anymore.

...

Zhang Ruochen had underestimated the relationship between the saint soul body and true form. Everything the saint soul body saw and heard could be felt by the true body immediately.

When Zhang Ruochen released Ghost King Bloodmoon, the Hierarch had already been alerted. He opened his eyes slowly.

Looking toward the Bottomless Abyss, he muttered to himself, "Zhang Ruochen, Time and Space Descendant, also has a Ghost King. They actually entered the Bottomless Abyss with a Space Transfer Formation. I cannot let them discover the Bottomless Abyss' secret. I must kill them."

Whoosh!

The Blood God Sect Hierarch transformed into a beam of blood light. He flew into the air and out of the Ancient Snow Mountain. He hurried toward the Bottomless Abyss.

First gradient of the Bottomless Abyss

Zhang Ruochen took out a light-element spiritual crystal. Holding it in his hands, he illuminated his surroundings and looked toward the Space Transfer Formation. He wanted to use it to escape.

He discovered that while he'd been fighting with the Hierarch's saint soul body, Blackie had dug out the Space Transfer Formation and placed it inside its spatial bracelet.

“What did you do?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie clutched the bracelet, afraid Zhang Ruochen would take it away. “This Space Transfer Formation can connect to the Gate to Hell. It cannot be damaged. I’ll hold it for now.”

“Take it out!” Zhang Ruochen roared. “We need it to escape right now.” He was anxious because the Hierarch could arrive at any time.

Blackie scoffed. “You want to trick me into giving up the Space Transfer Formation? I’m too smart. I’ll never fall for your tricks.”

Just then, Zhang Ruochen felt horrible saintly might crush down from the sky. Even the space and earth trembled.

“Oh no...” His expression was ugly. He looked up and saw a dark red cloud flying down from the black sky. Soon, it was above him and Blackie.

The bloody cloud spun slowly with booming thunder. It went without saying that the Hierarch’s true form had arrived. He’d come too quickly! Even if Zhang Ruochen hadn’t wasted time with Blackie, he wouldn’t have been able to escape either.

Blackie looked up. It was also shocked and it gasped. “Zhang Ruochen, you... You should’ve told me...earlier. We might’ve been able to escape.”

Zhang Ruochen rolled his eyes. Blackie had pushed off responsibility so quickly.

“Zhang Ruochen, where is that Ghost King?” a deep sound rumbled in the cloud.

The Hierarch’s saintly might was very powerful. Zhang Ruochen could barely remain standing. He could only half-kneel on the ground and support himself with his arms to keep from prostrating himself.

Their cultivations were thousands of miles away from each other. It was like a god looking down at a mortal being.

Just as Zhang Ruochen thought that he was about to die today, the pressure on him suddenly lightened. What was going on? Zhang Ruochen raised his head and looked up.

An elder in gray clothing walked out calmly from the darkness to Zhang Ruochen's side. The power radiating from him formed a shield of light. It protected Zhang Ruochen and Blackie, fending off the Hierarch's saintly might.

It's him.

Zhang Ruochen recognized the elder. It was the Taishang Elder of the Blood God Sect. He sat at the top of Qianyuan Mountain to guard the Blood God Map.

Zhang Ruochen had seen him when he tried to comprehend the Blood God Map. How come he was at the Bottomless Abyss too?

The elder looked at Zhang Ruochen and nodded with a smile. Zhang Ruochen was alarmed. He suspected that the elder already recognized him. Or did his disguise not even fool the elder at Qianyuan Mountain?

The elder looked up at the bloody cloud. His expression sharpened dangerously. "Linyuan, you still haven't realized that you're wrong?"

Chapter 1159 - Blood God Sword Breaker

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Linyuan, you still haven’t realized that you’re wrong?”

The sky was completely dark, with the exception of that bizarre red cloud floating in the air.

There was bloody Qi permeating the air.

The hierarch of Blood God Sect, Chi Linyuan walked out of the clouds.”

He was around six-foot-six tall, and he looked like a thirty-year-old. He was wearing a dark red robe and a bronze crown on his head. There were majesty forces everywhere on his body. He was definitely an unrivalled overlord.

Chi Linyuan looked at that grey-robe elder and looked surprised. He said, “You’ve already known everything, uncle?”

The grey-robed elder was very skinny, and he looked just like an ordinary elder. He sighed, “I’ve been your uncle for hundreds of years, do you really think I didn’t pay any attention to what happened in our sect? You’re falling deeper and deeper. It’s not too late for you to step back yet.”

Chi Linyuan said, “I only did it for the future of Blood God Sect. The world is getting chaotic, and the killing have already begun. Nobody can be safe. We need to make a choice in advance so that we can survive the chaotic world. You shouldn’t try to stop me, uncle.”

The grey-roped elder shook his head and said, “You’re befriending the devil by cooperating with the immortal vampires, and it’ll doom Blood God Sect forever.”

Chi Linyuan said, “Perhaps you don’t know it, uncle. I’ve already contacted Blood God using sacrifices, and I’ve seen the pictures of the future. The only way to preserve Blood God Sect is to team up with the immortal vampires so that the tradition can go on and that we won’t be a shame to our ancestral masters.”

The grey-roped elder said, “Blood God has been dead for a long time. Even if he still has some broken souls out there, there’s no much divinity left. Besides, what you saw might not even be real. Those blood emperors from immortal vampire race can affect your mind and judgment with some of their skills. The path of the saintly way was incredibly difficult. Why do you have to trust some prophecy instead of yourself?”

The grey-roped elder said it in a very calm tone, and he sounded very confident.

He didn’t believe in blood god or some prophecy. He only had trust in himself.

Blackie transmitted its voice to Zhang Ruochen, “That elder is a force to be reckoned with. He’s already got out of the belief system he used to be in. Even God can’t influence it.”

Blood God Sect was a sect established on the belief of Blood God, but now, the elder was questioning Blood God. He had already break himself from the beliefs, and his willpower couldn’t get stronger.

The grey-roped elder was trying to persuade Chi Linyuan to stop making the same mistake.

Chi Linyuan looked suspicious and sighed, “You’re right, uncle. I did lose myself already. Is it too late for me to turn over a new leaf?”

“As long as you know how to get back on the right track, it’s never too late.” The grey-roped elder smiled faintly.

Just when Zhang Ruochen thought that Chi Linyuan had already realized his mistake and wanted to get back to the right

path...

Chi Linyuan who was walking toward the grey-roped elder suddenly made an attack, erupting his tumbling saintly power.

“Hong Long Long.”

Chi Linyuan put his hands together. His hair was waving in the air, and a sound burst out from his body. He wielded the guarding saint weapon of Blood God Sect, Blood God Sword Breaker, hitting toward the eyes of the grey-roped elder.

Apparently, Chi Linyuan didn't think he was wrong at all. He only said those things because he wanted to let the grey-roped elder's guard down.

“Uncle, your ideas are so outdated that they'll hinder the development of Blood God Sect.”

The holy Qi coming out of Chi Linyuan's body already reached its limit. Each trace of holy Qi condensed into phantoms of different divine beasts. It seemed that he had used the power of ten thousand beasts.

Blood God Sword Breaker was a weapon made by the Blood God, and it had been the guarding saintly weapon of Blood God Sect. Thousands of inscriptions emerged at the same time.

“Hua La!”

The ground under the feet of the grey-roped elder started to crack because of the destruction Qi from Blood God Sword Breaker, together with the walls and mountains.

The white-roped elder was very calm seeing Chi Linyuan attack him. He sighed and slapped his palm forward, which then turned into an endless hand print, clashing with Blood God Sword Breaker.

Blackie was startled. Its tail stiffened and said, “He dares use his palm to confront the Blood God Sword Breaker. Is that elder being suicidal?”

Zhang Ruochen had heard of Blood God Sword Breaker before. It is one of the foundations of Blood God Sect. It had mysterious power.

Blood God Sect went through several great battles, and they used Blood God Sword Breaker to defeat the enemies.

That grey-roped elder dared use his palm to confront Blood God Sword Breaker. Even Zhang Ruochen was worried about him.

Before the Blood God Sword could reach the grey-roped elder, the ground under Zhang Ruochen had completely collapsed. There weren't any stones in the area of dozens of square miles.

This was the first level of the endless abyss where the rules of the sky and land could suppress the cultivation of monks, yet the blood God Sword Breaker held by Chi Linyuan could still be so destructive.

If it were on the ground, a cordillera would be level.

The hand print was completely shattered by Blood God Sword Breaker and didn't stand a chance.

“Do you really think that I'm still the young monk from before? I'm the owner of Blood God Sword Break. Only few can fight me here.”

Crimson evil light came out of Chi Linyuan again. He rushed through the darkness, wielding Blood God Sword Break and slashing toward the head of the grey-roped elder.

The clothes worn by the grey-roped elder looked like iron sheets, and his white hair looked like iron needles. He mumbled a word, “Seize.”

At the next moment, Blood God Sword Break that was held by Chi Linyuan showed up in the hands of the grey-roped elder.

“Pu Chi!”

Chi Linyuan flew out. A huge bloody hole showed up in his belly. The bright red holy blood gushed out of his body, turning into bloody Qi, turning the first level into a secret realm with bloody mist permeating.

“Peng!” Chi Linyuan hit a black mountain afar, penetrating the mountain that was solid like iron.

“So quick! I didn’t even see how that elder managed to take Blood God Sword Break and injure Chi Linyuan at the same time.”

Zhang Ruochen held his breath and gazed at that grey-roped elder. He felt that he was like a ghost, mysterious.

Blackie said, “The gap between them is enormous. The cultivation of that elder is exceptional. I can’t believe there’s someone like this in Blood God Sect.”

The grey-roped elder held Blood God Sword Breaker in his hands, shook his head and said, “Do you really think I’m obsolete?”

A cold sneer erupted in the dark.

And then, wind started to blow, followed by a large group of running beasts.

Tens of thousands of blood beasts rushed toward that elder like a cluster of blood red clouds.

Each of those blood beasts was powerful, and some of them were saints. They all looked ferocious with their eyes gleaming with blood-red light.

“Why did you cultivate so many blood beasts in the endless abyss?” The grey-roped elder said.

Chi Linyuan sneered in the dark, “I thought you were all powerful, uncle. No matter how strong you are, those blood beasts from the endless abyss can also swallow you.”

“I have to show you the real power. Only after that can you realize that there’s always someone stronger than you.”

The grey-roped elder held the Blood God Sword Breaker, and then, destruction Qi permeated.

“Xiu!”

A bloody pillar surged from the top of Blood God Sword Breaker, piercing through the darkness in the endless abyss and flew out.

The Ancient Snow Mountain was completely surrounded by bloody Qi. All the saints from Blood God Sect were woken up

as the felt the terrifying forces coming from the endless abyss.

“Our hierarch has activated the Blood Gos Sword Break. Did something chaotic happen in the endless abyss?”

“Blood God Sword Break is only activated under certain circumstances. Blood God Sect must have run into a huge enemy. Let’s hope our hierarch can suppress his enemies.”

...

The endless abyss was never in peace during the lastest time. There were many murders in the abyss.

All the disciples from Blood God Sect thought that it was their hierarch who activated Blood God Sword Breaker and he was fighting his enemies.

Disciple King Haiming flew out of the palace on Kongcheng Island. He was standing in the sky tens of thousands of feet above the ground. He looked to the direction of the endless abyss and look surprised, “Three hundred. It’s been three hundred years since the last time Blood God Sword Break was activate. What exactly is happening in the endless abyss.”

Disciple King Haiming was very curious, and he didn’t dare get close to the endless abyss.

The power ripples coming from Blood God Sword Break were tremendous. Even Disciple King Haiming might be killed if he got too close.

Zhang Ruochen only regained his eyesight after the light was dimmed down.

The bodies of blood beasts covered the ground.

There were still chaotic power ripples travelling in the sky, and it a long time for them to go away.

“All the blood beasts from the first level were killed!”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the bodies of blood beasts on the ground and missed a heartbeat.

There were a large number of blood beasts. Also, every blood beast was extremely powerful, yet they were fragile like ants in front of Blood God Sword Breaker.

The blood God Sword Breaker didn't even hit those beasts. The destruction Qi only was enough to shock them all the death, including some saint beasts.

Blackie was so horrified that all its legs were shaking.

Zhang Ruochen was very curious. He said, "Why are you so afraid? You call yourself the Emperor of Slaughter, and you claim that you're immortal, and that even Saint Monk Xu Mi can't kill you."

Blackie tried to suppress the fear in its mind and said, "Of course I'm immortal. I've seen this kind of scenes countless times."

Zhang Ruochen smiled as he didn't believe what Blackie said.

When that cat met a real top-tier great being, it would always be shocked. Apparently, the name of 'Emperor of Slaughter' was only him bragging about himself. There were no records of it in the history.

As for 'immortal', it might also be an exaggeration. Based on Zhang Ruochen's speculation, top-tier great beings should be able to kill it.

"Da Da."

The grey-roped elder walked back with Blood God Sword Breaker in his hand

Chapter 1160 - Cost

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Earlier, when the elder went to kill the Blood God Sect Hierarch, Zhang Ruochen really wanted to know the result, but he didn't ask immediately. Instead, he walked over and bowed. "Thank you, senior, for your help."

The elder collected his Holy Qi and became an average man again. Smiling, he said, "I followed Chi Linyuan all the way to the Bottomless Abyss to cut out the Blood God Sect's hidden danger. I didn't come to save you, but since I did, you should repay this act of kindness, right?"

Hearing this, Zhang Ruochen immediately put up his guard. Does he want to take treasure from me too?

The elder looked benevolent, but when he killed, he was merciless. Did he not see the corpses all over the ground?

"Senior, what would you like?" Zhang Ruochen asked calmly.

The elder didn't reply. He seemed to be immersed in his own world. "Chi Linyuan escaped to the second gradient of the Bottomless Abyss. I must go kill him so there are no remaining threats. I will kill the hidden threat of the second gradient as well."

There was a complicated look in his eyes. He sighed and continued, "The second gradient will be more dangerous. It might hide an ancient secret. I don't know if I can return alive."

Zhang Ruochen thought that he'd misunderstood the elder. With his cultivation, it would be easy to take a treasure from Zhang Ruochen. There was no need to waste so much time talking.

“Senior, do you think that there are even stronger blood beasts in the second gradient?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

The elder nodded. “Chi Linyuan is raising blood beasts in the Bottomless Abyss. He wants to use their power to take over the world. The beasts in the first gradient are only the tip of the iceberg. There are more in the second gradient. I also suspect that there’s someone even more terrible behind Chi Linyuan.”

The elder had some guesses, but he didn’t reveal them. However, there was a seriousness in his features. It was evident that the man behind Chi Linyuan must be very powerful.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t understand. Could the man be so powerful that even the elder found it troublesome?

The heavy expression faded from the elder’s features. He smiled again. “Now, we can talk about the cost of repaying kindness.”

What kind of person forced another to repay kindness?

“What cost?” The elder wasn’t a simple man. Zhang Ruochen had to be careful not to get tricked.

“Chi Linyuan has a deep cooperation with the Immortal Vampires,” the elder said. “Other than him, there must be more spies in the Blood God Sect. Find them and kill them.”

“That’s it?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

“Yes,” the elder said, smiling.

“Why should I agree?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “And what does the Blood God Sect have to do with me?”

The elder stood up straight, his eyes flashing coldly. “You are the Deity of the Blood God Sect and will replace the Hierarchy in the future. How can it not have anything to do with you? Kid, you benefited so much from the sect. Do you plan on leaving without any responsibilities?”

“You really did see through me long ago.” This was both unexpected and surprising for Zhang Ruochen.

“Your Traceless 36 Changes can fool others, but not me,” the elder said. “To be honest, you’re still very young now. Compared to old Xuanji, you’re nothing.”

“You know my master?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“Yes, we’ve had some exchanges,” the elder said.

Zhang Ruochen was silent for a moment, but he still asked, “Since you knew that I’m not Gu Linfeng, why did you let me stay in the Blood God Sect and help me become the Deity?”

If the elder hadn’t sent a message to the Hierarch during the battle for the Deity, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t have been so successful.

The elder chuckled. “Whether it be Zhang Ruochen or Gu Linfeng, you can become a disciple or even the Deity if you have the skills.”

The elder was honestly too mysterious. His cultivation was strangely advanced as well. Before him, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t hide any secrets.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “I can’t do it. What you want me to do is beyond my abilities. Disregarding if I can defeat the Immortal Vampire spies, it’s not easy for me to even find them.”

Zhang Ruochen could distinguish regular Immortal Vampire spies and find them. However, with his cultivation, he couldn’t distinguish spies in the Saint Realm.

The elder seemed to have guessed that Zhang Ruochen would say that. “What if I give you the Vampire Secrets?”

“Vampire Secrets?” Zhang Ruochen looked at him suspiciously. “In the legends, the Vampire Secrets were kept in the treasury of the Sacred Central Empire. The treasury was later taken away by the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. How could you have it?”

“Coincidentally,” the elder said calmly. “I know the lord of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion and received a hand-copied version of the Vampire Secrets. Of course, even though it’s a copy, it has every word from the real version.”

It was hard for Zhang Ruochen to keep calm. “Who is the lord of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion?” he asked hurriedly. “Where is he?”

“The lord’s identity is mysterious,” the elder said. “He also possesses the Sacred Central Empire’s treasury. So many people wish to know his identity. Why should I tell you? Plus, I can’t tell you.”

With that, he took out a yellowed book and gave it to Zhang Ruochen. “This is only a copy, but it is extraordinarily important,” he said gravely. “You cannot lose it. Find the right time and person to spread the information. It will be a heavy blow to the Immortal Vampires.”

Zhang Ruochen had no reason to keep refusing him. He agreed to the elder’s conditions. “Alright! Since I’ve benefited from the Blood God Sect, I should do something for it. However, there’s no way I can deal with Immortal Vampire Saints. Can you lend me your Blood God Mace?”

“Stop thinking about my Blood God Mace. You can’t use its power with your cultivation.” The elder took a wrinkled scroll rune out and gave it to Zhang Ruochen. “This rune has uncommon power. Do not use it unless you have no other choice.”

This scroll was just like a scrap of paper. It was wrinkled and didn’t look magical at all. It felt like it could be destroyed with a little bit of strength.

Zhang Ruochen furrowed his brow. He carefully put away the scroll, not quite believing the elder.

“After Chi Linyuan goes missing,” the elder said. “The Blood God Sect will definitely have many changes internally. You must be careful.”

Next, he told Zhang Ruochen what to pay attention to. Then he took the Blood God Mace and disappeared at the entrance to the second gradient.

Blackie finally let out a breath. “Zhang Ruochen, the Blood God Sect is a place of sin now. Even the Hierarch is working for the Immortal Vampires. Their force must be large in the

sect. I think you should leave immediately and not get involved in this. You aren't able to clean up this mess."

"I've already agreed to him. Isn't it too late for you to say this?"

Blackie was speechless. It didn't know what to say. How could it dare to speak when the elder was here?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at the book in his hands. He'd already decided. No matter how dangerous the Immortal Vampires were, he would gladly face them.

Zhang Ruochen left the Bottomless Abyss, but he didn't hurry to the Blood God Sect. Instead, he went to the Ancient Snow Mountain and hid in a concealed mountain.

He set up an invisibility formation outside of it.

Whoosh—

There would often be wind in the air going toward the Bottomless Abyss. Zhang Ruochen stood in the gorge with worry in his eyes.

"The Blood God Mace's power waves are too strong," he said. "All the strong cultivators of the Blood God Sect were alerted. The Hierarch going missing won't be a secret for long. I wonder how big of a commotion will be created."

He entered the scroll world and first checked on Huang Yanchen's injuries. After confirming that she was okay, he started healing himself.

When he was fully recovered, he took out the copy of the Vampire Secrets and started reading quietly.

It recorded many things. Not only did it include how to see through the Immortal Vampires' disguises, it also contained their weaknesses, how to defeat them, and some of their secrets.

Back then, Crown Prince guard Shangguan Que had led a large group of Saints who'd fought with Immortal Vampires to write this book. It naturally had limitless value. Otherwise, why would the Immortal Vampires try everything to find and destroy it?

The last few pages were about the Blood Empress. One of the things there attracted Zhang Ruochen's attention.

According to the book, the young Blood Empress had once fought with Kong Shangling, lord of the Peacock House. Kong Shangling transformed into a seven-colored peacock and swallowed the Blood Empress.

Even when she'd been young, the Blood Empress was already very strong. She could have fought with Saints of the older generation.

Since Kong Shangling swallowed her, there could only have been two results. The first was that the Blood Empress was refined by Kong Shangling and died. The second was that the Blood Empress killed Kong Shangling and broke free from his stomach.

But in reality, neither the Blood Empress nor Kong Shangling had died. They'd both become important figures in history.

Zhang Ruochen really wanted to know what had happened in that battle.

"How can this be?"

He discovered that there were no words at the end. After looking carefully, he realized that the last page had been ripped out?

Chapter 1161 - Seal Blood Stamp

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Who tore it?”

Was it the leader of Guarding Dragon Pavilion? Or the grey-robed elder? Who else saw this book before? What were they trying to hide?

Zhang Ruochen frowned, but he couldn't figure out the reasons behind this. He had to put it aside and stop thinking about it.

Zhang Ruochen began to learn some of the knowledge of ‘Vampire Secrets.’ He did this because he wanted to know how to identify immortal vampires and some skills to fight against them.

Seal Blood Periapt.

One of the methods to deal with immortal vampires was to use Seal Blood Periapt.

When Seal Blood Stamp was stuck on their bodies, it could suppress the bloody Qi inside their fight, rendering them defenseless.

There were four stamps on one piece of the paper in ‘Vampire Secrets.’ He could draw the Seal Blood Stamps based on the engravings of the stamps.

The stamps were different from each other, and each one was more complicated and mysterious than the last.

“Using Seal Blood Stamps is indeed the simplest and most direct way. If I can draw a lot of Seal Blood Stamps, does that

mean it'll be an easy job for us to fight immortal vampires now?"

But then, Zhang Ruochen shook his head mildly and said to himself, "Even if I'm going to publicize 'Vampire Secrets,' the four stamps need to remain confidential. If the immortal vampires know how to make the four stamps, they'll definitely study the way to counteract the stamps. The ways to make stamps need to remain a secret to most."

And then, Zhang Ruochen fully mobilized his mind power to study the first stamp.

Although Zhang Ruochen had never studied the way to draw and refine stamps, he had strong enough mind power that he could easily learn many things.

The stronger someone's mind power was, the faster it was for them to learn stuff.

The material required to refine Seal Blood was very special. Saintry bones were needed to make the stamp, and divine blood was required as ink to wield its maximum power.

Both saintly bones and divine blood were invaluable treasures, especially divine blood, one drop of which was worth an entire city. It couldn't be more luxurious for someone to use divine blood to refine a stamp.

The material used to make one Seal Blood Stamp was already too much for a saint clan. It was almost impossible to manufacture them.

"If I'd known that saintly bones could be used to refine Seal Blood Stamps, I should've put the bodies of those aboriginal martial saints into the Scroll World."

Zhang Ruochen sighed, as he felt regretful.

Now, even if Zhang Ruochen tried to get back using the space transport formation, it would be in vain.

It would be impossible to find the planet where he'd killed the aboriginal martial saints in the vast astral space.

Zhang Ruochen managed to find some saintly bones. Bones of saint kings, to be exact.

The bones of saint kings came from the body of Blue Fire Xuanwu.

Bones of saint kings and the shell were the only valuable remains of Blue Fire Xuanwu.

Blackie used some of the bones of saint kings to make something else, so there were not many left.

The bones of Blue Fire Xuanwu were very sturdy. It took Zhang Ruochen lots of energy to slice them into bony stamps by using Abyss Ancient Sword.

The power contained in the divine blood was majestic, so he needed to be extra careful when drawing, otherwise, the blood would destroy the bony stamp.

Zhang Ruochen took out a pen made of the wood of Sky-connecting Divine Tree to draw on the bony stamp.

Halfway through the painting, Zhang Ruochen made a small mistake, after which the power of the divine blood penetrated the bony stamp paper.

Chi Chi.

The bony stamp paper was burnt to ashes instantly.

Zhang Ruochen's heart hurt. The stamp paper wasn't the only thing that was lost, but also two drops of divine blood.

Zhang Ruochen took out a second piece of bony stamp paper and kept drawing.

Failed.

Failed.

...

After failing seven times, Zhang Ruochen finally successfully created the first Seal Blood Stamp.

He wiped away the sweat on his forehead and took a deep breath. He was exhilarated but also exhausted.

“It took me fifteen drops of divine blood to successfully make one Seal Blood Stamp. This is way too costly!”

Zhang Ruochen barely squeezed a smile out of his face, but he still had some sense of accomplishment looking at the Seal Blood Stamp.

Actually, it only took three drops of divine blood to make a Seal Blood Stamp. It consumed so much divine blood because the success rate was too low.

Every time he failed, Zhang Ruochen's heart ached.

“The success rate should be higher after my first success,” Zhang Ruochen said.

And then, he took out ten pieces of bony stamp papers, stacking them together and continuing to paint.

He managed to create three more out of the ten stamp papers.

However, the success rate was still not satisfying for Zhang Ruochen, so he kept practicing.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen held thirty Seal Blood Stamps in his hand, and the success rate had soared to fifty percent.

Drawing the stamp engravings was only the first step.

The second step was to preserve the stamps using either fire or other secret techniques. All monks needed to do was to infuse the stamps with Holy Qi, then they could wield the power the stamps contained.

Zhang Ruochen refined all the thirty Seal Blood Stamps he made and put them in his space ring, and then, he started to study the second stamp on ‘Vampire Secrets.’

The number of engravings on the second stamp was several times more than that of the first stamp. They were more intricate, and barely looking at them made Zhang Ruochen's head ache.

“The second stamp has got to be used to fight the immortal vampire saints. I'm far from enough to craft something like that.”

The second stamp was more demanding. It required the bones of saintly kings, and it would take dozens of drops of divine

blood to make a Seal Blood Stamp.

It took Zhang Ruochen more than two hundred drops of divine blood.

If he started to draw the second Seal Blood Stamp, he would use all the divine blood up no matter how much he had.

Zhang Ruochen asked Blackie to study the stamp engravings of all four Seal Blood Stamps.

Blackie was way more advanced on the stamp crafting, so perhaps he could draft the second Seal Blood Stamp.

After studying them for a long time, Blackie said, “There’re four levels of stamp engravings. The first Seal Blood Stamp can be used to fight the immortal vampire half saints. The second Seal Blood Stamp can be used to fight immortal vampire saints. The third Seal Blood Stamp can be used to suppress immortal vampire saint kings. As for the fourth...”

The eyes of Blackie gleamed. It said, “The fourth Seal Blood Stamp might be able to suppress the Blood Emperor of immortal vampires. If I can manufacture all four Seal Blood Stamps, we’ll fight the immortal vampires like playing with toys.”

Zhang Ruochen said impatiently, “It’s not that easy. Even the simplest Seal Blood Stamps used to fight half saints need a lot of energies. Ordinary stamp masters are not able to make them. As for saint-level Seal Blood Stamps, saint-king-level Seal Blood Stamps...it’s just going to be much more demanding. As for supreme-saint-level Seal Blood Stamps, perhaps nobody alive is able to make them.”

Supreme-saint-level Seal Blood Stamps required divine bones as stamp paper, and they would take a tremendous amount of divine blood.

The most important thing was, only stamp masters whose mind power had reached supreme-saint level were likely to craft them.

There might not be anyone who had the mind power of supreme saints in Kunlun’s Field, not to mention stamp masters whose mind power had reached that level.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Can you craft a saint-level Seal Blood Stamp or not?”

To confront the immortal vampire spies back in Blood God Sect, he needed saint-level Seal Blood Stamps to be safe.

“How much divine blood can you provide us?” Blackie asked.

Zhang Ruochen had obtained a pond of divine blood from Netherworld, but he had consumed a small part of it to refine his body, and when he was going to become a saint in the future, he would need a lot more.

The divine blood he could provide wasn't much.

“Two thousand drops.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Blackie nodded and said, “I'll try! But I won't guarantee any success.”

Blackie was highly skilled at formation, weapon refining, alchemy and beast taming, but he was less achieved at stamp making.

Which was why it said that it couldn't guarantee to make a saint-level Seal Blood Stamp.

Blackie studied them for three days before it began to craft them. It tried more than ten times, but they all ended with failure.

“Can you do it or not?”

Zhang Ruochen felt really sorry seeing the divine blood and bones of saintly kings being consumed.

“The saint-level Seal Blood Stamps are much more complicated than the half-saint-level ones. It's not that easy to craft them.”

Blackie held ‘Vampire Secrets’ and kept studying them.

He practiced while studying, and then, one thousand drops of blood were consumed.

One drop of divine blood could be sold at a high price, yet in the past few days, Blackie had consumed one thousand drops

of divine blood. Even a whole middle-age era couldn't afford that.

Zhang Ruochen strolled his temple as he was on the brink of collapse seeing Blackie fail so many times.

He left Blackie and summoned Zhao Shiqi.

The mind power of Zhao Shiqi was already at pinnacle level forty-nine, and he was one small step away from becoming a saint. He was a senior in Sacred Sect.

Zhao Shiqi saluted Zhang Ruochen and asked, "What do you need, Overlord?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "I need to stay in Scroll World for a while longer. Go back to Blood God Sect and ask about the situation in the sect. Besides, search the information of the palace ruler and the vice palace ruler of Nether Heavenly Palace. The more detailed, the better."

"Yes, overlord."

Zhao Shiqi left the Scroll World.

Nether Heavenly Palace was the leading heavenly palace of Blood God Sect. It answered only to the Hierarch of Blood God Sect and was responsible for guarding the endless abyss.

How was it possible for the Hierarch of Blood God Sect to assign such an important task to an outsider?

Zhang Ruochen suspected that there were spies among the seniors in Nether Heavenly Palace.

Chapter 1162 - Combining Memory From The Third Life

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“You really will return to the Blood God Sect?” Huang Yanchen’s voice sounded behind Zhang Ruochen.

“Yes.”

Huang Yanchen walked to Zhang Ruochen. She had a light fragrance. “The Hierarch has gone missing, so the Blood God Sect will definitely be in chaos. Those ambitious elders will want to take his position. The first person they must remove is you, the Deity who can inherit the position.”

“I know.” Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “But I have no choice. I must stay. If the Blood God Sect is controlled by the Immortal Vampires, Tiantai State will be in chaos. The entire central region will be in unrest.

“Back then, my father had led a group of human heroes and suffered great losses to drive the Immortal Vampires out. Now, my father is no longer here, but the Vampires have returned. I must do something, no matter what. Even if I can’t kill them all, I’ll still knock out their teeth.”

Huang Yanchen pursed her lips. “Since you made this decision, then I will do my best to help you.”

“Did you reach Qing Mo?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Huang Yanchen nodded. “I received the light communication rune from Qing Mo. They’ve returned to Kunlun’s Field and are hurrying over.”

Zhang Ruochen patted Huang Yanchen's pretty shoulders. Smiling, he said, "Cultivate in peace in the scroll world. Try to get through the Third Trial."

"I will definitely try my hardest to reach the Saint Realm and help you kill those infiltrators. I can't let them ruin the central region."

After Huang Yanchen went into isolation, Zhang Ruochen went to the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. Sitting on the ground, he took out the Time and Space Secret Guide. He flipped to the page that recorded the third level Twelve Hour Sword Technique.

Twelve small figures in a circle were drawn on the silver paper.

Every two hours is a shichen. Each day has 12 shichen: Zi, Chou, Yin, Mao, Chen, Si, Wu, Wei, Shen, You, Xin, and Hai. Each shichen has a respective sword technique.

When the Time Sword Technique reached the third level, it became more miraculous. It required very strong Spiritual Power, extraordinary comprehension abilities, and strong will to understand the sword technique's subtleties.

Zhang Ruochen applied a bit of Spiritual Power on the image.

Whoosh—

The 12 figures seemed to come to life. They stood up on the paper and started practicing the sword like agile dancers.

When he'd fought against the Blood God Sect Hierarch's saint soul body, Zhang Ruochen had already comprehended some of the facts of the Twelve Hour Sword Technique. Seeing the movements again, he was quickly immersed into it.

"Zi Sword."

He closed his eyes. Drunk and obsessed, he performed the first move of the sword technique.

Slowly, the time within ten miles of Zhang Ruochen became disorderly. The sky darkened and cold wind blew as if they'd entered the zi hour.

“Chou Sword.”

The sword turned and the movements became larger. Wherever the sword passed, the time there sped up or slowed down unpredictably. From afar, the world below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree changed drastically. Sometimes it was dark as night, sometimes it was brilliant with thousands of beams of sword light interconnecting. Even a Saint wouldn't dare to approach it without caution.

After practicing the Twelve Hour Sword Technique three times in a row, Zhang Ruochen felt like he'd practiced for three days. He'd used up most of his Holy Qi and he was covered in sweat.

This uses up too much Holy Qi, he thought. Each move is like countless saint spells.

The Time Sword Technique was too advanced. Zhang Ruochen only grasped the surface of the Twelve Hour Sword Technique now. He was far from understanding it all.

I should've cultivated this in the third life of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map. If I can combine the memories of the third life with the Saintly Way, my understanding of the Twelve Hour Sword Technique can improve more.

Without further ado, Zhang Ruochen began acting. He undid the memory seal of the third life. The memories and knowledge flooded over like a tide.

In the third life, Zhang Ruochen had many enmities with Ling Feiyu.

In order to understand the Saintly Way, Zhang Ruochen had entered this life to cultivate. He became the strongest figure of the empire and had a great reputation. Countless cultivators respected and looked up to him.

Ling Feiyu was the top killer of the Demonic Way. Her ultimate goal was to kill Zhang Ruochen. Unfortunately, she never succeeded and was always defeated.

Their rivalry lasted for 100 years. Many things happened. Some of them awed Zhang Ruochen after he combined the memories.

So miraculous. It's like it really did happen. I wonder what happened in the remaining four lives. Zhang Ruochen smiled.

For some reason, Zhang Ruochen already saw Ling Feiyu as a close friend. She taught him sword techniques and Zhang Ruochen had also acted as her teacher. She had saved him and he had saved her.

The two had gone through danger together but were also rivals. This kind of relationship was built up through time and experiences. It was very, very deep.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen really wanted to bring a vat of wine and secretly climb onto the main platform of the Demonic Sect. He wanted to drink happily with her under the night sky and ivory moon, discussing the experiences of the third life. There were too many things he wanted to talk about.

He wondered how the high and mighty First Saintess of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect would view this relationship.

Would she see me as a lifelong friend too? Zhang Ruochen smiled.

In the end, he didn't combine the memories of the remaining four lives. The memories from this life were already enough for him to digest for now.

He could only consider the fourth life after becoming a Spiritual Power Saint.

After combining the memories and understandings of the Saintly Way from the third life, Zhang Ruochen's fist, palm, and sword technique and Spiritual Power all had different improvements.

Both the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm and Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm reached a more advanced level. They unleashed much stronger power.

For sword, he cultivated Sword Six to the fourth level. Of course, there was still a ways to go before completing it.

He also improved in Spiritual Power but didn't reach level 50. He still wasn't a Saint.

The memories and understandings of the third life didn't create as dramatic of improvements as the first and second life. Indeed, the improvements in martial technique will keep decreasing in the later lives.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't disappointed though. The Twelve Hour Sword Technique at least had big improvements. It was now one of his most important hidden cards. If he used it, he could threaten some mid-level Saints.

After deepening his understanding of the Saintly Way, it would be easier to go through the Pre-Saint Trials too.

Now, I'm confident in completing the first trial.

Zhang Ruochen prepared to go through the trial and reach the Pre-Saint Realm.

Blackie rushed over a bit crazily and almost sent Zhang Ruochen to the ground. "Success! Success! I finally succeeded in creating a Saint level Blood Repression Rune. Haha!"

"You succeeded?"

Zhang Ruochen was overjoyed. He took the rune scroll in Blackie's hand. Studying it, he realized it was right.

"Great. With this Blood Repression Rune, I'll be able to repress even Immortal Vampire Saints." Zhang Ruochen put the rune away and asked, "Can you make another one?"

"It's already difficult to make one. Do you think it's a piece of cake?" Blackie rolled its eyes.

"You used 2,000 drops of divine blood to create one Saint level Blood Repression Rune?" Zhang Ruochen couldn't accept this. Wiping his smile off, his heart was chilled. "So you aren't much better than me in runes! If I knew this, I would've gone to the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians and had the rune masters of the Shi Family help me produce it."

"Even a rune master might not be better than me." Blackie lowered its eyes. "Since I could produce this one, the following ones will be much easier. How about you give me 2,000 more drops of divine blood? I can make at least two Blood Repression Runes for you."

One was indeed too few. If he met a powerful Immortal Vampire Saint, Zhang Ruochen might not be able to repress him. With two more runes, he would be more reassured.

He could always go to the Ancient Race of Prison Guardians after the Immortal Vampire crisis was settled.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. He took out 2,000 drops of divine blood and gave them to Blackie to mess around with.

Before he could go through the first trial, he received Zhao Shiqi's message.

The Hierarch has gone missing and the sect is in chaos. Today, the elders will host a meeting to choose the substitute Hierarch. All Saints and Half-Saints will participate. Deity, if you receive this message, please hurry back to the Blood God Sect to prevent the infiltrator from becoming the substitute.

Seeing the information on this rune, Zhang Ruochen realized the severity of the issue. Without further hesitation, he rode a Beast King back to the Blood God Sect.

Since the Saints and Half-Saints will all be at the meeting, I can use this chance to try the techniques in the Vampire Secrets. I'll see how many infiltrators there really are.

The Beast King he was riding was called Three-Headed Flood Dragon King. Blackie had tamed it and inscribed a rune inside it.

The beast had gone through two Pre-Saint Trials and was a strong figure on the Outer Rank. It was 600 meters long and shone with cold blue light.

It flew over the Blood God Sect's territory, creating a huge commotion. Some of the disciples thought that it was an enemy attack and wanted to activate the defense formation.

"Don't do it yet. Look at the Three-Headed Flood Dragon King's back. Is that...the Deity?"

"Didn't the Saintess say that the Deity might have already died in the Blue Dragon Void World when she returned?"

"It really is the Deity! He's back, riding a flood dragon! That's so powerful!"

...

Gu Linfeng had displayed extraordinary talent when he'd fought for the Deity position. He was still popular in the Blood God Sect. Many younger disciples viewed him as an idol. Many young girls viewed him as their dream lover. He was definitely a well-liked figure.

Gu Linfeng's return caused an uproar. Of course, some cultivators were surprised. They immediately carved this news onto a communication rune and sent it out.

A while later, the important figures of the Blood God Sect were all informed of Gu Linfeng's return.

Chapter 1163 - The Deity is Back

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Blood God Sect, Baby Master Mountain.

Baby Master Mountain was of great momentum. There were clouds and mist surrounding the mountain, and the fluctuating ridges and peaks piercing through the sky, and they all looked extremely precipitous.

There were ancient formations inscribed on the cliff, forming traces of lightning. Those who weren't the core members of Blood God Sect couldn't get to the top at all.

At this moment, at the peak of Baby Master Mountain, inside Guiyuan Divine Palace, more than half of the high-level members of Blood God Sect gathered here.

They were giving out gleaming holy light, and they were all famous people. Behind some of the monks were mysterious images and phantoms of saints.

If a low-level warrior came here, he might be grovelling and thought he had arrived at the saint sector.

The four discipline kings gathered here. Seven of the ten palace rules from ten heavenly palaces were also here. All the six saint elders from Elder Pavillion were also here.

Since the power from Blood God Sword Breaker was triggered, the secrets of the endless abyss were exposed. Almost all the high-level members from Blood God Sect knew now that there were three more levels in the endless abyss.

This led to chaos in the sect.

What was more disturbing to the monks from Blood God Sect was that their hierarch and the guarding saint weapon Blood God Sword Breaker disappeared at the same time, which put everyone in a state of anxiety.

In the past hundreds of years, Blood God Sect was already a dying power out of the seven ancient sects. It didn't have enough new talents, nor did it have top-tier great beings to guard it.

This was a time of chaos, which meant other powers might take advantage and attack Blood God Sect.

Nobody knew where this would lead to in the future.

One of the saint elders from Elder Pavillion, Yuan Xin Elder, stood at the center and said, "Recently, several battles erupted in our sect, which led to a large number of deaths and injuries. There were pre-saints who got killed. Our hierarch has only been missing for several days, yet our sect is being disintegrated?"

The voice of Yuan Xin Elder echoed in Gui Yuan Divine Palace.

All the monks held their breath.

Yuan Xin Elder had an extremely high social status, and his cultivation was an enigma.

But now, he was holding the meeting of elders personally, which meant Blood God Sect was indeed facing unprecedented danger.

One of the four discipline kings, Di Yuan Discipline King, stood up and said, "The situation is very unstable in the state of Tiantai. There might be turmoil at any time. Our hierarch and the guarding saint weapon have both gone missing, which means our sect might be a target for all the other powers."

"I think we can't be leaderless. I think we need to select our new hierarch, otherwise, we might be doomed."

The palace ruler of Heavenly Palace said, "Our hierarch has only gone missing for a short while. He might return at any time. There's no need to select a hierarch. Instead, we need to

check what kind of powerful enemies our hierarch ran into that he was forced to trigger the power of Blood God Sword Breaker. Is it related to the endless abyss?”

...

The high-level members from Blood God Sect kept arguing with each other. Some of them were progressives as they suggested they select a new hierarch immediately.

Some were more conservative, saying that their hierarch had only gone missing for a few days, and that there was no need to select a hierarch. They proposed that they needed to strengthen the defense power of Blood God Sect to resist any possible enemies.

Discipline King Haiming was sitting in the chair with his eyes closed. He hadn't said anything, as if he had fallen asleep.

A signal flare glinted in his hands.

Discipline King Haiming finally opened his eyes. He read the message in the signal flare and couldn't help smiling playfully. “This boy is back alive.”

Other than Discipline King Ming, several others in Guiyuan Divine Palace had also received the signal flare.

Ao!

Three-head Dragon King roared, carrying Zhang Ruochen and arriving at the foot of Baby Master Mountain. The sound waves permeated, trembling the holy Qi in the sky and land.

“What happened?”

The half saints and saints in Gui Yuan Divine Palace also let out a trace of their mind power to inspect where the roaring sound came from.

As for those monks who had received the news in advance, they all looked calm and had figured out how to deal with the upcoming changes.

It wasn't a small issue for the deity of Blood God Sect to come back in such a crucial moment. Nobody knew what this meant to the entire sect.

“Gu Linfeng?”

“The deity survived Blue Dragon Void World?”

All the monks present looked at each other, as they found it startling.

Gu Linfeng was only a young boy in Blood God sect. To saints, he was no different from a child.

However, he had a very special identity: the deity of Blood God Sect.

Which meant he was the heir of the hierarch.

After the hierarch had gone missing, he was the most qualified one to inherit the throne, instead of the elders, discipline kings and palace rulers.

The atmosphere in Guiyuan Divine Palace suddenly turned weird.

Zhang Ruochen jumped off the back of Three-head Dragon King, wearing a gorgeous blood-red robe. And then, he put one of his hands behind his back and walked toward Guiyuan Divine Palace.

Zhang Ruochen looked around and saw the expressions of all the monks.

The Saintess Shangguan Xianyan from Blood God Sect sat close to the center. Her glowing body was surrounded by nine levels of divine light. She looked holy and exquisite as if she were a divine girl.

Her eyes glinted with strangeness.

Hai Lingyin, Ji Shui and some of the other half saints who went to Blue Dragon Void World were all kind of surprised.

Blue Dragon Void World had been destroyed one month ago, but nobody heard anything about Gu Linfeng. Everyone thought that he had been killed.

Nobody expected that he could make it back after all this time.

Zhang Ruochen walked to a spot beside Shangguan Xianyan, took a look at her, smiled and sat down.

However, before Zhang Ruochen could sit tight, someone started to question him.

“You finally know how to come home, deity?” Discipline King Diyuan asked Zhang Ruochen as he was very unsatisfied with him.

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm and smiled. “I did what I should’ve done. Do you have anything to ask me, Discipline King?”

“It’s good for you to come back.”

Discipline King Diyuan sneered, “Discipline King Criminal Law, take him and put him into the dungeon first.”

Discipline King Criminal Law Saint Hong Yuan was the oldest disciple of Discipline King Diyuan, so he followed his lead strictly.

As he stood up, Holy Qi gushed out of his body. Those traces of holy Qi intertwined with each other and looked like hundreds of crimson chains, making clattering sounds.

Zhang Ruochen remained calm and was still sitting in his seat. He picked up his cup of saintly spring water and had a sip. He smiled and said, “Discipline King Diyuan, you’re impressive. How dare you try to seize the deity of a sect? Are you more powerful than our hierarch?”

Saint Hongyuan waved his sleeves and glared at Zhang Ruochen. “Gu Linfeng, you killed Wei Longxing in Blue Dragon Void World, and he came from the same sect as us. You need to be executed as you’ve broken the law. Discipline King is only going to lock you in the dungeon, which is more than merciful already.”

“Wei Longxing.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “If I remember it correctly, Wei Longxing was your disciple, Discipline King Fayuan.”

Wei Longxing had great potential. Discipline King Diyuan had great hope for him.

Wei Longxing didn’t disappoint Discipline King Diyuan. He became a pre-saint before turning one hundred years old. He

had a great chance to become the deity, yet he was trumped by Zhang Ruochen, after which Discipline King Diyuan started to hold grudges against Gu Linfeng.

In Blue Dragon Void World, Gu Linfeng had killed Wei Longxing.

How could Discipline King Diyuan not be angry at Zhang Ruochen?

Discipline King Diyuan sneered and stopped talking with Zhang Ruochen. He said, "Seize him."

"Wait."

Zhang Ruochen stood up and said, "I did kill Wei Longxing, but he tried to kill me first. Is that a good enough reason? Self-defense?"

Saint Hongyuan said, "Kill you? Can you prove that Wei Longxing tried to kill you? Can you provide some evidence?"

The saintly power coming from Saint Hongyuan was like a tumbling red ocean. As for Zhang Ruochen, he was like a boat on the waves, one which might be torn apart at any time.

Before Zhang Ruochen went back to Blood God Sect, he had expected that someone would hold the death of Wei Longxing against him, so he was very calm.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Shangguan Xianyan and said, "Saintess, you should know better than others about what really happened in Blue Dragon Void World."

Shangguan Xianyan, Wei Longxing, Hai Lingyin, and the others teamed up with Shangguan clan and Cai clan to marginalize, and even kill him.

After some time, Shangguan Xianyan realized that Zhang Ruochen was a power to be reckoned with, so she decided to mend the relationship between them.

However, Zhang Ruochen still thought of Shangguan Xianyan as an enemy.

If she could tell the truth, Zhang Ruochen would let her get away with her crimes from before.

If she wanted to seize this chance to suppress Zhang Ruochen, he wouldn't show any mercy to her in the future.

Shangguan Xianyan didn't expect Gu Linfeng to question her on such a touchy subject.

If she said that Wei Longxing tried to kill Gu Linfeng, she would make herself an enemy of Discipline King Diyuan.

If not, then the feud between her and Gu Linfeng would become worse.

Shangguan Xianyan had seen how powerful Gu Linfeng was in Blue Dragon Void World. He managed to kill several beast kings and Wei Longxing himself.

If Gu Linfeng survived this, he would definitely kill her just as he had killed Wei Longxing.

Saint Hongyuan looked to Shangguan Xianyan and said, "Saintess, do you know that Wei Longxing tried to kill the deity?"

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed. He patted the shoulder of Shangguan Xianyan and said, "Saintess, you have to be honest. Don't treat an innocent man unjustly."

Shangguan Xianyan pursed her lips. She was already a level-eight half saint, and her cultivation surged, but she felt great pressure sitting beside Gu Linfeng. Her body couldn't help but shiver.

Chapter 1164 - Battling Saint Hongyuan

Chapter 1164: Battling Saint Hongyuan

“Gu Linfeng!” Saint Hongyuan roared. “Are you threatening the Saintess?”

Zhang Ruochen shrugged as if he didn't care. “Where did you see me threatening her?” he asked indifferently. “Plus, the Saintess has the Shangguan Clan behind her. She has an important background. I wouldn't dare to threaten her.”

Saint Hongyuan's eyes shone coldly and he clenched his fists. He had a bad temper. If not for Gu Linfeng's special status, he would definitely beat him up right now.

Discipline King Haiming narrowed his eyes. Gu Linfeng has become more and more arrogant after becoming the Deity, he thought. He doesn't even respect Saints. It looks like I have to teach him a lesson.

Gu Linfeng was Discipline King Haiming's grand-disciple. He'd also helped Gu Linfeng into the Deity position. Now, he felt that he was losing control of Gu Linfeng. Thus, instead of helping, he wanted to use Discipline King Diyuan to punish Gu Linfeng.

Shangguan Xianyan knew that Gu Linfeng's biggest support was Discipline King Haiming. Now, his attitude was indifferent. He didn't plan on helping Gu Linfeng at all.

Did he want to abandon Gu Linfeng and become the Hierarch himself?

If Discipline King Haiming really abandoned Gu Linfeng, then he'll be dead even if I tell the truth.

After thinking carefully, Shangguan Xianyan said slowly, “Wei Longxing and the Deity indeed have some enmities. However, I truly don't know if Wei Longxing tried to

assassinate him. This is a grave matter. I hope the Criminal Law Saint can investigate before making a decision.”

Saint Hongyuan scoffed. “Gu Linfeng, what else can you say now? The Saintess doesn’t even know.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Shangguan Xianyan. Instead of growing angry or losing his cool, he smiled. Disregarding what happened later, Wei Longxing had indeed sent people to assassinate Zhang Ruochen at the Chaotic World Mountain.

How could Shangguan Xianyan not know?

Without a doubt, Shangguan Xianyan had already sided with Discipline King Di Yuan when she said those words.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Saint Hongyuan with disdain. “As the Deity, must I explain to you? Is it a major problem for me to kill someone who I believe should die? According to the sect’s rules, the Deity has the right to kill. I can punish any disciple below the Saint Realm with a single word.”

Saint Hongyuan was furious. A mere Half-Saint dared to look and speak to him with a disdainful tone. Didn’t he know to respect a Saint?

Some of the cultivators present thought that Gu Linfeng was like a true Deity and deserved respect. Most thought that he was just looking for death.

The current Blood God Sect faced both external and internal problems. There were many conflicts and it could break apart at any time. Under these circumstances, this Half-Saint Deity still dared to go against a Saint. Was this not suicide?

Does this guy not want to live anymore?

Ji Shui bit her lips. She felt that Gu Linfeng didn’t understand the situation and would be in trouble today. It depended on whether Discipline King Haiming would help him.

She knew that to Discipline King Haiming, only “benefits” and “interests” mattered. If he thought that helping Gu Linfeng would be too costly, he would abandon him.

“Punish with a word? I believe that you are killing the innocent. You are too violent and not suitable for the Blood

God Sect's Deity. You should be removed.”

Saint Hongyuan opened his arms. Holy Qi flooded out of his palm and transformed into hundreds of chains that flew toward Zhang Ruochen.

Crack, crack.

Each chain was like a snake or dragon. They carried destructive power and flew in unpredictable paths. It was clear that Saint Hongyuan had added in rules of the Saintly Way.

Zhang Ruochen could tell that many of the hundreds of chains were actually apparitions. Only eight were real.

He grabbed forward. His arm turned into a string of afterimages and he grabbed all eight chains.

Saint Hongyuan was surprised. Before he could react, Gu Linfeng charged from across from him. Gu Linfeng's image grew bigger and bigger in his eyes.

Oh no.

Saint Hongyuan activated all his power and pushed forward. Zhang Ruochen struck with a palm. The two palm prints produced a thunderous boom.

Saint Hongyuan retreated. He didn't steady himself until he was beside Discipline King Di Yuan.

Zhang Ruochen remained standing there with one hand behind his back. “You dare to disrespect me with your cultivation?”

The Gui Yuan Divine Palace was silent. Everyone was shaken. There was a huge gap between the Half-Saint and Saint Realm. It was practically impossible to cross, like the distance between the earth and sky.

And yet, Gu Linfeng had forced a Saint back. This was unbelievable.

They didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had only used half of his power. If he'd used all his power, that palm could've injured Saint Yuanhong.

Right now, he was Gu Linfeng and not the Time and Space Descendant. He had to suppress his power. He couldn't

perform too well.

He is actually this strong now? Shangguan Xianyan felt great pressure. If Zhang Ruochen couldn't die today, her future would be very hard.

Elder Yuan Xin's ancient eyes brightened. It was as if he'd seen a pearl amidst the sand. He was both surprised and happy.

Saints were revered by all, but this Half-Saint had forced a Saint back. Saint Hongyuan was humiliated and even more furious. "No wonder you are the Deity. You are indeed talented. However, I had let down my guard. If we really fight, your cultivation level will be nothing to me."

Saint Yuanhong's aura kept rising. Blood-red Holy Qi poured out like a sea of clouds. At the same time, a huge hundred-foot-tall saint image stood up behind him.

"Let's go out and fight!" Zhang Ruochen said. "If we destroyed the Gui Yuan Divine Palace, none of us would be able to pay for it."

"I only need one or two moves to defeat you. I won't destroy the Gui Yuan Divine Palace."

"Don't speak so confidently. Otherwise, you might be embarrassed later."

Zhang Ruochen flew out toward Baby Master Mountain and landed above the sea of clouds. Saint Hongyuan pursued him. He became one with the saint image. Waving his arm, he slammed down on Zhang Ruochen.

"Saint Hongyuan is truly furious. We might be able to use this chance to kill the Deity."

"Saint Hongyuan entered the Saint Realm ten years ago. His cultivation is very advanced. Even if he hadn't reached the mid-level of the Saint Realm, he'd still be able to defeat Gu Linfeng."

"Let's bet how much power Gu Linfeng can force Saint Hongyuan to use?"

...

Zhang Ruochen poured Holy Qi into his Seven Kill Boxing Glove and activated the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns. When he slammed down, the seven saint jades on the glove shone with terrifying light at the same time. They were like seven stars.

Boom.

Saint Hongyuan's palm print was actually shattered. Zhang Ruochen attacked offensively with nine palms, still activating the Destruction of the Thousand Patterns.

“You want to fight a Saint with the help of the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns? You're too naïve!”

Saint Hongyuan produced a print. The saint image behind him consolidated more and more. Dense Saintly Way rules streaked throughout, manipulating the Spiritual Qi.

“Optimus Sky Kill!”

The saint image punched forward. Like a dark red mountain, it shattered the nine beams of Destruction of the Thousand Patterns and crashed into Zhang Ruochen's palm.

He flew back, feeling soreness in his arm.

Saint Hongyuan was indeed strong. He wasn't a common lower-level Saint. He was comparable to the eight-dragon Martial Saints of the Blue Dragon Void World. It was a bit difficult for Zhang Ruochen to fight with only half of his power.

“Saint Hongyuan actually used a saint spell like the Optimus Sky Kill. It seems like that Gu Linfeng is quite powerful, even stronger than some new Saints.”

Discipline King Haiming's eyes kept changing as he thought about something.

Saint Hongyuan didn't give Gu Linfeng time to breathe. He used the Optimus Sky Kill again. This time, it was stronger. The power waves made all the Blood God Sect disciples within hundreds of miles fall down in fear.

“Seven-Aperture Blood Palm.”

The seven apertures on Zhang Ruochen's palm all opened. Thick Blood Qi poured out, forming a huge apparition of Pluto behind him. Combining with the Destruction of the Thousand-patterns, Zhang Ruochen attacked again.

Zhang Ruochen's Seven-Aperture Blood Palm had improved greatly. He could unleash 44 times the combat ability now. It far surpassed regular saint spells.

Boom!

Saint Hongyuan's saint image couldn't take the blow at all. It exploded and even his true form flew back. His face paled and he suffered some internal injuries.

"He's this strong?"

Saint Hongyuan was in disbelief. He had to admit that he'd underestimated the Deity. He was also more furious from the embarrassment. He prepared to use his fatal trick to defeat Gu Linfeng no matter what.

The sky darkened without warning.

A mass of black clouds appeared above Saint Hongyuan and Zhang Ruochen.

"Are these... Trial Clouds?"

Saint Hongyuan had gone through the three trials long ago, so he quickly recognized them.

Zhang Ruochen looked up and smiled faintly. "It seems like my cultivation has reached an extreme state. I didn't have to use much power to lead to a Pre-Saint Trial."

Since it came, he would accept it. He was confident that he would succeed in the first trial.

Chapter 1165 - Became a Pre-saint

Chapter 1165: Became a Pre-saint

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

“How reckless. You dare try to pass the pre-saint trial while fighting me. You’ve really underestimated me.”

Saint Hongyuan opened his wings wide and formed a giant phantom of the divine elephant. Just as he was prepared to make attacks, he could feel that the trial clouds above his head were getting thicker and thicker. The forces made a saint like him feel dangerous.

Hua La.

Lightning flew across the sky. The trial clouds turned bright from time to time as if sky blades were traveling back and forth in the space.

Normally, when a level-nine half saint tried to pass the first pre-saint trial, the trial clouds were only ten miles long.

However, the trial cloud triggered by Gu Linfeng was more than forty miles long, and it was only getting longer and thicker.

“How is it possible? Is Gu Linfeng passing the third pre-saint trial instead of the first one?”

“If Gu Linfeng has already passed the first and the second pre-saint trial, the saintly way power from his body would be different, but I can’t feel the difference yet. He’s not a pre-saint,” a palace ruler from Blood God Sect said.

Until now, the half saints from Blood God Sect thought that Gu Linfeng was only a level-nine half saint.

“He’s only a level-nine half saint, but he’s confident enough to challenge Saint Hongyuan. The deity is indeed the best genius

since Blood God Sect was established. If he can become a saint, he'll dominate Kunlun's Field."

Discipline King Diyuan said, "The first pre-saint trial of his is that forceful, more forceful than the third pre-saint trial of many other monks. He might be killed by the trial lightning."

Many monks also had the same idea as Discipline King Diyuan because Gu Linfeng had improved way too fast. He evolved from a level-two half saint to a level-nine half saint in less than a year, and now, he was going to pull through the first pre-saint trial.

How could he have a solid foundation by improving so fast?

If he didn't have a solid foundation but tried to pull through the pre-saint trial, he would definitely be killed.

Saint Hongyuan was hesitant for a long time, but he eventually chose not to make attacks as he was afraid that he would be attacked by the trial lightning.

The trial cloud brought by Gu Linfeng had already covered an area of more than seventy square miles.

This was only the first pre-saint trial, yet it brought such a horrific lightning trial, which was out of the knowledge of all the monks present.

There's no need for me to attack him. The four nine trials can kill him, Saint Hongyuan thought.

There was a force of killing in the sky and land as if a storm was coming. All the monks were thrilled by the majesty emanating from the trial clouds.

Hua La!

A bolt of lightning thick like a bucket rushed out of the trial cloud and hit toward Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen didn't try to dodge it. He stood still, relaxing his body.

Chi Chi.

Zhang Ruochen felt that he was being suppressed by one hundred thousand mountains. His body shivered and dived two

hundred feet before he could balance himself again.

He was still able to stand still in the space with lightning flowing around his body.

However, the trial lightning couldn't hurt him, not even a little bit.

“How is it possible? Even I am not able to withstand that trial lightning, yet he wasn't even injured at all? Is his body already invincible?” Saint Hongyuan was startled as if he had met a ghost.

When he was trying to pull through the pre-saint trial, he was almost killed. It wasn't as easy as it was for Gu Linfeng.

Saint Hong Yuan transmitted his voice to Discipline King Diyuan and asked him whether he could kill Gu Linfeng now or not. After all, he would be much more difficult to deal with if he passed the pre-saint trial.

Discipline King Diyuan transmitted his voice to him and said, “If you get into the lightning trial area now, you might be killed even if you manage to end Gu Linfeng.”

“Can you do that yourself, grand master?”

Saint Hongyuan thought of Gu Linfeng as a huge threat that must be eradicated.

After thinking for a while, Discipline King Diyuan said, “Gu Linfeng is a deity after all. He has a special status. If I kill him, the other elders will hold it against me, which is not good for me to fight for the position of the hierarch.”

“Besides, the Four Nine Trial has thirty-six trial lightning in total; each one is more powerful than the last. Gu Linfeng might not be able to survive the end. If that trial lightning can kill him, there's no need for me to do anything.”

Deafening cracking sounds came from the trial clouds, and the lightning struck like rainfall.

Hua La!

Hong!

...

After a short while, Zhang Ruochen went through eighteen lightning trials, and his entire body turned red like fresh china.

Every time he was struck, he would fly up, trying to get closer to the trial lightning.

“Sister Huang is right. The power from the trial lightning is indeed able to refine my body and saintly soul. Every time I am struck by the lightning, I feel that my entire body is purified. If I can pass the first pre-saint trial, I might be able to sanctify some apertures. I might even sanctify my entire body.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking about other stuff. He performed his techniques, inhaling and exhaling the spiritual Qi.

The lightning trial became fiercer and fiercer. Each trace of lightning was destructive, melting the ground under Zhang Ruochen’s feet.

Especially the final nine traces of lightning, which poured down like nine waterfalls, devouring Zhang Ruochen as if they were going to destroy the world.

All the disciples from Blood God Sect held their breath, looking into the distance at the nine lightning waterfalls. Their feet couldn’t help trembling.

“He failed to pass the pre-saint trial?” Ji Shui sighed.

Although Gu Linfeng was pretty annoying and acted like a coward in Blue Dragon Void World, Ji Shui was still his uncle who saw him grow up.

Seeing him walk toward his destruction from his brilliance pained Ji Shui a little bit.

Shangguan Xianyan’s eyes glinted with feeble light. She observed the trial lightning carefully, but she couldn’t find Gu Linfeng at all. She said, “Was he killed already?”

The high-level members of Blood God Sect who were gathered in Guiyuan Divine Palace all had different feelings. Some of them smiled with relief as the death of Gu Linfeng meant one less competitor for them.

Hua!

A human being rushed out of the rock lake. He was half-naked, flying toward the space.

It was Zhang Ruochen.

Everyone was dazed, staring at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had successfully withstood the thirty-six trial lightnings, becoming a first-trial pre-saint.

After being refined by the lightning, the impurities in his body were eradicated. His body was glowing with holy light. Both his body constitution and saint souls had taken a great leap forward.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers, making cracking sounds. He smiled. "Finally, I've become a pre-saint."

Discipline King Diyuan glared at Zhang Ruochen. He moved his lips and said, "Gu Linfeng must've been severely injured during the trial. Kill him before he can solidify his cultivation."

Hua.

The eyes of Saint Hongyuan gleamed. He immediately took action, putting his hands together, and a fire chain that was dozens of miles long flew out from between his eyebrows, forming a curve in the air.

The fiery chain was made of the backbones of twelve saintly beasts. They contained twelve different saintly way powers. As he triggered all of them, they could crack the mountains and the ground.

Even Saint Hongyuan could only wield the fiery chain three times.

If he couldn't manage to kill Zhang Ruochen within three strikes, Saint Hongyuan would have to run for his life.

Saint Hongyuan didn't want to resort to this technique, but he had no other choice.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the fiery chain flying toward him. He smiled as if it were nothing.

Just as the fiery chain was about to whip Gu Linfeng...

“Gu Linfeng is indeed powerful, but he’s too young and cocky. Didn’t he know that Saint Hongyuan killed a saint with that fiery bone demonic chain before?”

“The more wit, the less courage. Perhaps becoming a first-trial pre-saint will be the end of his saintly way.”

...

Zhang Ruochen slapped forward, and a giant handprint flew out of his Seven Kill Boxing Glove, getting larger and larger, turning into a mountain of five fingers.

Peng.

The forceful fiery bone demonic chain was knocked away, and the ‘five-finger mountain’ kept roaming forward, covering the body of Saint Hongyuan.

Saint Hongyuan yelled in great pain. The saintly bones started to crack in his body. His body was also shattered.

“So powerful...”

Saint Hongyuan turned around immediately and started to run away.

Gu Linfeng who just became a pre-saint looked invincible to him. At this moment, Saint Hongyuan couldn’t care less about his dignity as a saint anymore. He just wanted to run away.

I can’t let him run away, and I can’t give Discipline King Fayuan any chance to save him. I need to kill him as quickly as possible.

Zhang Ruochen kept infusing his eyes with the Holy Qi in his body.

Two deity prints started to spin in his eyes, and then, two gleaming light pillars were shot out of his pupils, hitting the head of Saint Hongyuan.

Peng.

The head of Saint Hongyuan was crushed, and his head exploded.

The headless body of Saint Hongyuan flew another ten miles and arrived outside Guiyuan Divine Palace. It walked four steps forward before it fell on the ground, with blood spilling everywhere.

If his head was cut off, he might have still lived after someone attached it back. After all, saints had great life forces.

However, the head of Saint Hongyuan was completely crushed, which meant he didn't have a chance to survive.

Silence.

The sky and land went into deep silence. Most of the monks looked terrified.

A saint had been killed, in front of everyone.

Chapter 1166 - I Don't Dare Accept This Accusation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Gu Linfeng had acted too decisively. Discipline King Di Yuan didn't even have time to help. Before he'd died, Saint Hongyuan probably didn't expect that Gu Linfeng would have the guts to kill him either.

Discipline King Di Yuan shook in anger. Two bursts of cold air flooded out of his nostrils, making all the cultivators present shiver.

“Deity, do you know what the punishment for killing a Saint of the sect is?” His voice contained boundless murderous intent, but he tried his hardest to control his anger.

Zhang Ruochen flew down to the front of Gui Yuan Divine Palace. Standing beside Saint Hongyuan's body, he said fearlessly, “What punishment?”

“Death,” Discipline King Di Yuan said.

“Oh!” Zhang Ruochen nodded nonchalantly and asked, “So what?”

Many cultivators were unhappy with Zhang Ruochen's actions. Even those Half-Saints and Saints who had no conflicts with him thought he was being too much. Saint Hongyuan only wanted to capture and imprison him, but he killed the Saint instead.

That was a Saint. How many Saints were in the entire Blood God Sect? How many resources were sacrificed to produce a Saint? How could he kill one just like that?

Every Saint stood at the peak of the cultivation world, and they were able to intimidate the other forces. Even the Hierarch had to provide an explanation for killing a Saint.

“His personality is too violent,” a Saint elder said. “If he becomes the Hierarch, the Blood God Sect would never be in peace.”

Elder Yuan Gui, one of the six Saint elders, showed anger. “Killing a Saint is definitely a grave sin. We elders should now give our opinion. How about we revoke Gu Linfeng of the Deity status and disable his cultivation?”

He looked toward Elder Yuan Xing for his opinion. If the six elders voted unanimously, Gu Linfeng could be revoked of his title. It depended on Elder Yuan Xing now. After all, he was the most powerful in the Elder Pavilion.

Elder Yuan Xing sighed. His eyes were troubled and he felt indecisive. He actually still thought highly of Gu Linfeng, because he saw a shred of hope in him. He believed that if Gu Linfeng matured, he could lead the Blood God Sect out of despair and even to glory.

But now, it seemed that Gu Linfeng had a flaw. He was too violent and not suitable for the important position.

Was even the last shred of hope gone too?

Just as Elder Yuan Xing was still hesitating, Gu Linfeng laughed loudly. “Elder Yuan Gui, you wish to revoke me of my title so soon. Is it because you have a better option?”

“The Blood God Sect has no place for a Deity who kills his own people,” Elder Yuan Gui said. “If someone like you matures, only disaster will find the sect.”

“Kill my own people? I don’t dare to accept this accusation.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head and chuckled.

“That is the truth and you still dare to argue?” Discipline King Di Yuan roared. He didn’t want to waste time with Zhang Ruochen anymore. He wanted to personally defeat him.

Many of the Half-Saints present grew gleeful. Gu Linfeng had angered a Discipline King and Saint elder at the same time.

How could he stay alive today?

“I don’t see how that is the truth,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.
“You all didn’t see the truth at all.”

With that, Zhang Ruochen lowered himself and opened Saint Hongyuan’s robes. He searched along the back of the corpse.

“What is he doing? Destroying the corpse?”

“Are you stupid? What’s the point of destroying the corpse?
Did the Deity discover a secret?”

...

Everyone grew curious. They stared at Saint Hongyuan’s corpse, wanting to know what Gu Linfeng was doing.

“Found it!”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. He hit the corpse’s spine with a finger and the corpse shuddered violently. With a whoosh, a pair of huge red wings broke through the skin on the back.

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the various cultivators of Gui Yuan Divine Palace. “Do you see the truth now?” he asked, smiling.

Boom!

The upper level figures of the sect felt as if they’d been struck by lightning. An uproar spread through. No one could keep calm, including the Saint elders, Discipline Kings, and palace lords.

“A Vampire... Saint Hongyuan was actually an Immortal Vampire infiltrator.”

“Oh my! How could this be? Saint Hongyuan was the Criminal Law Saint. How could he be a Vampire?”

“He controlled justice, but he was a Vampire. How many disciples died unfairly in his hands each year? He must have sucked all their blood dry.”

All the disciples felt fear from the realization. They were also furious. Thinking carefully, they felt that many disciples had

died unfairly in the Criminal Law Court each year. Most of them were probably turned into food for Saint Hongyuan.

“Thankfully, the Deity found him out. Otherwise, the Blood God Sect would suffer even more losses.”

That moment, the entire situation changed. All the cultivators that had stayed neutral saw Zhang Ruochen in a different light. No one in the sect realized that Saint Hongyuan was an infiltrator, but Gu Linfeng did and killed him. Could this not prove his abilities?

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were like daggers. “Discipline King Di Yuan, shouldn’t you give everyone an explanation?”

Discipline King Di Yuan was furious at being demanded by a Pre-Saint. However, he also realized that this Gu Linfeng was difficult to deal with. He had to be careful so he wouldn’t get tricked.

Forcing down his emotions, he said, “Saint Hongyuan is my disciple, but I didn’t know this. I was fooled too. What, do you suspect that I’m also an infiltrator?”

“It could be possible,” Zhang Ruochen said calmly.

Discipline King Haiming finally opened his eyes and chuckled. “Linfeng is indeed a bit unmannered, but his words are still logical. From what I know, Saint Hongyuan was able to become the Criminal Law Saint all because of Discipline King Di Yuan’s support. How can you be free of suspicion?”

Discipline King Haiming really knows how to choose the right timing. He started going for me now. Discipline King Di Yuan’s eyes narrowed. He realized this wasn’t good.

Zhang Ruochen naturally knew that Discipline King Haiming also wanted to use this chance to defeat Discipline King Di Yuan. Even if he couldn’t kill Di Yuan, he still wanted to make him lose the chance to become the Hierarchy.

So Zhang Ruochen should help him.

“Discipline King Di Yuan’s cultivation is very advanced and you interact with Saint Hongyuan every day,” he said.

“There’s no reason why you couldn’t see that he’s an Immortal Vampire, right?”

Di Yuan roared. “Who in the entire sect realized that he was a Vampire, other than you? Speaking of, I would like to know how you could tell his identity with your cultivation.”

Zhang Ruochen had learned some spells from the Vampire Secrets, but he hadn’t reached the point of seeing through the disguise of a Vampire Saint so easily. He’d made this realization when he discovered some tiny flaws in the earlier battle.

Zhang Ruochen knew that the other infiltrators present would want to know the answer to Discipline King Di Yuan’s question too. Thus, he released his Spiritual Power to check everyone’s expressions. He memorized each one who had an odd expression.

At the same time, he said slowly, “I have indeed learned a secret technique to distinguish Vampire infiltrators.”

“Really?” Discipline King Di Yuan said coldly. “Can the Deity please reveal that technique? This way, we can be guarded against infiltrators in the future.”

“The secret is…” Zhang Ruochen purposely dragged out his words to check everyone’s expression. Half a beat later, he finally said, “Investigate carefully.”

“Investigate carefully?”

What kind of secret was that? The cultivators present all thought that Gu Linfeng was tricking them and lying.

The Vampires’ force was very strong in the Blood God Sect. If Zhang Ruochen had really revealed the Vampire Secrets, it might immediately lead to a war. By then, even if the Blood God Sect was able to kill all the Immortal Vampires, they would still suffer great losses.

Plus, Zhang Ruochen wasn’t clear just how large the Immortal Vampire force was yet. What if the Vampires destroyed the Blood God Sect instead?

He couldn't take that risk. He could only go slowly and steadily, taking out the Vampires one step at a time.

"No matter what," Elder Yuan Xing finally said. "This must have something to do with Discipline King Di Yuan. For the following days, I hope Discipline King Di Yuan can spend a few days in the Elder Pavilion. You have no complaints, correct?"

Di Yuan obviously knew that "spend a few days" meant imprisonment. He wouldn't be allowed to interact with the outer world.

Under the current situation, he had no choice at all. He could only agree.

That damn Gu Linfeng. I will rip you to shreds one day. He clenched his fists, anger rising up in waves within him.

Once he was imprisoned in the Elder Pavilion, he would lose the ability to fight for the Hierarch position.

Next, Elder Yuan Xing issued another command to the ten top cultivators. They must capture the cultivators that Saint Hongyuan had interacted with. Not a single one could be missed.

Saint Hongyuan's reveal would cause a chain effect. To the Blood God Sect, it would definitely be earth-shaking. One could also see from this just how powerful a Saint was.

Zhang Ruochen dug out Saint Hongyuan's saintly source. He also put away the Fire Bone Chain, wrapping it around his right hand. Looking at the saint corpse on the ground, his eyes brightened.

"It would be good material for producing blood runes," he mumbled to himself.

Carrying the headless corpse, he strode into Gui Yuan Divine Palace. "Don't just stand there. If you want to hold the elder council, please continue. If you wish to continue judging me, you can do so as well."

Seeing Gu Linfeng walk in with the headless saintly corpse, sweat beaded on Shangguan Xianyan's snow-white forehead.

It felt like Gu Linfeng was warning her or preparing to kill her.

As Gu Linfeng walked closer, Shangguan Xianyan's heart almost jumped into her throat. She clenched her fists tightly. She felt like she would break down soon.

Even she didn't know why she was so scared of Gu Linfeng.

Perhaps Gu Linfeng killing Wei Longxing and Saint Hongyuan had left a deep impression on her, scarring her with the cruel image.

Chapter 1167 - Turmoil

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen walked slowly toward Shangguan Xianyan.

“Deity.”

One of the six saintly elders, Elder Yuanzhou, stood up and called Zhang Ruochen.

Elder Yuanzhou was an elder from Shangguan clan. His name was Shangguan Zhou. He had prestige in both Blood God Sect and Shangguan clan.

Apparently, Elder Yuanzhou was worried that Zhang Ruochen might kill Shangguan Xianyan, which was why he stopped him. After all, Shangguan Xianyan was still a genius from Shangguan clan. Elder Yuanzhou couldn't let her be killed.

Shangguan Xianyan was relieved. Now that Elder Yuanzhou had stepped in, chances were Gu Linfeng wouldn't kill her. She now realized that her clothes were completely wet.

Zhang Ruochen stopped walking and asked, “Do you need anything, saintly elder?”

Elder Yuanzhou was wearing a blue robe. He said, “Deity, you identified an immortal vampire saint among our sect. You made a great contribution. I think you deserve to be rewarded.”

Was he cozying up?

Zhang Ruochen vetoed that thought.

He was only a pre-saint without any background. Elder Yuanzhou was a saintly elder and somebody in Shangguan

clan. It was impossible for him to show Zhang Ruochen any courtesies.

Zhang Ruochen spun his eyes and said, "I'm still guilty in everyone's eyes. How can I be rewarded anything?"

Elder Yuanzhou smiled. "You're a deity, which means you can kill anyone who's not yet a saint. It doesn't matter why Wei Longxing died. It's not your fault."

Zhang Ruochen said, "You're a reasonable man, Elder Yuanzhou."

Elder Yuanzhou then said, "After our hierarch has gone missing, our sect doesn't have a leader. The entire Kunlun's Field is in chaos. Turmoil is drawing near. Our sect can't afford to have no leader, and at this time, we need someone to step up and to take the position of the hierarch, leading hundreds of millions of followers to get through the difficulty."

"Deity, you have great intelligence and potential. You're still so young, but you're able to kill a saint. Even compared to everyone else in the world, you're a top-tier talent. I think we need to have a crowning ceremony now, inviting all the saints in the world so see you ascend to the crown of the new hierarch of Blood God Sect."

Everyone in Guiyuan Divine Palace was simmering with excitement.

Crowning someone as the hierarch was an event of world interest, which would draw all the attention in Kunlun's Field.

If other monks suggested it, people wouldn't take it seriously. However, it was one of the six saintly elders, Elder Yuanzhou, who suggested it, so it meant something.

The interest of all discipline kings and palace rulers were piqued.

Zhang Ruochen was also surprised to hear Elder Yuanzhou say something like that.

Zhang Ruochen knew that many high-profile members from Blood God Sect had their eyes on the position of the hierarch.

If he said yes, he might be assassinated before he could ascend to the throne.

Does he want to kill me by helping me become the hierarch?

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure out what Elder Yuanzhou really wanted. After thinking about it for a while, he said, "It might take several years to reach the level of our hierarch. Our hierarch has only been away for a couple of days, and he might return at any time. There's no need to rush."

Just as Elder Yuanzhou wanted to say something, Zhang Ruochen continued, "Besides, a deity can only become a hierarch after he or she becomes a saint. I've only passed the first pre-saint trial. I don't even know whether I can pass the following two trials or not."

Discipline King Haiming thought, sitting in his chair, This boy has some wisdom of self-knowledge. He's not too reckless to be redeemed.

Discipline King Yuanzhou looked a bit upset, then he looked to Elder Yuanxing.

Elder Yuanxing shook his head, stood up and said, "Since the deity doesn't want the throne of the hierarch yet, then we'll wait. However, we can't wait for too long. Things are changing drastically now, and there're tragic wars in all areas. Some of the clans with ancient inheritance have been annihilated. There're dangers coming toward Blood God Sect, so the position of the hierarch can't be vacant for a long time."

"If our hierarch still hasn't come back when the deity becomes a saint, we'll hold the crowning ceremony, bestowing the title of hierarch upon our deity. Any problems?"

Elder Yuanzhou and Elder Yuanxing spoke at the same time, which represented the will of Elder Pavilion. Even though some people were coveting the position of the hierarch, they could only keep it to themselves.

Besides, Gu Linfeng needed to become a saint first before he could ascend to the throne. He wasn't going to become the hierarch now.

"No problem," Discipline King Haiming said.

And then, all the saints and half saints said that they agreed with the decision made by Elder Paviion. No monks objected to that.

The meeting of elders kept going, mentioning all the major incidents that had happened recently.

A Taigu remains became a supreme saint in Savage Barren Territory. The sky in the east was filled with purple light, permeating toward the state of Tiantai in the central region. Almost all the human saints sensed that.

That Taigu remain then waged a war of ten thousand races, trying to unite all the savage beast races in the Savage Barren Territory.

Now, there was bloodshed everywhere in Savage Barren Territory. Mountain after mountain was tainted with red.

“A Taigu remain has become a supreme saint?”

Zhang Ruochen was surprised to hear that as it was exceptional news.

The rules of the sky and land were vastly different from those during the Taigu era. After the ancient era, almost no Taigu remain could become a supreme saint.

Emperor Ming told Zhang Ruochen that once a Taigu remain became a supreme saint, it could completely activate the Taigu bloodline inside its body, after which it would become the most powerful creature in Kunlun’s Field. It might even become a God.

To human beings, once a Taigu remain became a supreme saint, it meant a catastrophe was coming.

That Taigu remain was still fighting in the Savage Barren Territory. He hadn’t gotten into the territory of the First Central Empire. However, once it united all the savage beasts, it would target the human race.

Another major issue was discussed, which concerned Empress Chi Yao.

“Since the empress left the capital city, she has never shown up. The beast kings and Blood Emperor who fled overseas all

came back to Kunlun's Field. Someone reckons that the Empress has been killed by the Celestial Way because her cultivation is too strong.”

“The dead spirits and ghosts in the east are getting more and more reckless. They established a city of ghosts in Fallen-gods Mountain Range, which was called Yi City. It's said that there're no living creatures for hundreds of thousands of square miles around Yi City. All the cities and towns have vanished.”

“Ministry of War, East Region Saint Mansion and Martial Market Bank all sent their armies to try to attack Yi City, yet they didn't succeed. Instead, they suffered grave losses.”

...

And then, they talked about the south and the north.

Death Zen Sect made a comeback, conquering a first-tier clan in the south that had an ancient inheritance. It established altars and spread doctrines. They admitted many disciples and confronted the imperial government. They had already conquered nine mansions and hundreds of counties.

Death Zen Elder titled himself 'Holy Law Buddha' and crowned eighteen Lohans and seventy-two Bodhisattvas, trying to fight Thousand Buddha Way for the legitimacy. He wanted to fight the First Central Empire for the control right of the world.

The most chaotic place was in the north.

It was said that immortal vampires had already conquered more than half of the territory. Billions of human beings were turned into the food of immortal vampires.

The army of the imperial government gathered in the north, fighting the immortal vampires to death.

It was said that some of the important cities, spiritual mountains and holy lands in the north were filled with blood. There were saints being killed every day, and mountains of bodies of ordinary soldiers were transported back to the central region.

The nine states in the central region were the center of the First Central Empire where the human beings gathered, but it was tumultuous.

The ghost city Yi City, Death Zen Sect and immortal vampires all sent a large group of great beings and got into the central region, leading to destruction and turmoil.

Besides, all the clans in the central region were all ambitious and wanted to make a gain in this chaotic time. There were so many connections between the Death Zen Sect and immortal vampires, and they were arranging the formation.

The central region that was supposed to be in peace was about to fall into chaos.

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect the situation in Kunlun's Field to get this worse, or that human powers were cooperating with immortal vampires. Don't they know that they are being self-destructive?

"Is Chi Yao so powerful that she can stabilize the entire Kunlun's Field?" Zhang Ruochen whispered to himself.

When Chi Yao was guarding the central capital city, the city was prosperous, and the martial arts were booming. The entire empire was thriving. The status of the human beings in Kunlun's Field surged.

Right after Chi Yao disappeared, Kunlun's Field turned into chaos. Countless human beings died; countless others became homeless and were captive.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Is the war in the north really so tragic that even the imperial government can't resist them?"

The First Central Empire was mighty. The Ministry of War itself was powerful enough to control all the void worlds and states. There was no reason that they couldn't ward off the attack from immortal vampires.

A half saint who rushed back from the north sighed and said, "The imperial government gathered the Ministry of War, Earth God Temple and the power of Confucious, which is an unprecedented army, yet it was still crushed and couldn't ward off the immortal vampires at all. When I was coming back, I

saw dead bodies everywhere and heard gloomy songs everywhere.”

“It was said that immortal vampire saints lurked in the army, which is why spirits of the army were not stable, giving immortal vampires a chance to crush them.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath.

As the crown prince of Sacred Central Empire, he was supposed to be happy, yet Zhang Ruochen didn't feel pleased at all. Instead, he was worried.

“I need to publicize ‘Vampire Secrets’ as soon as possible, but how am I supposed to publicize that? Who should I entrust it to?”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed. He recalled someone who might be the best choice for him to entrust with the book.

Chapter 1168 - Arrange And Plan

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Saint Lady.

Other than her, Zhang Ruochen couldn't think of a better candidate. The most important part was who should take the Vampire Secrets to the Central Emperor City to the Saint Lady?

This was critical. There could be no mistakes.

After the Elder Council, Zhang Ruochen left alone. He rode the Three-headed Dragon King back to the Deity's cultivation residence—Secret Dragon Palace.

It wasn't very far from Baby Mountain and was in the core area of the Blood God Sect. It was between six spiritual mountains. The architecture was opulent with paths set with jade. All sorts of spiritual medicines were planted in the mountains. Thousands of maids and medicine servants were busy with chores.

Zhang Ruochen sat below a waterfall in the back garden of Secret Garden Palace. He placed a scroll on the stone table before him.

Holding a bronze pen, he was drawing a picture.

The images on the scrolls were all Vampire infiltrators. Zhang Ruochen didn't know their names and identities yet, but he memorized all of their features.

Two rows of beautiful servants stood behind him. They seemed to have walked out of paintings in their pure white

robes. It was very difficult to be chosen as a servant of the Secret Dragon Palace. They were chosen from among thousands.

Some of them were even prides of the large families under the Blood God Sect. They had very noble statuses.

Whoosh!

Spiritual Qi rippled slightly below the waterfall. A cloud of black smoke appeared in the air, consolidating into a frail figure.

“Who is it?”

The 12 servants behind Zhang Ruochen unsheathed their swords. They rushed to the front and started attacking the frail figure. However, their attacks were all dissolved before they could even fall upon the figure.

Zhang Ruochen put his pen down. “You all can leave,” he said.

Hearing his voice, all the servants put their swords away and retreated. The frail figure was none other than Zhao Shiqi.

He landed on the ground and bowed to Zhang Ruochen. “Congratulations, Deity,” he said, smiling. “You will soon become the Hierarch.”

“It is too early to talk about becoming the Hierarch. Come over and help me confirm these people’s names and identities.”

Zhang Ruochen tossed the scrolls to Zhao Shiqi so he could label them. Zhao Shiqi had been in the Blood God Sect for nearly 200 years. He knew everyone above the Half-Saint Realm.

Soon, he labeled the names and backgrounds of everyone on the scrolls. There were at least ten Saints and close to 100 Half-Saints.

He was shocked. “Are they all Vampire infiltrators?” he asked.

Zhang Ruochen flipped through the images. While checking, he said, “They’re only suspects right now. I must test them

before confirming that they are Immortal Vampires.”

They really could be Vampires. This made Zhao Shiqi’s heart quiver in fear. “If half of these figures are infiltrators, then the Blood God Sect will be in an uproar when they are exposed.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at him. “These are only a portion. There are some who are hidden very deeply or I wasn’t able to see through them.”

Zhao Shiqi’s shock was great. Now, he finally realized just how much danger the Blood God Sect was in. They were gradually going under the control of the Immortal Vampires.

He took a scroll out and gave it to Zhang Ruochen. “You asked me to investigate the palace lord and two sub-palace lords of the Nether Heavenly Palace. I have a result.”

Zhang Ruochen opened it and read carefully. His brow furrowed gradually. He couldn’t see anything wrong with the content.

At the Gui Yuan Divine Palace today, he’d also observed the palace lord and two sub-palace lords. He didn’t notice anything amiss.

“They really aren’t Immortal Vampires? How can this be?” He could not understand this. He felt that there must be something wrong.

Since the Hierarch of the Blood God Sect could work with the Vampires, then how could the Nether Heavenly Palace that guarded the Bottomless Abyss not have anything to do with them?

Since he couldn’t figure out a reason, he’d have to leave the Nether Heavenly Palace to the side for now.

Zhang Ruochen and Zhao Shiqi’s conversation was shielded with a layer of Spiritual Power. The servants of the Secret Dragon Palace could only see black smoke surrounding them. They couldn’t hear the conversation or see Zhao Shiqi.

Just then, a slightly older servant hurried over from the outside. She lowered onto one knee outside the black smoke. “Deity,” she said. “Sun Dadi of the Earth Heavenly Palace has

returned from the Blue Dragon Void World and wishes to see you.”

“He’s finally back!” Zhang Ruochen said, smiling. “Let him in!”

A moment later, Sun Dadi, Sikong One, Sikong Two, Princess White Li, and Qing Mo walked in. Other than Sun Dadi, the others all had on black hoods and were covered in Spiritual Power so no one could recognize them.

Zhang Ruochen could hear Sun Dadi’s laugh from afar.

“Leader, you really know how to enjoy yourself. The Secret Dragon Palace is filled with beauties. This is practically heaven.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at them and squinted slightly.

“Where’s Murong Yue.”

“Her?” Sun Dadi said loudly. “She returned to the eastern region. Apparently, she wants to compete for the position of the Young Master of Black Market Excellence Hall.”

“What a pity. I wanted her to help me do some things.” Zhang Ruochen was slightly disappointed.

Murong Yue’s assassination skills were very advanced. If she could come to the Blood God Sect, she could help take out all the Immortal Vampire infiltrators. This would spare Zhang Ruochen a lot of effort.

“Do what? I’m more powerful than her. Why don’t you let me do it?”

Sun Dadi was very active. His hands itched to kill. He hadn’t had many nice battles since going through the second Pre-Saint Trial.

“You?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “You can’t do it. Just work on cultivation and try to reach the Saint Realm. The world is already in chaos. If you aren’t a Saint, you’ll be unable to take control of your fate.”

Sun Dadi was indeed stronger than Murong Yue, but for killing, Murong Yue was much better. Having Sun Dadi go kill the Vampire Half-Saints would only alert them.

Sikong One giggled. “Senior Uncle, do you think I can do it? Sikong Two and I have already gone through the third Pre-Saint Trial. We’ll become Saints soon.”

“I have something more important that I need you two to help me with.”

Sikong Two immediately stepped out. Expression serious, he said, “We will definitely complete whatever you ask of us.”

“I have a friend in the Central Emperor City,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Help me go there and send her a gift. Give it straight to her own hand.”

Sikong One was unsatisfied. “Senior Uncle, are you kidding? Is this important? Just have any random person send the gift. Why should strong cultivators like us do it ourselves? Is your friend a man or woman?”

“Woman.” Then he used a telepathic message to tell them it was the Saint Lady.

“I see. Senior Uncle, don’t worry,” Sikong Two said. “We’ll definitely give the gift to her hands.”

Sikong One’s expression grew strange. He gave a thumbs up. “Senior Uncle, you are indeed a popular figure. I am so impressed.”

Qing Mo stood to the side, biting her lip. She glared at Zhang Ruochen. She thought that he was definitely playing around and had a lover outside.

Zhang Ruochen copied the Vampire Secrets again and handed the copy to Sikong Two. Of course, the copy didn’t have the four Blood Repression Runes.

Sun Dadi led Sikong One and Two out of the Secret Dragon Palace. They walked toward the outside of the mountain so they could leave the Blood God Sect.

Once the Vampire Secrets is publicized, he thought, the Immortal Vampires in the sect will definitely attack. I must take out half of them before this. There isn’t much time left for me.

He felt a pair of eyes staring at him, so he turned around and looked at Qing Mo. He chuckled. “Qing Mo, what’s wrong? Did your injuries heal completely?”

Qing Mo huffed. “Which little fox in Central Emperor City did you send the two monks to find?” she asked directly.

“Little fox?”

Zhang Ruochen couldn’t help but laugh. If the Saint Lady knew that someone had called her a little fox, what would her expression be like?

“Is she not? You sent two monks just to give that little fox a gift. You treat her so well. I will tell the princess right now that you have a lover in Central Emperor City.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t feel like explaining. After all, his relationship with the Saint Lady couldn’t be revealed. The fewer people who knew, the better. Once it spread, it would be harmful to the Saint Lady.

“Your princess is in seclusion right now,” Zhang Ruochen said. “She’s preparing for the third Pre-Saint Trial. I’m afraid you won’t have the chance to tattle now. What cultivation realm are you at now?”

“Why are you asking?” Qing Mo was very unhappy. She just disliked Zhang Ruochen.

“I need people right now. I need a few Saints who can fight and help me deal with a group of strong figures.”

“Why should I help you?” Qing Mo asked.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. “You are Princess Yanchen’s servant while she is my wife. Naturally, you’re my servant too. From a certain perspective, it’s understandable even if I want you to sleep with me.”

Since Qing Mo was already a Saint, she was definitely a strong figure. However, she was also Huang Yanchen’s servant. Her maturity was no different from a teenage girl, so Zhang Ruochen decided to scare her a little.

Qing Mo was indeed scared. She unconsciously took three steps back. Dark fire surged out of her palms as she stuttered,

“I...I’m telling you, I won’t...you...sleep with you disloyal carrot...I will not.”

Zhang Ruochen was also scared. After all, the flames in her hands were Wuliang Divine Fire. If she really attacked, the entire Secret Dragon Palace would be burned to ashes.

“I was just making an example,” he said, panicking. “Don’t get nervous. I’m not interested in a little girl like you. Any servant of the Secret Dragon Palace has a much better figure than you.”

Qing Mo’s features twisted in anger. She gritted her teeth, really wanting to attack with the Wuliang Divine Fire.

Chapter 1169 - The Storm is Coming

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Qing Mo put back her Wuliang Divine Fire instead of wielding it.

She told Zhang Ruochen that she was as powerful as an upper-class saint, and that she could help him with something, but there was no way that she would sleep with him.

It was impressive for her to become an upper-class saint, and together with Wuliang Divine Fire, Qing Mo could defeat everyone from Blood God Sect aside from elders like the four discipline kings and ten palace rulers.

“You’re only an upper-class saint. You’re just enough for me!” Zhang Ruochen said disdainfully.

Qing Mo said, “I’ve already become a pinnacle upper-class saint, and I have some incredible skills, and I can defeat some people who are at a higher level than upper-class saints. You’re not even a saint yet. What gives you the right to show disdain for me?”

Zhang Ruochen pursed his lips and said, “If it was going to take me forty thousand years just to become an upper-class saint, I’d kill myself.”

Qing Mo clenched her teeth again, and her eyes popped with anger.

Actually, plant type creatures would generally have a much longer time refining themselves before they turned into human shapes. They couldn’t compare with human beings at all.

Qing Mo had only turned into human shape around ten years ago, so it was very impressive of her to become an upper-class saint.

And then, Zhang Ruochen brought Princess White Li to the Scroll world so that she could integrate and manage the aboriginal monks from Blue Dragon Void World. After she lost her memories, Princess White Li also lost her intelligence and became way too innocent. She wasn't fit for the bloody purge in Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen sighed, as the masters he could rely on were so few.

Within Blood God Sect, there were not only spies from the immortal vampires, but also monks who were teaming up with immortal vampires. Zhang Ruochen didn't know who he could trust.

He could only rely on himself now.

Zhao Shiqi kind of figured out what Zhang Ruochen was thinking. He looked a bit gloomy and asked, "Your highness, do you need me to do something for you?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "How many upper-level-six savage beasts do you have?"

"There're forty-seven upper-level-six savage beasts in total. Three of them are beast kings, three-head dragon king, Mud Deer Beast King and Huntian Butterfly King," Zhao Shiqi said.

Upper-level-six savage beasts were more powerful than level-seven half saints but less powerful than pre-saints.

All the three beast kings were descendants of divine beasts, and they were invincible among those below the state of saint. Besides, they had great potential and had the opportunity to reach the state of saint.

These savage beasts domesticated in Blue Dragon Void World were the main power of Sacred Sect, and now, they were all managed by Zhao Shiqi.

Zhang Ruochen said, “This power is already enough to deal with the half-saint-level immortal vampire spies, but I don’t think you have enough energy to manage them all. You need someone to help or two.”

Zhao Shiqi wanted to get all the credit, so he said, “Are you referring to Sun Dadi? He is indeed powerful, but he isn’t cautious enough. He might spoil this.”

“I’m talking about someone else.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Go to the Spiritual Void Sea and invite the tenth disciple of Discipline King Haiming to come here. Her name is Ji Shui.”

Ji Shui had great power, and she was a capable person. She wasn’t fully utilizing her full potential working for Discipline King Haiming. Zhang Ruochen had wanted to invite her to Sacred Sect for a long time.

Zhang Ruochen felt that it was time to talk to her and to see what decision she would make.

After Zhao Shiqi left, another person popped into Zhang Ruochen’s mind, who was the second disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, who was also the second brother of Zhang Ruochen... Zhu Hongtao.

It is time for great beings. Should I invite him to Blood God Sect?

A servant walked in quickly from the outside and gave a salutation. She said, “Your highness, the Saintess comes. She wants to see you.”

“Tell her that I’m refining myself. I won’t see anyone.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t even turn his head around. He took out a Signal Flare and started to craft the signal flare.

The servant moved her lips, but she didn’t dare say anything in Shangguan Xianyan’s favor. She left carefully.

After crafting the signal flare, Zhang Ruochen immediately sent it away.

The signal flare could travel as fast as light, which was the quickest way for communication. Certainly, a signal flare also had some limits. If something went wrong, it might fall into the hands of the wrong monk.

Zhang Ruochen intended to send this signal flare to his second brother, Zhu Hongtao.

Zhang Ruochen had absolute trust in the disciples of Sword Saint Xuanji, except Feng Han, whose personality was subpar.

...

Elder Pavilion, Son King Palace.

Son King Palace was made of iron, connected with the mountain and the ground under it. There was a Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation inside the palace. Once someone was captured, they couldn't get out of the palace, no matter how powerful their cultivation was.

Discipline King Diyuan was sitting at the center of Son King Palace. The chains that looked like dragons were winding around him, and the other ends of the chains were connected to nine different directions in Son King Palace.

Discipline King Diyuan sensed something. He opened his eyes and looked to the front. He said, "You've already entered Son King Palace. Why don't you show yourself?"

Hua.

Circles of waves permeated.

At the center of the waves stood a black-robed elder. He walked through the waterfall.

There was a black demonic force around that elder. He looked like a ghost from hell.

If Zhang Ruochen was here, he could definitely recognize that elder. It was Elder Yuangui, one of the six saintly elders.

Elder Yuangui looked fifty years old, and the engravings beside his nose were very deep. There was a trace of white hair at the side of his head. He said, "You were too careless. How could you let Saint Hongyuan expose himself? Those

elders from Blood God Sect eradicated a large number of spies from our race. You have to bear this responsibility.”

Discipline King Diyuan stood up, dragging the nine dragon-shaped chains and sneering, “Gu Linfeng is the one to blame. If it weren’t for him, Saint Hongyuan wouldn’t have been exposed.”

Elder Yuangui said, “That brat Gu Linfeng is indeed bizarre.”

“If he was able to see through the disguise of Saint Hongyuan, he can definitely see through other spies. We have to eradicate him as soon as possible. Wait...no, I’ll chop him into pieces myself.”

Discipline King Diyuan hated Gu Linfeng’s guts. If it weren’t for that Gu Linfeng, he would’ve become the hierarch of Blood God Sect instead of being trapped in Sun King Palace.

Elder Yuangui smiled. “Don’t you worry about that. I’ve sent Liao Teng to deal with him. He won’t survive tonight.”

“Liao Teng is already a mid-class saint, so it’s not a difficult task for him to deal with Gu Linfeng, but Discipline King Haiming, who supports Gu Linfeng, is a fox. If Liao Teng is captured by him, we’ll suffer from a greater loss.”

Discipline King Diyuan said, “Let me go. I’ll do it myself to ensure our success.”

Elder Yuangui shook his head and said, “Now is not the time to let you go. If I let you go, both of our identities will be revealed. Besides, after Saint Hongyuan got exposed, the attention of all the great beings from Blood God Sect was attracted. They don’t have the energy to deal with you yet. Stay in Son King Palace. They won’t figure out who you are.”

A discipline king had tremendous power, and his disciples were all over Blood God Sect.

If it wasn’t confirmed that Discipline King Diyuan was an immortal vampire, no one dared to touch him.

“Not time yet? Then what’re we waiting for? We’ve been planning this for so many years. Do you really think that we

can't even defeat a Blood God Sect?" Discipline King Diyuan was a bit irritated.

"Prince Xia and the Empress will come back to Blood God Sect in the near future. Our Huangtian Clan will not only take down Blood God Sect, but also crush the First Central Empire."

Elder Yuangui smiled ruthlessly and said, "As for that Discipline King Haiming, I've arranged for a great being to deal with him. Even if we can't kill him, we can at least restrain him. Gu Linfeng dies tonight no matter what."

Gradually, Elder Yuangui stepped back into the hollow. His body kept fading until he completely vanished.

The night arrived. Clouds showed up among the spiritual mountains, making the Secret Dragon Palace look splendid and mysterious.

Pa Pa.

Zhang Ruochen sat at the bottom of the waterfall. He was practicing his palm techniques, and each palm from him could crack the air.

He was the only one around the waterfall.

All the female servants had left.

Ji Shui was wearing a saggy bloody robe, standing among the bloody mist. Those who hadn't met her would never expect to see an exquisite woman wearing that blood-red robe.

Zhang Ruochen stopped practicing his palm techniques. He looked to Ji Shui and smiled. "Uncle Ji, my palm is okay, isn't it?"

Ji Shui scorned Zhang Ruochen. She said coldly, "What do you want? I need to get back soon, so finish it now."

Back in Yingsha City in Blue Dragon Void World, all the human monks teamed up to defend the dignity of human beings and fought the savage beasts, but Gu Linfeng hadn't joined them.

Gu Linfeng was a coward who didn't deserve to be a deity. He was nothing compared the person she admired.

Which was why Ji Shui didn't bother to talk with him.

“Do you think you can go back after coming to Secret Dragon Palace.”

Zhang Ruochen looked aggressive. He gazed at the chest area of Ji Shui and smiled wickedly.

Recalling what Gu Linfeng had done before, Ji Shui was irritated and said, “If you dare harrass me, I'll take you down with me, even if I can't defeat you.”

Chapter 1170 - Temptation Of A Saintly Source

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ji Shui's body scattered into 12 beams of bloody Qi and flew out of Secret Dragon Palace.

“We haven't started talking yet. Senior Uncle Ji, are you leaving?”

Zhang Ruochen reached forward with his fingers splayed. The Spiritual Qi within Secret Dragon Palace suddenly consolidated. An invisible beam of Qi blew the 12 beams of bloody Qi back. They regrouped into Ji Shui's body.

She landed on the ground a bit unsteadily and almost fell to the ground.

Whoosh!

A figure flashed.

Like an apparition, Zhang Ruochen appeared beside Ji Shui. He grabbed her right wrist with one hand and wrapped around her thin waist with his other. He easily steadied her with a soft push.

He had to admit that Ji Shui's skin was very fine and her wrist was soft. Her thin waist was filled with elasticity too. It fit perfectly into Zhang Ruochen's palm.

“Oh...”

Ji Shui's body was numb as if shocked by electricity.

“Senior Uncle Ji, your figure is so great. Why do you wear such a loose blood robe, hiding your most beautiful part?”

Zhang Ruochen touched Ji Shui's waist and kept going down until he was about to touch her perky behind.

Ji Shui was completely furious. Icy cold Qi poured out of her body, turning a waterfall nearby into an ice sculpture. "If you don't let go, I will explode my Sea of Qi."

"Okay, I'll let go. I'll let go, alright?"

Zhang Ruochen let go while tugging on the outer blood robe. With a whoosh, the robe was pulled down. It revealed Ji Shui's slender frame, plump breasts, and thin waist. Her dark hair flew down too, showing a beautiful face. She had ineffable beauty.

However, she really wrapped herself well. There was a light blue shirt and dress under her blood robe. Plumes of bloody Qi continued wrapping around her. She wasn't completely exposed.

Despite that, she was still frightened. She hurried back, putting space between her and Gu Linfeng.

Zhang Ruochen held the blood robe and looked at Ji Shui with slight disappointment. "Senior Uncle Ji, you wear a bit too much."

"What exactly do you want?" Ji Shui was ice cold. She was ready to die with Gu Linfeng.

Zhang Ruochen chuckled. "What if I said that I've liked you for a long time and wish for you to stay the night in Secret Dragon Palace?"

"You better not have this kind of thought," Ji Shui said.

"State your price."

Ji Shui froze. When she finally processed it, she shook with anger. Murderous intent showed in her beautiful and large eyes.

Zhang Ruochen sighed. "Senior Uncle, no need to be so stubborn. With my current status as Deity, grand-master will definitely give you to me if I ask. Do you believe that?"

“Then you will only receive a dead body.” Ji Shui’s attitude was clear and definite.

“I’m actually quite satisfied with your answer. This at least proves that you won’t easily give in. In that case, let us talk about the important topic.”

Zhang Ruochen’s expression grew serious. He walked to the stone table and beckoned welcomingly. “Sit.”

Ji Shui was surprised. She didn’t expect that Gu Linfeng’s attitude would change so dramatically. She couldn’t guess his true intentions now.

Was he doing that earlier to test me? This thought appeared in her mind.

In the end, she still couldn’t feel safe. Instead of sitting over there, she continued to put space between them.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t mind. He sat down and said straightforwardly, “Senior Uncle Ji is a talent. Working with Discipline King Haiming will only waste your talent. If this continues, becoming a Saint will be impossible. If you work with me, I will supply you with ten times the resources.”

Ji Shui’s eyes narrowed. She sensed that Gu Linfeng used Discipline King Haiming’s name instead of referring to him as “grand-master.”

“Do you know what you’re saying?”

“I obviously know what I’m saying,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I am in need of people right now, especially strong figures like you. You can help me kill some people who need to die and take care of the miscellaneous matters in the sect.”

Ji Shui felt disdain. She didn’t respect Gu Linfeng at all. “You think you can go against your master just because you are Deity? To be honest, you won’t even have the chance to reach the Saint Realm, even less of a chance to become the Hierarch. The ambitious figures in the sect will kill you beforehand. With your abilities, you’re nothing but an ant to the Discipline Kings. If I were you, I’d run from the sect. Then you might be able to save yourself.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “You are indeed wise and see the situation clearly. However, you underestimate me too much. Do you really think that I’m unable to go against them?”

“You?” Ji Shui was surprised. Seeing Gu Linfeng’s confident eyes, she couldn’t help but be curious as to which strong figure was behind him.

“Senior Uncle Ji, you are now an Eighth Level Half-Saint,” Zhang Ruochen said indifferently. “If you receive enough cultivation resources, you have a chance at becoming a Saint.”

“It is not easy to become a Saint. Do you think you have more resources than Spiritual Void Sea?”

“Discipline King Haiming’s Spiritual Void Sea indeed has many good things, but he is selfish. You know this better than anyone else. He’ll never give you the top treasures. But I’m different. As long as you have the abilities, I can give you any treasure.”

Zhang Ruochen took a saintly source out and placed it on the table.

“Work for me and you can take this saintly source right now.”

“Saintly source.” Ji Shui’s eyes shone. She looked at the saintly source and then stared in shock at Gu Linfeng seated beside the stone table.

She’d never thought that this guy would use a saintly source to win her over. After all, a saintly source represented the qualifications to become a Saint.

If she only had a 20% chance of becoming a Saint, then after refining the saintly source, it would rise to above 80%. Staying with Discipline King Haiming, she would never receive a saintly source.

Discipline King Haiming can sacrifice anything for his own benefit. If I stay with him, I’ll become his sacrifice sooner or later. I’ve already repaid what I owe him for teaching and raising me.

Actually, Ji Shui had planned on leaving the Blood God Sect and Discipline King Haiming long ago.

Now, Gu Linfeng offered a saintly source as a first gift. The temptation was too great. Ji Shui couldn't refuse it at all.

Hadn't she started on the path of cultivation just to become a Saint?

"This saintly source is only a small show of my sincerity," Zhang Ruochen said. "Senior Uncle Ji, if you trust me and are willing to work for me, I'll give you even more precious resources in the future."

Ji Shui stared at the saintly source. Taking steps toward the stone table, she said, "Your abilities are far above mine. Why do you insist on having me work for you?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that Ji Shui was already tempted but still worried, so he continued, "As the Deity, it looks like I have a powerful status, but in the sect, my force is too thin. There are barely any strong figures that I can truly trust."

Ji Shui nodded. She did agree with this.

In the end, Gu Linfeng had only been in the Blood God Sect for less than a year. Other than Discipline King Haiming, he didn't have any force he could rely on. Plus, Discipline King Haiming didn't genuinely support him. This meant that he was alone.

The so-called Deity title was nothing more than an empty shell.

Ji Shui thought carefully. She hesitated and still didn't accept the saintly source. "I admit that a saintly source is indeed tempting for me. However, your situation is too dangerous. I may die if I work for you. I'm sorry. I think that my life is more important than a saintly source."

She turned and started walking out of Secret Dragon Palace.

In the end, she still didn't believe in Gu Linfeng's abilities. She didn't think that he was able to fight against the older figures of the Blood God Sect.

Since she isn't willing to join us, I will kill her now, Zhao Shiqi said to Zhang Ruochen with Spiritual Power.

"It's okay... Let her go...huh?"

He suddenly felt faint murderous Qi come from above the waterfall. It gave him an extreme feeling.

Who was it?

Ji Shui naturally knew that Gu Linfeng might kill her to keep the secret, not letting her leave Hidden Dragon Palace. Thus, her guard rose higher with each step.

Sharp icy wind came out of nowhere. It whistled through the rafters and pillars.

Such powerful murderous Qi. Is Gu Linfeng really going to attack?

Her entire body grew taut. Holy Qi circulated rapidly within her.

Whoosh!

Suddenly, the surroundings darkened. The space seemed to have become isolated. There was no more sound.

In the darkness, a booming voice sounded. “Discipline King Haiming really found a good disciple. Even a saintly source can’t win you over. Deity, how about you give the saintly source to me and I kill her for you?”

A ball of dark red light hovered above Hidden Dragon Palace. One could faintly make out a figure wrapped in the light.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t show any panic. Smiling, he asked, “And after that?”

“After I kill her, I’ll naturally do the main task of tonight.”

“What is that?”

“Killing you.”

Along with those two words, powerful saintly might flooded downward. Saintly might should be invisible, but it now created the apparitions of a dozen mountains. They fell upon Ji Shui and Zhang Ruochen.

Unable to bear it, Ji Shui let out a muffled grunt. Fresh blood flowed out of her mouth and she fell onto one knee. Looking

up with shock, she said, “Liao Teng, sub-palace lord of the Disorder Heavenly Palace.”

At that moment, she finally realized that the murderous Qi hadn't come from Gu Linfeng. It came from Liao Teng.

The one that Liao Teng wanted to kill was Gu Linfeng, not her.

Of course, with the current situation, Liao Teng would definitely kill her after Gu Linfeng to keep the secret.

Was she going to die at Hidden Dragon Palace tonight?

Chapter 1171 - Vice Palace Ruler

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Six spiritual mountains sat at six different directions in Secret Dragon Palace. They looked like six sky-connecting pillars, piercing through the sky and being of great momentum.

A black rope was floating among the six mountains in the dark, giving out black light, which enveloped the entire Secret Dragon Palace.

The other monks from Blood God Sect had no idea what was going on in Secret Dragon Palace.

“Your highness, he is the vice palace ruler, Liao Teng, from Disorder Heavenly Palace. He became a mid-class saint some time ago. He’s way more powerful than Saint Hongyuan,” Zhao Shiqi told Zhang Ruochen with a trace of his mind power.

Liao Teng was acute enough to sense the mind power ripples. He took a look at where Zhao Shiqi hid himself, then he gave a snort of contempt.

Chi.

Zhao Shiqi was exposed, coming from a tower building. His five sense organs were all bleeding, and he fell onto the ground. He was too injured to get up.

The snort from Liao Teng contained the power of a saint, which Zhao Shiqi couldn’t withstand at all.

Creatures who hadn’t entered the state of saint were like ants in front of mid-class saints. A random word from Liao Teng

was strong enough to kill a pre-saint.

There were, of course, exceptions.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting on his stone chair the whole time, and he looked tranquil.

Liao Teng was startled inside. He said, “A mere first-trial pre-saint is powerful enough to resolve my saintly power. No wonder you managed to kill Saint Hongyuan. However, you’re like a toddler who has just learned how to walk compared to me.”

“Really?”

Zhang Ruochen was stroking a night-light cup on the stone chair with a smile on his face. He looked carefree.

Qing Mo secretly asked Zhang Ruochen whether she should attack Liao Teng or not.

Zhang Ruochen told her not to do anything as he wanted to try Liao Teng’s power.

Liao Teng had just become a mid-class saint, and Zhang Ruochen had just passed the first pre-saint trial.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to know whether he was powerful enough to fight a mid-class saint.

Liao Teng located the saintly source. He speculated that Gu Linfeng had more valuable treasures. If he could manage to kill him, his wealth would surge.

“Die.”

Liao Teng pinched his fingers in the space in an elegant way. He used his saintly power to form a blood-red leaf, hitting toward Gu Linfeng.

The leaf quickly spun, turning into a trace of light and making cracking sounds.

Zhang Ruochen infused strength into his fingers. The night-light cup was shattered, surging like meteors.

One of the fragments clashed with the blood-red leaf. Both of them were annihilated at the same time.

Other fragments still flew toward Liao Teng.

Liao Teng was a bit surprised as he originally thought he could kill Gu Linfeng with a leaf. It seemed that he had underestimated him.

Liao Teng opened his palm and slapped down, shattering all the fragments of the night-light cup.

The palm became larger and larger. It grew to a thousand feet long, and the palm prints were all distinct. It seemed that the palm was about to level the entire Secret Dragon Palace.

Zhang Ruochen flew up, raising his left arm. A blood-red dragon shadow gushed out of his arm, making a roaring sound.

Two palm forces clashed with each other, locked in a stalemate for a short while.

Zhang Ruochen could feel an overwhelming power infusing his left arm. He felt that the sky and land were pressuring his entire body, forcing him to fall.

Liao Teng sneered, "You dare fight me? Are you being suicidal?"

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his Holy Qi and infused it into the Seven Kill Boxing Glove, triggering Destruction of the Thousand-patterns and the power of his entire body. All of the one hundred and thirty-two apertures gleamed at the same time, forming a mysterious astral picture.

The power of the palm of Zhang Ruochen surged, tearing that giant handprint, which was more than a thousand feet long, apart, dashing toward Liao Teng.

Liao Teng felt weird, but he was also swift. He rushed forward and clashed with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't able to ward it off even after performing Destruction of the Thousand-patterns. He was knocked away and hit the stone wall of a spiritual mountain.

The ground of the spiritual mountain was very solid, much more so than that of other mountains. Instead of collapsing like other mountains, only a small part of the mountain was shattered.

“Again.”

Zhang Ruochen wasn't injured at all. He rushed out of the mountain, wielding dozens of handprints and attacking Liao Teng.

Peng Peng.

The two human shadows clashed with each other.

Eventually, Zhang Ruochen failed to resist the attack from Liao Teng. He dived and stepped on the ground, trampling the yard that was made of jade. Half of his body was trapped in the ground.

There were cracks everywhere in the yard. Even the defense formation on the ground was destroyed.

Although Gu Linfeng wasn't defeated, Ji Shui was still thrilled by his power. “That brat is unbelievably forceful! He's only passed the first pre-saint trial, yet he's able to fight a mid-class saint.”

However, it didn't matter how impressive he was. The gap between him and a mid-class saint was still enormous. He wouldn't survive tonight.

Liao Teng landed on the ground, standing several feet above the ground. He looked down at the people on the ground like a God. He said, “No wonder you could kill Saint Hongyuan, as it turns out you've refined your body constitution to such an extent. Even I will need some more energies to kill you.”

Zhang Ruochen enveloped his body with Holy Qi. He flew up and flicked the dust on his sleeves. He said, “I can't believe someone who just became a mid-tier saint can be this powerful. I need to use my real strength to rival you.”

“What? You weren't using your real strength?”

Liao Teng didn't believe that Gu Linfeng had some more impressive techniques. He thought that he was bluffing.

Zhang Ruochen scratched his space ring with his fingernail. Abyss Ancient Sword showed up in his hand, and all of a sudden, he became extremely aggressive and hostile.

Hua!

The sword glinted, and he wielded it with a saint-spell-level sword technique. He swept across Liao Teng like lightning, cutting a trace of his hair.

Liao Teng was shocked as he didn't expect Gu Linfeng to be a sword master. If he hadn't reacted fast enough, he might've been injured.

Zhang Ruochen performed his True-Thunder Fire Sword Technique. Holy Qi and Spiritual Qi gathered and formed lightning, integrating with that blade technique.

Liao Teng didn't recognize Abyss Ancient Sword, but his instinct told him that the sword was extremely dangerous, so he didn't dare clash with it with his hand. He had to keep dodging it.

Liao Teng tried to dodge the sword dozens of times. He felt irritated as he had to dodge the attacks from a pre-saint, but he was a mid-tier saint.

“Blood Trial Finger.”

Liao Teng used his middle finger, which had the luster of metal, hitting the side of Abyss Ancient Sword, knocking Zhang Ruochen away.

And then, Liao Teng fully mobilized the Holy Qi inside his body, forming a large blood-red cloud, shaking all the six spiritual mountains.

At this moment, Liao Teng's power kept surging, reaching an astonishing level.

“Gu Linfeng, you can force me to use all my power. You can die with great pride now.”

Liao Teng spun his arms, which made the blood-red clouds tumble. The two forces of saintly power twisted with each other, forming a half-virtual long spear, hitting toward the chest of Zhang Ruochen.

The attack from a mid-class saint with all his might was exceptional.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely cautious. He also used all his power. He activated Ten-saints Blood Armor to cover his entire body, after which ten saintly shadows were formed in ten different directions around his body.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen kept infusing Abyss Ancient Sword with his Holy Qi, triggering three thousand inscriptions. The mighty sword Qi covered all the six spiritual mountains.

Zhang Ruochen's sword was terrific, tearing the half-virtual long spear apart, hitting the head of Liao Teng.

Pu Chi.

Liao Teng couldn't resist that attack. A twenty-foot long wound showed up from his right shoulder to his abdomen, and his ribs were cut off, which were almost divided in half.

Liao Teng made a blood-curdling scream, flying to the ground swiftly. He took out a bottle of saintly blood and drank it.

The wound was quickly healed after he drank the saintly blood.

"You're not Gu Linfeng. Who are you?"

Liao Teng was infuriated. The sword wielded by Gu Linfeng was horrific. It was so immensely powerful that it could divide the sky and land. Fortunately, a mysterious power in Secret Dragon Palace was protecting him so that he wasn't killed.

"Wait... That sword..."

Ji Shui recognized the sword held by Gu Linfeng as it was too familiar. An exceptional and handsome person emerged in her mind.

Not long ago, in Yingsha City in Blue Dragon Void World, Ji Shui and other human monks were all exhausted, and they all thought that they would die.

That man showed up and changed the war situation all by himself. He saved all the human elites in that city by fighting more than ten beast kings like the God of War. Back then, even Ji Shui, whose heart was stone-cold, felt it pounding fast. She admired him.

However, Ji Shui knew that the man was a teenage emperor who was bound to be a legend among human beings. He was someone she would never know.

After all, Ji Shui was a woman. She couldn't help admiring someone like the descendant of time and space, Zhang Ruochen.

How did the sword of time and space descendant Zhang Ruochen fall into the hands of Gu Linfeng?

The more Ji Shui looked at him, the more bizarre she felt. At this moment, Gu Linfeng was too much like the man she admired. It wasn't his appearance that resembled that of the man she adored, it was the charisma, aggression, pride, and aloofness, like that of an unrivaled sword saint.

“Can it be... But that's impossible...”

An assumption emerged in Ji Shui's mind, but she found it unbelievable.

Chapter 1172 - Using All The Hidden Cards

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Three thousand runes appeared on the Abyss Ancient Sword. Like 3,000 chains, they connected the sword to the Spiritual Qi. Whizzing Sword Qi filled the sky.

Faced with such a strong force, Liao Teng felt extreme pressure. He also held a Thousand-pattern Sword Weapon, but he only had 2,000 runes. It couldn't be compared to the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the air. Holding his sword, he asked, "Palace Lord Liao, won't you use your full power now?"

"Junior, do not be arrogant. No matter who you are, you won't be able to escape today."

Liao Teng huffed. Shocking blood-red light poured out of him. Dense Rules of Saintly Way rushed out, weaving into a tall saintly image. A middle-level saintly image was much stronger than that of a lower-level Saint. It wasn't an apparition. It was like a huge statue made of blood-red crystal. Its powerful aura was as terrifying as a divine image in a temple.

Liao Teng cultivated the palm way. The rules that were weaved in the saintly image were mostly from the palm way too. In addition, there were some other small rules. The entire world shook when the saintly image moved.

"Palm Print World."

Liao Teng rode the saintly image. Using the Rules of Saintly Way, he used a saintly fist spell and unleashed 36 times the

combat power.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes hardened. That moment, he entered the Man Sword state. Using Sword Five, he shone as brightly as a shooting star. With a boom, he passed through Liao Teng's Palm Print World.

The Ten Saints Blood Armor, Abyss Ancient Sword, and Zhang Ruochen's own power—these three powerful forces grouped together and crashed against Liao Teng's saintly image.

Kaboom.

A large mass of Rules of Saintly Way in the image's abdomen shattered with loud booms.

Zhang Ruochen attacked a second time, a third... He made seven attacks and finally stabbed through the saintly image. His sword cut down with the Destruction of the Thousand-pattern on Liao Teng's neck.

Liao Teng avoided a fatal hit, but a large part of his right shoulder was sliced off. Fresh blood poured out of it.

This guy is too much. How can he use the Destruction of the Thousand-pattern endlessly? Isn't he worried that his Holy Qi will be used up?

Liao Teng hurriedly rushed into the sky to avoid Zhang Ruochen's second strike. He took a bottle out, wanting to drink the divine blood inside to recover.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give him the chance this time. The apparitions of the Luan and phoenix appeared on his legs. Stepping on these divine birds, he hurried forward.

The Abyss Ancient Sword swung at Liao Teng's head.

He dodged again, avoiding the fatal attack. However, the bottle in his hand was hit. It shattered and all the divine blood spilled out.

“Dammit. You really think that I can't kill you?”

Liao Teng glared and many veins bulged on his body. His skin cracked and his body expanded. Fangs grew out of his mouth;

his nails sharpened into claws.

Rip.

A pair of blood-red wings rushed out of his back. They unfurled to more than 300 feet wide, emanating evil Qi.

Seeing this, Ji Shui's emotions were in uproar. Sub-palace lord Liao Teng of the Disorder Heavenly Palace is a Vampire. Aren't there too many Vampires infiltrating the Blood God Sect?

A sect from the ancient times actually had two Saints who were Immortal Vampires. This was unbelievable.

"You finally showed your true self." Zhang Ruochen's expression turned serious.

He knew that since Liao Teng showed his true self, he wouldn't be as restricted as before. His aura was already more powerful.

Whoosh!

Zhang Ruochen used the full power of Sword Six to attack Liao Teng. He hadn't completed Sword Six yet, but it was already very advanced. It was able to sweep across the sky.

Liao Teng reached out and pressed down. A silver bracelet in his palm spun rapidly. It formed a whirlpool that actually stopped the Abyss Ancient Sword.

He quickly struck forward and hit Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Thud.

Ten beams of saintly soul apparitions shattered. Zhang Ruochen felt overpowering force hit his body. His vision turned dark and he flew back, uncontrolled. The Ten Saints Blood Armor blocked most of Liao Teng's power, but Zhang Ruochen was still injured. His organs went out of place and his skeleton almost fell apart.

"I was restricted from trying to hide my identity earlier. Now, I will let you know that the difference in level can't be made up for by a few powerful weapons."

Liao Teng's bloody wings were like two sharp blades. They cut through the sky, going toward Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms. A blue dragon appeared on one arm. A blue elephant appeared on the other. He attacked with the tenth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

“Dragon Traveling Nine Days.”

A dragon's roar sounded. A dragon claw appeared above the two palm prints and flew toward Liao Teng.

Liao Teng's wings crashed against the dragon claw. It ripped the claw apart from the center and struck at Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen turned his sword horizontal and blocked the wings' strength. Sweetness burst in his throat. Blood flowed out of his mouth and he plummeted to the ground.

Kaboom!

Zhang Ruochen crushed a pavilion and disappeared in the ruins. The majestic pavilion was shattered. Even the surrounding ground was ravaged.

Liao Teng flapped his wings and flew to the ruins. He sent out his silver bracelet again, attacking below to completely kill Zhang Ruochen.

The silver bracelet was a Thousand-pattern Weapon. If hit, even a steel mountain would shatter, let alone a person.

Boom.

The sound of metal crashing arose from the ruins. Then the silver bracelet ricocheted back.

Liao Teng was surprised. How could Gu Linfeng still be able to fight back? He caught the silver bracelet and saw that there was a faint scratch on it. It had been damaged.

“Such a sharp sword.”

A lightbulb went off in Liao Teng's mind. He suddenly thought of someone who had similar methods as Gu Linfeng. This man was very familiar, but he just couldn't remember who it was.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the ruins with the Abyss Ancient Sword. He was covered in the Ten Saints Blood Armor, hiding his expression. “Even if I use all my power, I still can’t stop your attack. Palace Lord Liao, are you really only a new mid-level Saint?”

Liao Teng couldn’t tell how hurt Gu Linfeng was, so he didn’t attack brashly. “If I was an experienced mid-level Saint, you would’ve been dead long ago. You would’ve never survived until now.”

“Seems like I still have to work hard,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“It’s good to have such realizations,” Liao Teng said.

“However, you won’t have the chance to work harder.”

He pushed up the saintly image again. Waving the fist print, a burst of destructive saintly might flooded over to give Zhang Ruochen the fatal strike.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. Unmoved, he swiped his finger, uttering, “Open!”

A dark black crack opened up in the sky, like a door to the void. It ripped apart the saintly image and flew toward Liao Teng.

“How is this possible... The space was torn...I know now... You are Zhang Ruochen...”

Liao Teng finally remembered. Right now, Gu Linfeng was too similar to Zhang Ruochen. It was possible that they were the same person.

The transformation spell of the Immortal Vampires was known throughout, and no one could see through it. Liao Teng didn’t think that Zhang Ruochen’s spell would be so powerful too.

He didn’t dare to touch the spatial crack and flashed to the right.

When he ripped the space, Zhang Ruochen had already predicted that Liao Teng would dodge to the right. Thus, he used the Spatial Move and appeared above Liao Teng.

“Zi Sword.”

He used the Zi Sword of the Twelfth Hour Sword Technique. The time print was combined with the sword move, slowing down the surrounding time.

Poof.

The Abyss Ancient Sword swept sideways and cut down Liao Teng's head.

An Immortal Vampire Saint's vitality was terrifying. Even beheaded, Liao Teng was still conscious. The two separate parts flew toward one place, trying to reconnect.

“Strike again.”

Zhang Ruochen curled up 36 beams of Sword Qi and hit Liao Teng's body. The saint body split apart, flying in countless directions.

Flying through the sky, Liao Teng's head made an odd sound. Rings of Holy Qi ripples and Rules of Saintly Way spread out.

Boom, boom.

The pieces of the saintly body exploded into clouds of bloody Qi and flew toward the head.

“You're already in pieces like this and you still want to reform a body?”

Zhang Ruochen was quite shocked. He took out a Half-Saint Blood Repression Rune. Adding Holy Qi into it, he struck at Liao Teng's head. When the rune approached Liao Teng's head, it exploded with a boom. Transforming into a ball of white energy, it covered the head.

The white energy was like a net. It trapped Liao Teng's head, sealing the Blood Qi within.

“What is that?” Liao Teng roared.

Powerful saintly force poured out of the seven openings of his head. It actually broke apart the Blood Repression Rune's white net and escaped.

On the other hand, the beams of Blood Qi had flown back. They would soon rejoin the head.

“So powerful. He’s heavily injured but still so strong.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to use the only Saint Blood Repression Rune, so he took out nine Half-Saint runes in a row. He was ready to send them flying.

Liao Teng clearly sensed danger. He used a God-connecting Technique and the entire head started burning. The power was even more terrifying than when he was at his prime.

“Zhang Ruochen!” he roared. “Even if I fall back into the Half-Saint Realm, I can still kill you.”

After using the God-connecting Technique, Liao Teng was clearly way above Zhang Ruochen’s level.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to waste nine Blood Repression Runes, so he put them away and waved his hand. “Whatever. Qing Mo, here you go. I want him alive.”

Chapter 1173 - Mishap

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Every saint would refine a God-connecting technique and an escape technique so that they could survive in the sky and on land.

When they performed God-connecting techniques, they could exert power that was ten times stronger than their own, with a huge price.

Even though the only thing Liao Teng had was a head, he could still exert power several times stronger than his prime after performing God-connecting techniques. Even a senior mid-class saint needed to dodge it.

Qing Mo flew out, flicking a trace of blue fire, burning all the bloody Qi flying toward the head of Liao Teng to the ground.

“Wuliang Divine Fire... Can't believe there's someone this powerful in Secret Dragon Palace.”

Liao Teng was shocked to his very core. He realized that he didn't stand a chance. He stopped trying to kill Zhang Ruochen and drove his head, trying to use his escape technique to go away.

However, the gap between his power and Qing Mo's was enormous. There was no way that he could escape.

A blue vine flew out and dragged him back. Hong! The burning head fell into the garden of Secret Dragon Palace.

Chi Chi.

The fire on his head burned everything to the ground.

“Don’t you even think about catching me. I’ll take all of you down.”

Liao Teng didn’t want to be humiliated. He yelled, triggering the saintly source in his abdomen and prepared to make his saintly source and abdomen explode.

Zhang Ruochen pointed forward, and the Abyss Ancient Sword made an ear-piercing sound, flying to the ground. Hong Long. It pierced through the head of Liao Teng and crushed his saintly soul.

Abyss Ancient Sword was stuck into the ground with blood dripping. It was still trembling, emanating traces of black light.

Zhang Ruochen landed on the ground like a leaf, staring at the head that had been divided into halves. He sighed, “I originally wanted to interrogate him about some information about immortal vampires, yet I put everyone in danger. That was too dangerous. I can’t recklessly try to catch a saint in the future anymore.”

Qing Mo pouted and said, “Actually, the saintly source of Liao Teng contains most of his memories. If you can refine that, you can not only seize his saintly way comprehension, but also learn a lot of secrets.”

Zhang Ruochen put his Abyss Ancient Sword away and found the saintly source of Liao Teng from the blood-red mud.

Zhang Ruochen knew what Qing Mo meant.

However, using others’ saintly sources to become a saint was still inferior to making a saintly source that belonged to him. Only after making a saintly source that belonged to him could his saintly way reach the perfect level.

Besides, if Zhang Ruochen really wanted to refine a saintly source, he would’ve refined the sarira of Emperor Buddha, which was thousands of times better than the saintly source of Liao Teng.

Zhang Ruochen heard Carnivorous Holy Flower say to him, “Zhang Ruochen, give the saintly source of Liao Teng to me

as nutrients, then I can reach the state of saint, and I'll tell you all the secrets Liao Teng knows.”

“You're only motivated after seeing the saintly source. Where were you when I was fighting Liao Teng?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't want Carnivorous Holy Flower to become a saint yet. He held the saintly source and looked to Ji Shui. He finally became less tense and smiled. “Uncle Ji, now that you've learned who I really am, you only have two options.”

“One, work for me, then I'll give you the saintly source of Liao Teng and help you reach the state of saint.”

“Two...”

Before Zhang Ruochen finished talking, Ji Shui made a decision: “I choose one.”

Zhang Ruochen was dazed that Ji Shui agreed without any hesitation.

Ji Shui pursed her lips and said, “Option two is for me to die. Actually, I don't have a choice at all, do I?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Uncle Ji, you're such a charming woman. How could I kill you? I just wanted to erase some of your memories if you said no.”

If it were Gu Linfeng who said something like that, Ji Shui wouldn't have believed it at all. Instead, she would feel disgusted and find that Gu Linfeng was taking liberties with her.

However, after she learned that Gu Linfeng was Zhang Ruochen, she started to trust Zhang Ruochen completely. Not only did she not feel gross, she found him to be a gentleman.

With the help of Zhang Ruochen, Ji Shui refined the saintly source of Liao Teng in a short time, and her cultivation reached level-nine half saint.

After absorbing a fraction of Liao Teng's memories, Ji Shui learnt something major, and her face instantly turned pale.

“I can’t believe there’re so many immortal vampires in Blood God Sect. If they turn against us, the repercussions will be disastrous.”

Ji Shui told Zhang Ruochen all the secrets she had learned.

Ji Shui thought that Zhang Ruochen would be just as shocked as she was, yet Zhang Ruochen was still very calm as if he had known it for a long time.

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, “That means the palace ruler of Disorder Heavenly Palace, Yu Huacheng, and Discipline King Diyuan, Kong Yi, are both immortal vampires.”

Ji Shui said the names of some of the immortal vampire spies, and the most important information was to confirm the identity of the palace ruler of the Disorder Heavenly Palace and Discipline King Diyan.

These two were both high-profile members of Blood God Sect. Both of them were leading an enormous power. If either of them was exposed, it would lead to great turmoil.

It would not only lead to turmoil in Blood God Sect, but also lead to turmoil in the state of Tiantai.

Liao Teng didn’t know many spies. He only knew of around twenty immortal vampire spies who were more powerful than half saints, much fewer than those on the list prepared by Zhang Ruochen.

Which meant immortal vampires were very cautious. Even saints couldn’t know all their secrets.

Ji Shui looked very upset. After all, Blood God Sect was where she grew up, so she was emotionally attached to this place.

And now, Blood God Sect was facing domestic trouble and foreign invasion. It might be overthrown at any time and become a tool used by immortal vampires to fight human beings. How could she not be worried?

Ji Shui said, “Based on Liao Teng’s memories, I suspect that there’s one more immortal vampire within Blood God Sect

who is more powerful than Discipline King Diyuan and the palace ruler of Disorder Heavenly Palace. However, that person has been pulling the strings behind the scenes the whole time. Even Liao Teng doesn't know what he really is."

Someone more powerful than Discipline King Diyuan and the palace ruler of Disorder Heavenly Palace? Zhang Ruochen thought.

Few in Blood God Sect were stronger than them.

Someone who was pulling the strings. Was that the hierarch of Blood God Sect? Or someone else?

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and shook his head. He stopped speculating. Instead, he looked to Ji Shui and said, "Now you know why I invited you to help me, right?"

"If you told me the truth earlier, I would have helped you kill all the immortal vampire spies even without the saintly source," Ji Shui said.

Actually, Ji Shui had a lot of questions she wanted to ask Zhang Ruochen. For example, why didn't Zhang Ruochen disguise himself as Gu Linfeng to get into Blood God Sect? How did Zhang Ruochen know that there was a large group of immortal vampire spies within Blood God Sect?

Ji Shui took a list and skimmed through it. The more she read it, the more shocked she became. She felt as if her heart was pounding out of her chest.

Immortal vampires had already penetrated Blood God Sect to a severe extent.

Zhang Ruochen said, "The spies below the state of saint are your and Zhao Shiqi's responsibility. I hope that you two can cooperate well and eradicate every immortal vampire."

"Rest assured, your highness, I won't let you down. In half a month, all those immortal vampire half saints will be gone forever," Zhao Shiqi said gloomily.

Ji Shui asked, "How should we deal with the corpse of Ji Shui? Do we need to publicize his real identity?"

Actually, what was left of Liao Teng was a head that was cut in half.

They needed to publicize the real identity of Liao Teng. They needed the entire Blood God Sect to eliminate all the immortal vampires they knew.

The tricky part was how to cleverly publicize the real identity off Liao Teng.

At this moment, Ji Shui received a transmitted voicemail. She said, "Discipline King Haiming was attacked, and he was severely injured."

Zhang Ruochen and Ji Shui left Secret Dragon Palace and rushed toward Spiritual Void Sea. They wanted to know what happened there.

If that person could injure Discipline King Haiming, it meant that person was a top-tier saint.

Spiritual Void Sea was a lake that was one thousand miles long, and this was where Discipline King Haiming practiced.

Spiritual Void Sea, which used to have water flowing inside, had been drained. All the islands had collapsed, and there were cracks everywhere. The land seemed to have been shattered.

It was inconceivable what kind of terrific battle had taken place in this place before.

Ji Shui rushed toward the center of Spiritual Void Sea and met with the second disciple of Discipline King Haiming, trying to figure something out.

Zhang Ruochen walked on the edge of Spiritual Void Sea, observing the traces and forces left by the battle, trying to figure out which saint fought Discipline King Haiming.

The battle had just ended, and there was a trace of saintly way force remaining.

After a short while, Ji Shui flew back and told Zhang Ruochen what had happened.

"Discipline King Haiming was severely injured, and he has gone to a secret place in Ancient Snow Mountain to heal

himself. He might not be able to get back to Blood God Sect for a while,” Ji Shui said.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his chin and said, “It must be the palace leader of Disorder Heavenly Palace, Yu Huacheng, who assassinated Discipline King Haiming. What a clever game. They sent Yu Huacheng to assassinate Discipline King Haiming and Liao Teng to deal with me.”

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes, smiled and said, “I know how to publicize the real identity of Liao Teng now. Let’s tell everyone that Liao Teng was killed by Discipline King Haiming, who had been severely injured, and went into Ancient Snow Mountain to recover after killing Liao Teng.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to reveal his power yet, so he had to make Discipline King Haiming the scapegoat.

By doing so, the energies of immortal vampires would be devoted to Discipline King Haiming. Zhang Ruochen could secretly get rid of the immortal vampire spies one by one.

Chapter 1174 - Once Again A Big Uproar

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Ji Shui was very shocked. She thought that Zhang Ruochen was too daring to go against Discipline King Haiming. Wasn't he afraid that Haiming would kill him first after he was fully healed?

Going against a Discipline King had very grave consequences.

Zhang Ruochen didn't feel anything positive about Discipline King Haiming. If possible, he would love to use the Immortal Vampires and get rid of Haiming.

The next day, news of Discipline King Haiming's attempted assassination spread throughout the Blood God Sect. It caused a huge uproar.

News even spread to the outside world so the other sects all knew about it.

“The Blood God Sect has so many troubles. First, the Hierarch went missing, then a Discipling King was arrested, a Discipline King was stabbed gravely, and a Saint died. If this continues, it won't be long before the Blood God Sect falls into chaos.”

“If the Blood God Sect is in chaos, the entire Tiantai State will be upended. We must prepare beforehand so we aren't caught off guard.

...

The strongest forces of Tiantai State—the Taichi Way, Shangguan Clan, Cai Family, Lingxiao Heavenly King

Mansion... They all sensed that the Blood God Sect's unrest was spreading. It would soon involve them and they were all preparing for it.

Blood God Sect

Elder Yuan Gui and the palace lord of the Disorder Heavenly Palace had personally planned last night's assassination. They naturally felt very accomplished. Last night's mission hadn't killed Discipline King Haiming, but it made him unable to compete for the Hierarch's position.

Plus, it was highly possible that Liao Teng had already killed Gu Linfeng. This meant that yet another candidate was gone.

Elder Yuan Gui stood on a mountain cliff. Gazing at the various pavilions of the Blood God Sect, he smiled. "It is disappointing that we couldn't kill Discipline King Haiming during last night's battle, but it was still quite perfect."

Disorder Heavenly Palace's palace lord was still worried. "Liao Teng has been gone for so long and still hasn't returned. I'm actually worried that an accident has occurred in Hidden Dragon Palace."

"A mid-level Saint against a First Trial Pre-Saint. What could happen?"

Elder Yuan Gui was confident in Liao Teng. He just thought that Liao Teng had been delayed by some other things, so he couldn't hurry back in time.

Elder Yuan Gui returned to the Elder Pavilion. He thought for a moment and an eerie smile appeared on his face. He sent out an order. "No matter who dares to assassinate a Discipline King of the Blood God Sect, the Sect will do its best to kill him."

The Disorder Heavenly Palace's palace lord stood in a majestic pavilion and said to the world, "Seal all exits of the sect and activate the defensive formation. We must catch the criminal and burn him to ashes."

Elder Yuan Gui and the palace lord's proclamations immediately received the support of the entire sect. All the

disciples started acting. They believed that an outsider had attacked Haiming and wanted to capture him.

Zhang Ruochen sat in the Hidden Dragon Palace. Hearing the palace lord's words, he smiled and muttered to himself, "He is acting so justly and confidently. I am truly impressed. I wonder what his expression will be like when Ji Shui takes Liao Teng's corpse to the Elder Pavilion."

After that, Zhang Ruochen entered the scroll world. He stopped caring about the outside world and started to open the remaining 12 apertures in his head. He wanted to turn his body into a Saint as soon as possible.

Noon.

Ji Shui and Discipline King Haiming's second disciple, Lan Kuan, stood tall on the steps. They climbed up to the Elder Pavilion.

Other than Elder Yuan Gui, there were two other Saint elders, Elder Yuan Xin and Elder Yuan Zhou, and a dozen other elders. They guarded the Elder Pavilion.

They were currently discussing Discipline King Haiming's assassination. The atmosphere was very heavy. Everyone felt invisible danger. Even a Discipline King could be attacked. If this continued, they might be in danger as well.

Elder Yuan Gui huffed coldly. "It must be the Immortal Vampires taking revenge."

An inner elder agreed with him. "Yesterday, the Deity killed Saint Hongyuan and revealed his true identity. The Blood God Sect used this pointer to kill a large group of infiltrators. It would be strange if they didn't take revenge."

Elder Yuan Gui scoffed inwardly but his expression was still one of justice. "Let us declare war! The Blood God Sect must declare war against the Immortal Vampires to make them pay an even bloodier price."

"Even if we want to declare war, we must choose a Hierarch first," someone suggested. "The Deity hasn't reached the Saint Realm yet and cannot become the new Hierarch. How about

we choose the new Hierarch from the four Discipline Kings and ten palace lords?”

Arguments started in the Elder Pavilion again.

Just then, an outer elder walked in. “Discipline King Haiming’s second disciple, Lan Kuan, and tenth disciple, Ji Shui, request a presence. They claim to have important news to report.”

“Let them in,” Elder Yuan Xin said.

Elder Yuan Gui’s brow furrowed. Getting a bad feeling, he thought, Was there some important evidence when Yu Huacheng attacked Discipline King Haiming?

Lan Kuan and Ji Shui entered the Elder Pavilion and bowed to the three Saint Elders.

Elder Yuan Gui couldn’t wait anymore. He immediately asked, “Lan Kuan, what important message do you two have? Is it related to Discipline King Haiming’s assassination?”

Lan Kuan bowed to him. “I am not clear about this. My Junior Sister is the one who knows the entire thing.”

All the elders’ gazes turned to Ji Shui.

She wasn’t intimidated by their auras. “Yesterday,” she said calmly, “not only did a Saint try to assassinate my master, but a Saint also broke into the Hidden Dragon Pavilion to kill the Deity.”

“What?”

A shocking cold Qi poured out of Elder Yuan Xing. The strong energy waves covered the entire mountain that the Elder Pavilion was situated in.

The mountain shook; the pavilion shook as well.

Elder Yuan Xin thought highly of Gu Linfeng, thinking that he was the hope of the Blood God Sect. If Gu Linfeng had been killed, would the sect still have hope?

The Elder Pavilion was in an uproar. All the Elders were shocked and furious.

Elder Yuan Gui thought that Gu Linfeng was dead. He had a furious expression too, but he was overjoyed inside. He thought that Liao Teng deserved praise and hadn't disappointed him.

Killing Gu Linfeng is indeed a big achievement, he thought. I must reward him handsomely.

"Is the Deity still alive?" Elder Yuan Xin asked.

Ji Shui sighed. While observing the Elders' expressions as Zhang Ruochen told her to, she said, "The Deity is heavily injured and is recovering in isolation."

He wasn't dead?

Even with Elder Yuan Gui's mindset, he still couldn't help but let out a confused expression. How could Gu Linfeng not be dead?

Ji Shui sensitively caught Elder Yuan Gui's micro-expression.

"Last night," Ji Shui continued, "Master was attacked and heavily injured. He'd already entered the Ancient Snow Mountain to recover. However, the assassination yesterday was too strange and he predicted that someone might attack the Deity as well. He bore his injuries and returned, hurrying to the Hidden Dragon Palace just in time. He saved the Deity from assassination and killed the assassin as well."

"The Vampire assassin was killed?" Elder Yuan Gui asked.
"Where is the corpse?"

Ji Shui took out Liao Teng's head and carefully placed it before the three Saint Elders.

"Liao Teng, sub-palace leader of the Disorder Heavenly Palace. He...he is an Immortal Vampire too."

None of the Elders present could compose themselves. They felt a shudder run down their spines. The scene before their eyes had overturned all their previous knowledge.

After all, Liao Teng was an outgoing person. He socialized a lot and many of the people here were his friends. Who would've thought that he was an infiltrator?

Elder Yuan Gui's eyes were extremely dark. Hatred filled him. Two Saints had died in a row. This was a big loss to the Immortal Vampires.

He'd thought that yesterday's mission had been perfect but unexpectedly, it was a failure. Discipline King Haiming hadn't been killed. Gu Linfeng hadn't been killed either.

"Since Liao Teng is an infiltrator, the entire Disorder Heavenly Palace might have problems too. We must start cleaning them out before news spreads. We cannot let another infiltrator escape."

"Liao Teng was personally raised by Yu Huacheng, the palace leader. He's highly suspicious too. We must arrest him."

...

Yesterday's cleaning hadn't ended yet, but a bigger cleaning was begun today. It targeted the Disorder Heavenly Palace.

Elder Yuan Gui immediately sent a message to the Disorder Heavenly Palace's palace leader. "Liao Teng was killed and you're exposed. Leave the Blood God Sect now. It's best if you go into the Ancient Snow Mountain and kill that Discipline King Haiming at all costs."

Discipline King Diyuan was already arrested. If Yu Huacheng was arrested as well, the Vampires' force in the Blood God Sect would be halved.

When Yu Huacheng received the message, he was taken aback too. He immediately left the Blood God Sect, rushing into the white Ancient Snow Mountain.

After Ji Shui returned, Zhang Ruochen took a break from cultivating to listen to her report.

"The palace leader of the Disorder Heavenly Palace has actually escaped. This means that there must be a spy in the Elder Pavilion that leaked the news. He must have very advanced cultivation as well. It may be one of the three Saint Elders," Zhang Ruochen analyzed.

"Why?" Ji Shui asked.

“If an average Elder sends a message, the three Saint Elders will sense it.”

Ji Shui hesitated. In the end, she revealed what had happened at the Elder Pavilion, including Elder Yuan Gui’s expression changes when he heard that Gu Linfeng hadn’t died.

Zhang Ruochen touched his chin and smiled. “Elder Yuan Gui is the biggest suspect. Investigate him.”

Ji Shui transformed into 12 beams of Blood Qi and disappeared into the air. Then a servant walked in from the outside and lowered onto one knee. “Saint Elder Yuan Zhou and the Saintess have come to the Hidden Dragon Pavilion to check on your condition. Will you meet them?”

Chapter 1175 - Elder Yuanzhou

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Elder Yuanzhou came to Secret Dragon Palace himself? Is he really here to check whether I am severely injured or not?”

Zhang Ruochen didn't have a good opinion of Shangguan Xianyan, but as a deity, there was no reason for him to say no to a saintly elder.

Besides, Elder Yuanzhou was strong enough to tell whether Zhang Ruochen was really injured or not.

Elder Yuanzhou wasn't surprised seeing Gu Linfeng sit there without any harm. He said, “Deity has recovered well. You don't look injured.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up, made a bow with hand folded into a fist and smiled. “I need to trick the others, so I didn't go outside to greet you, elder.”

Elder Yuanzhou asked, “To trick the others? Why do you need to trick the others?”

Actually, Elder Yuanzhou wanted to know why Gu Linfeng claimed to have been severely injured by others. There must be some secret hidden in Secret Dragon Palace. That Gu Linfeng wasn't as simple as he appeared to be.

“This is a huge issue. Let's sit down and talk.”

Shangguan Xianyan was standing beside Elder Yuanzhou the whole time, but Zhang Ruochen didn't even shoot her a glance, and he didn't intend for her to sit down.

Elder Yuanzhou sat down across from Zhang Ruochen without a second thought.

Soon, he looked to a saint medicinal pill that was ten thousand years old on the stone table. He asked, "That's Wind Yinzi, which is at least seventeen thousand years old, and it's a very rare saint medicinal pill. How did you get it, your highness?"

A Wind Yinzi grew in the wind. It didn't have roots, and it flowed with the wind. It was very easy for it to die, so it was pretty rare.

It was a miracle that a Wind Yinzi could live for seventeen thousand years.

Zhang Ruochen had obtained the treasury of Blue Dragon Dynasty, so he had obtained lots of divine medications, and one of them was this Wind Yinzi.

"I got it in Blue Dragon Void World."

Zhang Ruochen didn't continue to explain. He put the Wind Yinzi in his hands, and two balls of flames gushed out of his palms. Very soon, that Wind Yinzi was refined into drops of glittering and translucent divine medicinal liquids and he poured them into a pot.

The fragrance of the pills permeated the entire yard.

The servants in Secret Dragon Palace only inhaled the fragrance of the divine medications, yet it was still greatly rewarding. Some of them even made breakthroughs.

Hua La La!

Zhang Ruochen held the jade pot with divine medicinal liquids in it and poured a cup for Elder Yuanzhou and one for himself too. He raised the cup and said, "I heard that by taking Wind Yinzi, you can comprehend the rules of wind. Besides, monks can also improve themselves to a great extent. Is it real?"

Elder Yuanzhou stared at the divine medicinal liquids, and there was saliva dripping from his mouth.

Divine medications were so precious that even Elder Yuanzhou didn't dare refine them into divine medicinal liquids.

Elder Yuanzhou indeed planted more than ten divine medications, however, they were all protected by him. He wouldn't abuse them like this.

“Then I'll drink it now!”

Elder Yuanzhou held the cup and drank it all. His body started to gleam with holy light, and a pair of giant wind wings emerged from his body.

The one hundred and thirty-five apertures in his body were all opened. Zhang Ruochen drank the divine medicinal liquids, forming one hundred and thirty-five light spots. Each light spot was a small whirlpool.

Peng.

The one hundred and thirty-sixth aperture was opened, and it was immediately sanctified.

Zhang Ruochen was one step closer to sanctifying his body. There were only eight apertures left.

Shangguan Xianyan gasped and thought, Gu Linfeng is very close to sanctifying his entire body. No wonder he's so powerful.

Shangguan Xianyan regretted it. She shouldn't have schemed in the meeting of elders yesterday. She had made a great enemy.

After refining the power of Wind Yinzi, Elder Yuanzhou got back to the real business and said, “I came to Secret Dragon Palace this time for two things. One, I hope we can resolve the grudges between you and Xianyan.”

“Xianyan is way too young. She's indeed made some mistakes. I hope that you can spare her this time.”

Zhang Ruochen looked solemn and said, “Elder Yuanzhou, you should know what kind of danger she has put me through. Saintess knows that Wei Longxing sent people to kill me before, but she pretended that she didn't know anything, which almost got me killed.”

“That was indeed Xianyan's fault. I apologize to you on her behalf. Also, I've brought you a gift. I hope you can take it.”

Elder Yuanzhou gave Shangguan Xianyan a head nod, and then, she handed a black-ironed box that was two feet long over to Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Your highness, I made a mistake this time. I hope that you can take the gift and forgive me.”

Both Elder Yuanzhou and Shangguan Xianyan had a humble gesture, which was strange to Zhang Ruochen, as he couldn't figure out what they wanted.

Zhang Ruochen took a look at the black-ironed box. He looked through the black-ironed box and saw the object inside.

It was a thousand-patterns saint weapon that was shaped like a dagger, which was superior to Seven Kill Boxing Glove. It was worth a lot.

Zhang Ruochen said, “It's just a thousand-patterns saint weapon. I can get ten of those. I don't need that.”

Elder Yuanzhou was infuriated. He thought that Gu Linfeng was too reckless. Did he think of a thousand-patterns saint weapon as worthless?

However, Gu Linfeng could refine the divine medications into divine medicinal liquids, so his reaction to the thousand-patterns saint weapon made sense.

He might actually own a large number of resources.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen did this because he wanted to test Elder Yuanzhou.

If Elder Yuanzhou was a spy from the immortal vampire race, then if he realized that Zhang Ruochen had sanctified one hundred and thirty-six apertures and that he had lots of resources, he would attack him.

Zhang Ruochen contacted Ghost King Bloodmoon, and he confirmed that she could engage in a battle at any time, and that she wasn't afraid of Elder Yuanzhou.

Elder Yuanzhou said, “If so, then name your price. As long as it's not too far, I'll agree with that.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “I'm just curious. With your cultivation and the solid background of Shangguan clan, why would you

negotiate with me, someone with no background and no power? Why don't you just kill me directly?"

Elder Yuanzhou was dazed, as he didn't expect Gu Linfeng to be this straightforward. He shook his head and smiled. "I know we can't hide this from you. To tell you the truth, Elder Pavilion has unanimously decided to make you the next hierarch of Blood God Sect. Elder Yuanxing has high hopes for you, and he thinks that you're the last hope of Blood God Sect."

"And now that you're destined to become the next hierarch of Blood God Sect, I need to resolve the grudges between you and Xianyan. After all, when you become the hierarch of Blood God Sect, Xianyan will marry you. It's better for Shangguan clan to become family with the new hierarch of Blood God Sect than to become enemies."

Zhang Ruochen didn't expect that Elder Yuanzhou had this kind of idea.

The deity would become the new hierarch, so he needed to become a saintess. They needed to manage Blood God Sect together.

Marrying Shangguan Xianyan?

It was impossible!

Zhang Ruochen said, "Actually, I don't want to become an enemy of Elder Yuanzhou and Shangguan clan. It'll be best for us to resolve the conflicts between us."

Elder Yuanzhou was pleased and said, "You've accepted Xianyan's apologies?"

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "Elder Yuanzhou has spoken for you. I need to save you some face. However, I have one condition as well."

Zhang Ruochen took the black-ironed box from Shangguan Xianyan, staring at her eyes. He said, "I need you to be a servant in Secret Dragon Palace, and you'll serve me."

The eyes of Shangguan Xianyan glinted with coldness. She thought that Gu Linfeng was humiliating her.

She was the saintess of an ancient sect, and a proud girl of an ancient clan, who was admired by countless monks. How could she be a cheap servant?

“She made a mistake, so she has to be punished. It’s okay.”

Before asking whether Shangguan Xianyan agreed or not, Elder Yuanzhou agreed Zhang Ruochen’s proposal.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Then put this away and clean it up.”

Shangguan Xianyan didn’t want this at all, but eventually, she endured such humiliation as she didn’t dare go against the will of Zhang Ruochen and Elder Yuanzhou. She nodded and said, “Yes.”

As long as she could wait until Gu Linfeng ascended to the position of the hierarch, she could become the wife of the hierarch. No one would treat her like a low-class servant.

The humiliation she endured was worth it.

Actually, Shangguan Xianyan was definitely an attractive woman. She was elegant and seductive, and her skin was translucent like jade. If she was submissive enough, Zhang Ruochen could spare her life and treat her as a servant.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Elder Yuanzhou, what’s the second thing that made you come here?”

“The second thing is that I plan to live in the Secret Dragon Palace until you reach the state of saint.”

“Is that also a decision made by Elder Pavilion?”

“That’s right.”

Obviously, Elder Yuanzhou lived in Secret Dragon Palace to protect Zhang Ruochen’s safety so that he wouldn’t be assassinated again.

Zhang Ruochen lightly pounded the table with his fingers. After observing it for a while, he decided to tell something about the immortal vampires.

Actually, Elder Yuanzhou would know some secrets sooner or later after he moved into Secret Dragon Palace.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Then I’ll share some real businesses with you!”

Elder Yuanzhou asked, “Is it related to you tricking others?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded, took out a list and put it on the stone table, “Eighty to ninety percent of the members from Blood God Sect on this list are immortal vampires.”

Elder Yuanzhou was very surprised. He skimmed through the list, and in the next moment, his eyes popped with terror. There were fourteen saints on the list.

Chapter 1176 - Tenth Emperor, Yan Liren

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Liao Teng and Saint Hongyuan's names were on the list. However, there was a small red cross on their names.

Elder Yuan Zhou quickly calmed down. Gripping the list, he asked seriously, "How did you know that they were Vampire infiltrators?"

This was very important. Once the list was published, it would cause an uproar. Elder Yuan Zhou was being careful.

Zhang Ruochen sat across from him and said nonchalantly, "I met Taishang Elder. He gave me something that helps me see through their disguises."

"Taishang Elder has always been at Qianyuan Mountain, contemplating the Blood God Map. He never interacts with any disciples...oh?"

He split a beam of his Spiritual Power to look at Qianyuan Mountain and discovered that Taishang Elder had left long ago. Only a stone statue sat on the peak.

"Where did Taishang Elder go?" Elder Yuan Zhou was shocked.

Taishang Elder's cultivation had already reached a very advanced state. Other than for contemplating the Blood God Map, he rarely ever opened his eyes.

Probably only the survival of the Blood God Sect could alarm him. Since he'd already left Qianyuan Mountain, it meant that a shocking change had occurred.

“The second tier of the Bottomless Abyss,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Elder Yuan Zhou’s heart jumped. He thought of some things. “Is it related to the disappearance of the Hierarch?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. He told Elder Yuan Zhou about the Hierarch working with the Immortal Vampires, raising blood beasts in the Bottomless Abyss, and everything.

Hearing these descriptions, Elder Yuan Zhou’s forehead was covered in sweat. He could no longer keep calm. Rolling up the list, he stood up immediately to leave the Hidden Dragon Palace.

Zhang Ruochen stopped him. “Elder Yuan Zhou, where are you taking the list?”

Elder Yuan Zhou was impatient. “Naturally taking it to the Elder Pavilion. We must check each and every name. If one is confirmed to be an Immortal Vampire, he will be killed. Oh, you will come with me to confirm their identities.”

As he spoke, he grabbed Zhang Ruochen to drag him away forcefully.

“Don’t be in such a hurry,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“The Blood God Sect is at the brink of death. How can I not be in a hurry? How can billions of years of heritage be destroyed in our hands?”

Elder Yuan Zhou was very strong. He forcefully dragged Zhang Ruochen all the way to the door. Even though Zhang Ruochen’s body would soon become a Saint, he still couldn’t fight back.

“Isn’t bringing the list back to the Elder Pavilion letting it fall into a trap?” Zhang Ruochen asked. “Do you think that Yu Huacheng escaping is a coincidence, or that he didn’t receive help from the Elder Pavilion?”

Hearing this, Elder Yuan Zhou calmed down. He let go of Zhang Ruochen and thought carefully.

“That makes sense,” he said with a serious voice. “Even the Hierarch is working with the Immortal Vampires. There must

be an Immortal Vampire in the Elder Pavilion too.”

He looked at Zhang Ruochen with suspicion but then shook his head. “Even if I don’t believe you, I must believe Taishang Elder. You’ve cultivated your body to this state. Did you receive Taishang Elder’s true inheritance? Did you comprehend the truth of the Blood God Map?”

Elder Yuan Zhou seemed to respect Taishang Elder very much. This made Zhang Ruochen curious.

After all, Elder Yuan Zhou was one of the six Saint Elders too. His status was second only to the Hierarch. He didn’t have to look up to anyone.

“Who exactly is Taishang Elder?” Zhang Ruochen asked curiously.

Today, Zhang Ruochen had revealed many great secrets that had shocked Elder Yuan Zhou. This made him act like an ignorant fool before the junior. Now, he finally felt better.

His eyebrows arched as he laughed inside. So there are things that even you don’t know.

“You don’t even know who Taishang Elder is?” Elder Yuan Zhou mused, combing his beard. “As expected of a young man with limited knowledge. I can understand.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He felt that Elder Yuan Zhou was teasing him, so he said, “You don’t have to tell me. I must continue cultivating and reach the Saint Realm for my physical body.”

“Wait.” Elder Yuan Zhou caught up to Zhang Ruochen.

“You’re still young and have a great amount of time to cultivate, but the Blood God Sect can’t continue for much longer. It may break apart and be destroyed at any time. I would like to know what exactly your plan is.”

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen didn’t have any plans of stopping, he immediately added, “Taishang Elder is that miracle man from 1,000 years ago. People call him the Tenth Emperor.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped and turned around in surprise. “The Tenth Emperor, Yan Liren?”

Eight hundred years ago, there were only nine emperors in the human race. However, Yan Liren of the Blood God Sect was only a step away from cultivating his body to the Supreme Saint Realm. He was the strongest man under the Nine Emperors, so he was known as the Tenth Emperor.

“I heard that something happened when Yan Liren tried for the Supreme Saint Realm,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Not only did he fail to reach it, he also had an incurable injury and died. How can he be alive after 800 years?”

“What 800 years?” Elder Yuan Zhou asked.

“Nothing.” Zhang Ruochen shook his head. Not wanting Elder Yuan Zhou to continue asking, he said, “I do have some plans against the Immortal Vampire infiltrators. We can discuss it a bit.”

Elder Yuan Zhou’s own cultivation was very advanced and he had a lot of forces under his control. With him joining, Zhang Ruochen could act more easily.

The two discussed for four whole hours and finally reached a consensus.

“So this means,” Elder Yuan Zhou said, “we do not have to worry about finding them all right now. We can go slowly and rid ourselves of them one by one. So, according to your plan, what is the next step?”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. “The Blood God Sect will take at least four or five days to clear out the infiltrators under Saint Hongyuan and Liao Teng. During these days, our main focus should be on clearing out the Half-Saint spies.”

“Alright. I will find the Half-Saints on this list and send their souls flying.” With anger in his heart, Elder Yuan Zhou’s murderous intent consolidated into a black cloud.

Zhang Ruochen stopped him again. “Your every move is under the eyes of the Immortal Vampires,” he said. “You must not alarm them. Plus, you do not need to do it yourself. I’ve already sent two strong cultivators to them. I believe they will have results soon. I will cultivate in seclusion these next days. When I come out, we will go do something major.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and walked into a red pavilion. His confidence and stability made Elder Yuan Zhou ashamed. He had to lament that Elder Yuan Xing and Taishang Elder's visions were precise. This man was truly extraordinary.

Elder Yuan Zhou called Shangguan Xianyan to his side. "Do you see? You are both young geniuses, but there's still distance between you and Gu Linfeng. Learn from him."

He still wasn't assured, so he had Shangguan Xianyan check the Half-Saints on the list. She would work with Zhang Ruochen's people to clear them all out. Not a single one could be allowed to escape.

After Shangguan Xianyan left, he sank into deep thought again. He wondered if he should send a message to the Elder Pavilion to remind the elders he was close to.

In the end, he shook his head. He didn't dare leak the news lest something worse happened.

...

Zhang Ruochen entered the pavilion and set up a defensive formation. Then he entered the scroll world. He refined the white tiger divine dew to try and open the remaining eight apertures.

The 36 on the head were the hardest and most dangerous. Any mishap could damage the Sea of Qi and destroy all his cultivation.

It was said that Yan Liren had hurt his Sea of Qi when trying to reach the Supreme Saint Realm and almost disabled his cultivation.

"Taishang Elder's body is too frail. He really doesn't look like he has a saint body or is close to the Supreme Saint Realm. Could it be that his injuries still haven't healed after 800 years?"

Zhang Ruochen had to be more careful during the following cultivation.

There were only eight more apertures, but they were like eight trials. Each one was as difficult as stepping into the sky. Of

course, the physical body would also improve after saintifying one aperture.

Zhang Ruochen swallowed a small bottle of white tiger divine dew. The medicine seeped into his veins and combined with the blood.

Next, Zhang Ruochen used ten Blood Spiritual Meridians to move Blood Qi to his head with all his might.

Boom.

Two hours later, the 137th aperture opened.

Six hours later, the 138th aperture opened.

Half a day later, the 139th aperture opened.

...

The further he went, the more time he used. It also grew more difficult and dangerous.

By the time he reached the 142nd aperture, he actually took seven whole days before succeeding.

“Two more apertures. Once they are saintified, my body will become a Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes were bloodshot and his black hair was standing up straight. His veins all bulged. In a crazed state, he tried for the 143rd aperture with all his might.

Whoosh—

A blue figure glowing with saintly light flew over and landed below the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. It consolidated into Huang Yanchen’s slender figure.

Qing Mo came behind her and whispered, “Princess, I feel like something’s wrong with Lord Zhang. Should we stop him? What if something—”

Huang Yanchen shook her head. Staring at the cultivating Zhang Ruochen, she said, “His will is stronger than you think. I’m confident in him.”

Chapter 1177 - Mind Power Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen was indeed in grave danger. He mobilized masculine Qi that was ten thousand times stronger than that in normal people. He took a huge risk by combining it with Bloody Qi, trying to open the one hundred and forty-third aperture.

His blood started to boil, becoming hot like lava, flowing in all his ten Blood Spiritual Meridians, rushing toward his head.

The one hundred and forty-third aperture was called 'Baihui,' which was at the center of his head. Once he opened that, he opened the door of the spiritual altar, which could connect the sky and land, absorbing the light of the stars and transforming it into mind power.

After sanctifying Baihui Aperture, his mind power would surge.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen would rather risk going mad to open his Baihui Aperture. Even if he couldn't sanctify his body, he needed to help his mind power reach the state of saint.

Hong Long Long.

Zhang Ruochen could hear the thunder above his head, after a short while, his eardrums were broken. Blood flowed out of his ears.

Fire gushed out of his ears, his eyes, his nose and his mouth, permeating. His entire upper body was covered in fire, and masculine Qi spread like golden ripples.

“How terrific the power ripples are. He’s already far surpassed lower-class saints. If he can sanctify his body, how powerful will he become?”

Qing Mo opened her mouth wide, as she found it incredible.

Huang Yanchen stared at Zhang Ruochen. She was very tranquil, and she wasn’t worried that something would happen to him.

The final two apertures on his head, Baihui and Shenting, were the most difficult ones to be opened. Many monks who had great potential were stuck at the final step and couldn’t become saints.

Bloody Qi and masculine Qi intertwined in the ten Blood Spiritual Meridians, hitting Baihui Aperture, cracking Zhang Ruochen’s head that kept bleeding.

His head hurt more and more.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that Baihui Aperture became looser and looser.

He needed to keep opening them, otherwise, all the efforts would be in vain.

Hong Long.

After half an hour, Zhang Ruochen heard an explosive sound, which also knocked him unconscious.

And then, a stream of fresh air flowed into Baihui Aperture as spring water flowed into the desert, quickly healing the injuries on Zhang Ruochen’s head.

“Finally! I’ve opened Baihui Aperture!”

Zhang Ruochen guarded his mind and tried to calm himself down. He didn’t stop refining. Instead, he extracted his blue dragon divine dew and swallowed it

Dragons were for mind power, and tigers were for strength.

White Dragon Divine Dew was used to refine bodies, and Blue Dragon Divine Dew could be used to improve mind power.

After opening Baihui Aperture, Zhang Ruochen sensed that his mind power surged again. He was only one small step from reaching level fifty.

He decided to seize this chance to refine his mind power to state of saint.

Zhang Ruochen was greatly talented when it came to mind power, and after combining the memories of three lifetimes and comprehension of saintly way, he had a great advantage.

It wasn't difficult for him to become a mind power saint. All he needed were two days and one night, then he would become so.

Chi Chi.

Zhang Ruochen's mind power was to control and form lightning.

Just as he became a saint, the spiritual Qi one thousand square miles around him all turned into traces of lightning. They were intertwined with each other, becoming thick lightning shuttles and blades.

“Thunder God Knight.”

Zhang Ruochen stood on the ground, raising his arms and putting them together.

All the lightning shuttles and blades gathered toward him in the sky and land. A lightning giant that was eight hundred feet tall was condensed behind him.

That was the saint look of Zhang Ruochen after his mind power reached the state of saint.

Under the control of Zhang Ruochen, the body of Thunder God Knight became smaller and smaller, and soon, it shrank to the size of Zhang Ruochen's real body.

After the lightning gathered and condensed, it looked like flesh and blood.

Two Zhang Ruochens were under Sky-connecting Divine Tree, one of them sitting and one of them standing.

“I didn't expect my mind power to be sanctified first.”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and took a look at Thunder God Knight. He nodded lightly, “Thunder God Knight is more powerful than ordinary lower-class saints.”

Zhang Ruochen reached out his hand and pointed at the eyebrows of Thunder God Knight.

In the next moment, Thunder God Knight turned into thousands of light shuttles, gushing into the fingers of Zhang Ruochen, merging with his body.

Chi Chi.

There was electric light flowing on each inch of Zhang Ruochen’s skin as if there were an electric net covering his body.

The lightning penetrated his body, integrating with his blood and flowing toward his heart, and soon, Zhang Ruochen’s heart turned into a glowing saint heart.

Mind power saints had saint hearts, which were as important as saint sources of martial arts saints.

Zhang Ruochen’s power was improved again after his mind power being sanctified.

His strength was forceful, far surpassing that of saints whose mind power was at level fifty. Even if his mind power had been sanctified, his fighting power was only improved to a small extent.

After his mind power reached the state of saint, Zhang Ruochen experienced sharp improvements in other aspects.

Mind power saints were able to move mountains and oceans with their mind power. They could also create illusions, influencing the consciousness of some lower-class saints.

For example, if a lower-class saint tried to make his saint source and lower abdomen explode to meet death with Zhang Ruochen together, he could mobilize his forceful mind power to stop him from doing so.

Meanwhile, Zhang Ruochen’s senses also became more acute. His hearing, smelling and sight all reached a terrific level.

Monks below the state of saint would never deceive his ears when they transmitted voices to each other.

And then, Zhang Ruochen refined some White Tiger Divine Dewes to sanctify Baihui Aperture on his head.

“I’ve sanctified the one hundred and forty-third aperture, and my mind power has reached level fifty. I can easily defeat mid-class saints like Liao Teng without using the power of time and space.” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

Huang Yanchen walked toward Zhang Ruochen, emanating the fragrance of flowers. She smiled. “Congratulations.”

Zhang Ruochen walked toward Huang Yanchen. He reached out his hand, stroking her face and smiling. “You’ve become a saint yourself.”

Huang Yanchen had passed the third pre-saint trial. After integrating the Xuanwu saint source with herself, she became a saint without any cultivation.

Huang Yanchen said, “Do you want to fight and see who’s stronger?”

After becoming a lower-class saint, Huang Yanchen was also able to fight a mid-class saint if she used all her skills.

“I have something more important to deal with. Next time!” Zhang Ruochen said.

Huang Yanchen wore the virtual golden mask on her face, covering half her face, and said, “I’ll go with you. Perhaps I can help.”

“Okay.”

Zhang Ruochen agreed to that.

After walking out of the Scroll World, Zhang Ruochen summoned Ji Shui and Zhao Shiqi.

“Is the whole thing going smoothly?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Zhao Shiqi stepped forward and said, “We’ve already eradicated thirty-five of the half saints on the list, which is one-third of the total number. Twenty-four of them were immortal vampire spies; nine of them cooperate with immortal

vampires. As for the other two, I can't confirm their identities, but I killed them anyway."

Zhang Ruochen frowned and said, "Better to kill the wrong guys than to let go of a devil?"

He then heard the voice of Elder Yuan Zhou from outside the door: "This is a special moment, so we need to be firm. If we let even one of them roam free, it'll be a disaster for all of us."

At the next moment, Elder Yuanzhou showed up at the center of Secret Dragon Palace without being seen by anyone. His grey hair and grey mustache were waving in the air, which made him look like an angel.

And then, Shangguan Xianyan picked up a jade serving tray and walked in. She walked to Zhang Ruochen's side, picking up a cup of tea and putting it on the table.

"Please drink the tea, your highness."

Just as she served Zhang Ruochen the tea, Shangguan Xianyan smiled at Zhang Ruochen. It appeared that she really treated herself as a servant. There wasn't the pride of a saintess coming from her at all.

Zhang Ruochen stopped thinking about the previous framing incident. He said, "Now that one-third of the immortal vampire half saints have been eradicated, the spies from the immortal vampire race will definitely be more alert. You'd better be more careful."

"I'll go help them."

Huang Yanchen stepped forward with a smile.

Zhao Shiqi knew the identity of Huang Yanchen. He kneeled with one knee and said flatteringly, "Greetings, saint, my lord. With you by our side, we can kill even the immortal vampire saints."

Elder Yuanzhou gazed at Huang Yanchen and started to observe her, pondering her real identity.

Every saint was a dominant being in their respective areas. They definitely couldn't be underestimated.

Who is she?

Shangguan Xianyan had seen this mysterious woman in Blue Dragon Void World before. She used to be a level-nine half saint back in Blue Dragon Void World, yet she had already reached the state of saint.

Shangguan Xianyan had a sense of risk. She was hostile against that mysterious woman as she reckoned that she might fight for the wife of the hierarch with her.

Zhang Ruochen could sense the slight awkwardness, so he asked, “Elder Yuanzhou, has Elder Pavilion eradicated the subordinates of Saint Hongyuan and Liao Teng.”

“We’re finishing our work now. Most of the monks in our sect thought that the turmoil has been over,” Elder Yuanzhou said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If so, then let’s go do something major.”

All the monks looked to Zhang Ruochen. They all wanted to know what Zhang Ruochen meant by ‘something major.’

The eyes of Elder Yuanzhou gleamed. He couldn’t wait for it anymore. He asked, “Who’re we going to kill?”

“Discipline King Diyuan is still held in Elder Pavilion, isn’t he? How can we let go of such a wonderful opportunity?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled as he had already formed a well-conceived plan.

Chapter 1178 - All Sorts Of Tactics

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Under the night sky, the Elder Pavilion's mountain was dotted with light. The closer to the peak, the denser and brighter the lights.

Elder Yuan Gui sat in a purple pavilion in the bamboo forest. With his hands behind his back, he listened to a black-clothed cultivator's report. His ancient face grew more and more menacing.

In two short days, more than 20 Half-Saint Vampires were killed. How could Elder Yuan Gui not be furious?

“Who is it? How can he see through the disguise? Is it Gu Linfeng?”

Icy Qi flooded out of Elder Gui Yuan, crackling in the night. White frost covered the bamboo leaves nearby.

Not long ago, Gu Linfeng had seen through Saint Hongyuan's disguise. He clearly had some special secret spell. This was why Elder Gui Yuan thought of him first.

The black-clothed cultivator's voice was raspy. “According to Elder Yuan Zhou's information, Gu Linfeng's injuries will take at least one or two months to heal. I believe that the recent chain of events must be Discipline King Haiming's revenge.”

To them, even if Gu Linfeng knew how to see through the disguise, as his master, Discipline King Haiming should be more advanced. More importantly, Gu Linfeng had only gone through the first Pre-Saint Trial. Deep down, they looked down on him, not thinking he was a true enemy.

“Discipline King Haiming?” Elder Yuan Gui grew thoughtful. “If he already knows that there is a large group of Vampires in the sect, why does he work alone instead of exposing them?”

“He is determined to become the next Hierarch,” the black-clothed man said. “Perhaps this is related.”

“I think I understand! Discipline King Haiming wants to hide in the shadows and clear out all the Vampires. When the time is right, he will publicize it. This way, his respect in the sect would be at the peak. He would be the only candidate for the Hierarch.”

Elder Yuan Gui’s eyes darkened.

What kind of accomplishment was clearing out the Immortal Vampires? If Discipline King Haiming could really do it, all the disciples would see him as their savior. Pushing him into the Hierarch position would be natural.

Elder Yuan Gui’s fingers turned into sharp claws. “Discipline King Haiming wants to kill all Immortal Vampires. I want to rip him into pieces as well. I will create a trap right now and lure him in.”

...

In the Hidden Dragon Palace, Zhang Ruochen was also planning.

“We killed 20 to 30 Vampire Half-Saints in a row,” he said. “This must have shocked some of the higher-up figures. Next, they will definitely start suspecting Discipline King Haiming and try to lure him out to kill him. Of course, this is also a chance for us.”

Elder Yuan Zhou was getting impatient. “Come with me to the Elder Pavilion and kill Discipline King Diyuan. Why must we go through all this trouble?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “One of the higher-up Vampires must be part of the Elder Pavilion. It’s possible that it’s a Saint Elder. If we don’t find him, we won’t be able to kill Discipline King Diyuan.”

One of the Saint Elders was an infiltrator?

Elder Yuan Zhou grew thoughtful. He had some guesses, but he couldn't confirm them. In the end, he asked, "How do we lure him out?"

"Didn't I say it earlier?" Zhang Ruochen said, chuckling. "They want to kill Discipline King Haiming. It's a chance for us."

"What do you mean?"

Zhang Ruochen continued, "We can create a Discipline King Haiming and lure that Immortal Vampire from the Elder Pavilion. This way, we'll have a chance to kill Discipline King Diyuan."

Shangguan Xianyan grew interested. With questions in her eyes, she asked, "Create a Discipline King Haiming?"

Zhang Ruochen gazed at Elder Yuan Zhou. "Isn't Elder Yuan Zhou the best choice? He can disguise himself as Discipline King Haiming and lure the snake out."

Elder Yuan Zhou chuckled. "It's not that I underestimate you, but with your cultivation, even if Discipline King Diyuan is restrained, you still can't kill him. Only I can kill him. How about you disguise yourself as Discipline King Haiming?"

"Don't you want to know who the infiltrator in the Elder Pavilion is?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Hearing this, Elder Yuan Zhou was moved. He grew thoughtful. The six Saint Elders of the Blood God Sect had known each other for centuries. Elder Yuan Zhou actually didn't believe that one of the other five could be a spy.

However, this was the truth. He couldn't not believe it.

Half a moment later, he said seriously, "Okay, I will pretend to be Discipline King Haiming. I'd like to see just who that person is. However, with your abilities, you can't kill Discipline King Haiming. Did Taishang Elder give you some powerful weapon?"

"He indeed gave me something powerful," Zhang Ruochen said.

“Alright! If you really can kill Discipline King Diyuan, it’ll be a big blow to the Immortal Vampires. With this achievement, your reputation may surpass the nine Heirs too. You’ll become one of the young leaders of this century.”

Elder Yuan Zhou had heavy thoughts. He put down an Elder badge and walked out of the Hidden Dragon Pavilion.

“You must be careful,” Zhang Ruochen reminded. “The Immortal Vampires will definitely set up a murderous plan.”

Elder Yuan Zhou had already left the palace. Only a cold voice traveled back. “I’ve experienced countless storms in my life. I don’t need your reminder.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. Using a beam of Holy Qi, he curled up the badge. Holding it in his hand, his smile gradually disappeared. He grew more and more serious.

Killing Discipline King Diyuan wasn’t an easy task. No matter if he succeeded or not, the entire Blood God Sect would be shaken. If he succeeded, the entire central region would be shaken.

Of course, Discipline King Diyuan was very advanced. Even if he asked Ghost King Bloodmoon for help, he still wasn’t completely confident he would succeed.

It would be the same if Elder Yuan Zhou did it.

In the Elder Pavilion, a black-clothed cultivator stood before Elder Yuan Gui. He wore a monstrous golden mask. “News just came that Saint Lingku discovered marks left by Discipline King Haiming near our setup.”

“It seems that he already took the bait. This time, I will come out personally. I will not allow him to escape again.”

Elder Yuan Gui hated Discipline King Haiming. He wanted desperately to kill the man. Before leaving, he ordered, “Stay in the Elder Pavilion. If anything happens, tell me immediately.”

“Yes.”

The cultivator with the golden mask of an evil ghost disappeared into the darkness.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the bamboo forest at the foot of the Elder Pavilion's mountain. He looked at the starry sky through the bamboo leaves. "I felt a powerful aura rush out of the Elder Pavilion. It's hurrying away. The snake hidden in the Elder Pavilion has come out already."

Qing Mo stood behind him and cocked her head. "Really? How come I didn't feel anything?"

"Because your Spiritual Power still isn't strong enough," Zhang Ruochen said.

Qing Mo pouted and huffed. She clearly didn't think so. "There are two Saint Elders in the pavilion. Even if you lure one away, there's still one guarding. You can't kill Discipline King Diyuan."

"The most dangerous one has left. The other one isn't dangerous and is easier to deal with." Zhang Ruochen gazed at Qing Mo's delicate features and smiled. "To avoid unnecessary troubles, I think you should lead him away."

Qing Mo was frightened. "Are you crazy? You want me to lead away a Saint Elder? I...I'm not that strong yet. What if I get killed?"

She was pale from shock and kept retreating.

"I already said that the dangerous Elder has left," Zhang Ruochen said. "The other one isn't dangerous at all."

"No! How can he not be dangerous? What if he gets his eyes on me...no... No, I mean, what if he sees through my disguise? He might capture me and use me to produce a divine pill. My thousands of years of cultivation will be reduced to nothing."

Qing Mo was almost crying from fear.

Zhang Ruochen took out Elder Yuan Zhou's badge and stuffed it into her hands. "If you're really captured, take this out and tell that Saint Elder that you are a saintly medicine from Elder Yuan Zhou's garden. This will save you."

Qing Mo took the badge, but her legs still felt weak. She couldn't walk. She kept asking Zhang Ruochen if she had to

go. Finally, Zhang Ruochen had to mention Huang Yanchen to force her to move.

When Qing Mo was miles away from the Elder Pavilion, she took out a beam of Holy Qi. The other Saint Elder in the pavilion sensed the Holy Qi, as expected, and flew out to where Qing Mo was.

“Now.”

Zhang Ruochen used a physical technique and rushed toward the mountain where the Elder Pavilion was.

Even without Elder Yuan Zhou’s badge, his Spiritual Power was strong enough to avoid the perceptions of the strong figures in the pavilion. It was like entering a no-man’s realm.

Discipline King Diyuan is imprisoned in the Son King Palace, restrained by the Nine Dragon Lock Heaven Formation. I must attack without him noticing. Even if I can’t kill him, I must injure him heavily first.

Ghost King Bloodmoon’s aura was too strong, so she couldn’t kill Discipline King Diyuan. If he was alerted beforehand, it would be a bad thing.

Zhang Ruochen covered himself with Spiritual Power and put away his aura. He rushed into Son King Palace like a ghost.

Chapter 1179 - Huge Battle in Son King Palace

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Few martial arts saints could refine their mind power to over level fifty.

Although Zhang Ruochen's martial arts level was nothing compared to that of Discipline King Diyuan, his mind power was way stronger than that of Discipline King Diyuan.

Zhang Ruochen sneaked into Son King Palace and came to right outside Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation.

Discipline King Fayuan was sitting at the center of the formation. His neck, arms, feet and waist were all entwined by a dragon-shaped chain. Normal saints wouldn't even be able to move their bodies.

As for Discipline King Diyuan, there was forceful Holy Qi gushing out of his body, permeating the entire Son King Palace with white mist.

Twelve human phantoms stood in the holy Qi white mist, standing in twelve directions around Discipline King Diyuan.

They looked like twelve guarding angels.

No wonder he's a discipline king. He can show twelve holy Qi dividing selves even after being trapped here, Zhang Ruochen thought.

The twelve human-shaped phantoms were only dividing selves condensed by holy Qi and saintly ways, yet they were still immensely powerful, much more so than ordinary mid-class saints. Zhang Ruochen found it very difficult to deal with.

Fortunately, this wasn't a problem for him.

As long as he could kill Discipline King Diyuan, those twelve holy Qi dividing selves would also disappear.

Zhang Ruochen tried to suppress the aggressiveness in his body. He was very intense and concentrative. He performed spatial move and vanished.

Shua!

At the next moment, Zhang Ruochen stepped into Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation and showed up above Discipline King Diyuan. He pointed down and slashed the space.

The five senses of Discipline King Diyuan were very acute. Just as Zhang Ruochen performed spatial movement, he opened his eyes, where light was shot out.

Hua La La.

Discipline King Diyuan dragged its nine dragon-shaped chains and moved to the right, trying to dodge the space crack that was falling toward him.

The reactions of Discipline King Diyuan was extremely fast. Monks who had lower cultivation wouldn't manage to ambush him. Even though Zhang Ruochen attacked him where he was close to him, he still didn't hit the vital organ of Discipline King Diyuan.

Pu Chi.

The space crack cut the right arm of Discipline King Diyuan, cutting off his arm and a dragon-shaped chain.

Although Zhang Ruochen managed to cut off one of his arms, he didn't severely injure him.

Discipline King Diyuan could kill Zhang Ruochen within the blink of an eye with only one arm.

Zhang Ruochen was fully prepared before coming here, and he had some follow-up techniques.

The first hit couldn't kill Discipline King Diyuan, so Zhang Ruochen immediately made a second attack.

He slightly bent his fingers and scratched forward, tearing five space cracks, hitting toward Discipline King Diyuan at the same time.

Discipline King Diyuan had no problem resisting normal martial arts and saint weapons.

However, even he had to try to dodge techniques like space cracks.

The previous space crack cut off one of the dragon-shaped chain binding Discipline King Diyuan, and now, there were still eight of them, so Discipline King Diyuan didn't have much space to move his body.

Pu Chi.

Discipline King Diyuan managed to dodge three space cracks, but two still hit him.

One of them cut his waist, tearing down a large piece of his flesh, and it almost cut him in half. Some of his organs were swallowed by the space crack.

The other one cut off the right arm of Discipline King Diyuan and another dragon-shaped chain.

Discipline King Diyuan looked miserable. He had lost both of his arms, with lots of saint blood gushing out of his body, tainting the ground red.

Who could imagine that a prominent discipline king like him was so severely injured?

Zhang Ruochen wanted to strike him again, seeing Discipline King Diyuan still alive.

The third strike wasn't as smooth as the first two strikes, so Discipline King Diyuan had enough time to prepare for that. He roared, "Are you looking for death, brat?"

Discipline King Diyuan trampled the ground. Hong Long! The entire Son King Palace fiercely shook.

Zhang Ruochen sensed that waves that were tens of thousands of feet tall rushed toward him. Just as he prepared to use

spatial move to dodge it, his chest was hit by a great force, which knocked him away.

Peng!

Zhang Ruochen hit the wall of Son King Palace. Engraving formation emerged, which knocked him toward the Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation.

“Die!”

Discipline King Diyuan looked at Zhang Ruochen flying toward him. He roared and exhaled sound waves, which condensed into an army shape. Those soldiers were wearing iron armor and holding swords, rushing toward Zhang Ruochen.

The sound waves from a discipline king couldn't be warded off by Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was about to clash with the army formed by the sound waves. In the next moment, his body disappeared. He performed spatial move and stepped out of Son King Palace.

Wa!

Zhang Ruochen spit out blood as he was severely injured. If he were just an ordinary lower-class saint, he would've been killed already.

Suddenly, twelve Holy Qi dividing bodies rushed out of Son King Palace and encircled Zhang Ruochen.

“Your turn!”

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen took out Universe Spiritual Map, slapped forward and opened a space door.

Hua!

A cluster of black ghost Qi gushed out of the space door, and then, it rushed toward Son King Palace.

The ghost Qi crushed all the twelve holy Qi dividing bodies immediately.

Ghost Qi entered Son King Palace, turning into a slightly-built shadow, attacking Discipline King Diyuan.

Hong Long Long.

A war erupted in Son King Palace.

If it wasn't for the defense formation in Son King Palace, it would've collapsed.

Discipline King Diyuan and Discipline Haiming both entered heavenly pass realm, however, he has lost his arms and was suppressed by the dragon-shaped chains. He was no match of Ghost King Bloodmoon, Zhang Ruochen thought.

'Heavenly Pass realm' was a level among the saints.

There were eight levels of saints: lower-class saints, mid-class saints, upper-class saints, Mysterious Yellow realm, Absolute Ground realm, Heavenly pass realm, true realm, and supreme realm.

The first three levels, lower-class, mid-class and upper-class were basic levels. Most of the saints could advance there if they put in enough effort.

The three levels following that, Mysterious Yellow realm, Absolute Ground realm and Heavenly pass realm corresponded to the four levels, Sky, Land, Mysterious and Yellow during the early period of martial arts. One needed to fully comprehend the connection between the two levels to make a breakthrough.

As for the final two levels, true realm and supreme realm, only a few saints could attain that. The former ones were called 'true saints,' and the latter were called 'supreme saints.'

True saints and supreme saints were like saint kings, who were mysterious creatures traveling between the sky and land. Even saints found it difficult to meet them.

Saints who had reached Heavenly Pass Realm were terrific beings. One breath from them could severely injure a lower-class saint.

Zhang Ruochen survived that not just because of his great body constitution, but also a bit of luck.

“No! The power of Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation is withering away. Someone is turning the formation off.”

After his mind power reached the saint level, Zhang Ruochen was perceptive enough to notice the changes in Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation.

“Who is it?”

Zhang Ruochen rushed into a formation tower beside Sun King Palace. A black-robed monk wearing a golden ghost mask had already turned off the Nine Dragon Lock Sky Formation.

Hong Long.

Sun King Palace collapsed.

A burning sun flew out of the ruins, surging to the sky.

A sun hung in the sky above the territory of Blood God Sect, turning dark night into morning.

That wasn't a real sun. It was actually half the body of Discipline King Diyuan.

Discipline King Diyuan's body below the chest had been completely shattered. He only had a small part of his body left, yet it was also rugged.

“Don't you dare run.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon was wearing a long white robe. Her hair looked like a waterfall, and her eyes were gleaming. She turned into a blood-red moon, dashing toward the shining sun in front of her.

It was a bizarre scene. A moon and a sun hung in the sky at the same time, and the moon was chasing the sun. A terrific battle erupted.

Zhang Ruochen had confidence in Ghost King Bloodmoon. After all, Ghost King Bloodmoon would try everything to get the saint soul of Discipline King Diyuan.

Zhang Ruochen stared at that black-robed monk. He wielded his palm print.

The black-robed monk took out a one-foot-long jade scepter and pointed at Zhang Ruochen. Suddenly, an ice-crystal savage beast dashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

“It’s a mind-power saint.”

Zhang Ruochen saw that the attack skill used by the black-robed monk was an intricate mind power attack skill. It was superior to normal spells. He was definitely a mind power saint.

No wonder Zhang Ruochen didn’t realize that he was hiding in the dark. His mind power was at the same level as Zhang Ruochen.

That person’s mind power wasn’t too advanced. It hadn’t reached level fifty-one yet.

Peng.

Zhang Ruochen crushed the crystal savage beast, took out Abyss Ancient Sword and stepped forward.

The black-robed monk saw Zhang Ruochen use Universe Spiritual Map to summon a ghost king, so he recognized who he was.

The black-robed monk turned around and started to flee, racing toward the top of the tower formation.

“Do you really think I’ll let you go now that you’ve recognized me?”

Zhang Ruochen wielded his sword. A trace of thick sword Qi gushed out, cutting the thirteen-level-tall bronze formation tower into halves.

The black-robed monk jumped out of the window, diving into the abyss. He didn’t fall onto the ground. Instead, he controlled his mind power and condensed a saint cloud, flying toward the distance.

Zhang Ruochen was severely injured. He felt his organs ache after taking only one step forward as if something was twisting them.

“I can’t let him get away.”

Zhang Ruochen also mobilized his mind power, and an earth-shattering thunder blasted in his body. He raced forward like lightning, and he was faster than that black-robed monk.

Chapter 1180 - Mo You Valley

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

That night, the entire Blood God Sect was unable to stay calm. Their world was truly upended. Every now and then, terrifying saintly Qi would flood out and fill the sky. The young disciples all prostrated themselves on the ground in fear.

“Heavens, two Saints are chasing and killing again. How many terrifying changes will happen today? Has disaster truly descended?”

A young talent in the Heaven Realm looked up in the sky. A white cloud and a barrel-width bolt of lightning flew across the sky, one after another. The Spiritual Qi in the air crackled to the horizon.

It was a terrifying scene.

The cultivators on the ground could see a Saint in the cloud and lightning, creating a shocking battle. The Saints fought and the shockwaves that reached the ground turned into powerful gales of wind.

“First, it was the moon chasing the sun. Now, it’s lightning chasing a cloud. Which Saints are fighting?”

...

The disciples of the Blood God Sect were all terrified. It wasn’t only the “moon chasing sun” and “lightning chasing cloud” in the Elder Pavilion that scared them. There had been Saints chasing and fighting in other places earlier.

They had a feeling that the entire Blood God Sect was at war.

Some other Saints were still confused. They had no clue what had happened. Thinking that outside enemies had invaded, they activated the defensive formation and hurried toward the battlefields.

The cities and forces near the Blood God Sect also received news. They closed their gates and activated their defensive formations so they wouldn't get affected.

Manipulating Spiritual Power, Zhang Ruochen transformed into a bolt of lightning. He chased the black-clothed cultivator while fighting. With his strength, it wasn't hard to defeat a level 50 Spiritual Power Saint.

However, he was injured by Discipline King Diyuan earlier. His combat ability had decreased and he could only use Spiritual Power. He actually couldn't take the man down in a short time.

Whoosh.

Zhang Ruochen flashed and lightning appeared within hundreds of miles in the air. Standing on a cloud, one could see a mass of electricity.

The black-clothed cultivator was also very powerful. The jade scepter in his hand was a Spiritual Power Saint weapon. It could strengthen his spells.

Sensing that Zhang Ruochen had caught up again, he spun around suddenly. Holding the jade scepter, he pointed at the incoming lightning and uttered, "Thousand Mile Ice City."

That moment, the man seemed to become the world's center. Snow started floating down from the sky. Closely after, in the floating snow above him, a huge city of silver snow appeared. Shocking power flooded down.

This was a very powerful Spiritual Power spell. It was even stronger than the combat abilities of some martial saint spells.

Kaboom.

The Thousand Mile Ice City crashed against Zhang Ruochen's lightning. They broke each other down while battling, creating beams of chaotic Qi.

The city kept crumbling into pieces of mountain-sized crystals that fell to the ground. Even though Zhang Ruochen had broken the city, he still suffered. The injuries grew worse.

Taking this chance, the black-clothed man escaped to 100 miles away. Using Spiritual Power, he said, “So the Time and Space Descendant is only this? You don’t live up to your name. It seems that the outside world has exaggerated about you. I’ll come back to kill you when my Spiritual Power reaches level 51.”

Clearly, he thought that he was relatively safe when hundreds of miles away. He no longer feared Zhang Ruochen, so he purposely said those things to make Zhang Ruochen come after him.

He’d already sent a message to Elder Yuan Gui. As long as he could delay Zhang Ruochen, when Elder Yuan Gui came, he would be prey in the trap, ready for them to kill.

“Zhang Ruochen, you dare to say that you’ve killed Taigu Remains and defeated the nine Heirs with your abilities? This is such a joke.”

The man kept provoking Zhang Ruochen as he flew quickly.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t have a hot temper. He was well-grounded and naturally saw through the man’s true motive.

With his current injuries, he could just turn and leave, stopping the chase. However, he didn’t do that. Letting a Vampire Saint escape was like letting a tiger back into the mountain.

It would expose the fact that he was disguised as Gu Linfeng. Not only that, once the Immortal Vampires knew that Zhang Ruochen was in the Blood God Sect, they may immediately send a group of strong cultivators to attack. The sect might truly be destroyed then.

The news couldn’t be spread.

Zhang Ruochen’s eyes narrowed. Not caring if his injury would worsen, he used the Great Spatial Move. He passed through hundreds of miles in the sky in an instant, appearing before the black-clothed cultivator.

After becoming a Saint in Spiritual Power, Zhang Ruochen's control over space had strengthened. Even after crossing hundreds of miles, he still hadn't reached his limit.

Of course, forcefully using the Great Spatial Move caused pain in his organs. Many of his blood vessels snapped. He could only survive by using Spiritual Power.

The black-clothed man was shocked. He didn't expect that Zhang Ruochen would appear in front of him. He wanted to use a physical technique, but it was too late.

"Icy World and Ten Mountains." He put all the Spiritual Power in his body into the jade scepter.

Kaboom.

A towering snowy mountain appeared between him and Zhang Ruochen. Flying in the air, it produced a strong force that pressed down on Zhang Ruochen. Next, a second mountain appeared, and a third...

Ten snowy peaks appeared one after another, one layer atop another.

"Die!"

The man's eyes were eerily cold and his body was covered in white frost. He gripped the scepter with both hands. His shoulders to his fingers were all frozen into translucent ice.

With this one spell, very few lower Saints are able to fight against him.

Zhang Ruochen knew that using Spiritual Power against him would give him a disadvantage, so he took out the Abyss Ancient Sword. Gritting his teeth, he prepared to use martial arts to quickly end the fight and find somewhere to recover.

He activated all 3,000 runes in the sword and raised the sword. The mighty Destruction of the Thousand Patterns flooded out.

"Break!"

Spitting out blood, Zhang Ruochen hacked down with the Abyss Ancient Sword. The ten mountains shattered at once.

The black-clothed man let out a strangled cry. Dozens of beams of Sword Qi cut through him, turning his body into a sieve. His body was covered in fist-sized bloody holes.

He fell from the sky and crashed onto the ground thousands of meters below. He became a pile of ground meat.

Spiritual Power Saints were physically weak. Their vitalities couldn't be compared to a Martial Saint. He'd already died. All that remained was a blood-red saint heart. It flew up from the flesh, trying to escape.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed at the air and collected the saint heart. The surface had shreds of icy Qi. It tried to form a saintly image, but Zhang Ruochen was well-prepared. He slapped down, shattering the saintly image.

The black-clothed cultivator's saint soul was very powerful. Hidden inside the heart, it spat out, "Zhang Ruochen, the strong cultivators of my race are hurrying over. You will die."

Zhang Ruochen didn't waste time with him. Taking out the Ruyi Treasure Bottle, he put the heart inside. The heart and soul of a Spiritual Power Saint were both priceless treasures. Zhang Ruochen naturally couldn't bear to destroy them. He planned on taking it back to reward the people of the Sacred Sect.

"Oh? There really is a strong figure hurrying over..."

Zhang Ruochen released Spiritual Power to cover himself. Gradually, he faded and finally vanished.

A moment later, white fog rose up in a forest in the near distance. A beautiful girl in glamorous clothing walked out of the fog. She had all the right curves. Her sumptuous chest and snake-like waist were filled with tempting beauty.

Her feet were bare and her legs were straight and snowy-white; her face was the perfect shape and her eyes were spirited.

A girl like her was truly like a goddess. Even a saint monk would break abstinence for her. Even a butcher may put down his knife for her.

It's her.

Zhang Ruochen stared at her from the shadows. He had a shocked expression.

This was Empress Moran from the Blue Dragon Dynasty. How could she appear in the Blood God Sect?

Thinking closely, Zhang Ruochen's confusion cleared. Empress Moran had once said that she'd cultivated in the Blood God Sect for decades. She was a member too. Since the Blue Dragon Void World had been destroyed, it was normal that she would return to the sect.

But he wondered who her teacher was.

Empress Moran's delicate feet stepped on shreds of wind and came to the black-clothed man's corpse. Her thin brows furrowed slightly. "I still came too late," she murmured to herself. "Who killed him?"

She searched all around, but she couldn't find the criminal or any traces left behind. Thus, she used a physical technique and flew to the horizon as a plume of white smoke.

"Is she the black-clothed cultivator's helper?"

Zhang Ruochen pursued her with a suspicious expression.

After all, the remaining forces of the Blue Dragon Dynasty may have followed Empress Moran to the Blood God Sect. They were a mighty force and could affect the situation. Zhang Ruochen had to get things clear.

He followed Empress Moran into a very hidden valley in the Ancient Snow Mountain. Surprisingly, there was no snow there. Instead, it was filled with greenery and flowers. It was completely different from the outside world, like a hidden paradise.

Empress Moran flew down from the sky in a beautiful arc. She vanished in the valley's red peach forest. Petals floated in the air.

Three words were carved onto the snow-covered stone tablet outside the valley: Mo You Valley.

Chapter 1181 - Victory

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Mo You Valley was very narrow. It was only around fifteen feet wide. There were two lines of peach blossoms on the side, stretching into the valley.

Zhang Ruochen sneaked into the valley without making a sound. Just as he approached the peach blossoms, he sensed something unusual. He quickly stepped back.

“Illusion formation.” Zhang Ruochen was startled.

If his mind power hadn't reached the saint level, Zhang Ruochen wouldn't have sensed the inscription ripples of the illusion formation. The person who arranged this formation had way better mind power than him.

The peach blossoms weren't peach blossoms.

Everything he saw might be an illusion.

Zhang Ruochen's mind power had already reached level fifty, yet he couldn't see through the illusions in the valley. He couldn't help sweating.

Ke Ke.

Zhang Ruochen coughed, and he spit blood out.

Holy Qi of Discipline King Diyuan had penetrated the body of Zhang Ruochen. It roamed the veins of Zhang Ruochen's body, preventing his wounds from healing.

The wound got worse.

“I'll recover first before inspecting the valley.”

Zhang Ruochen's body vanished in the air. He went back to Secret Dragon Palace.

Empress Moran entered Mo You Valley, walking through the peach forest and streams, arriving right outside a vermilion attic. She bowed and said, “Grand master, I went there late. Saint Tongyi has been killed.”

A melodious female voice went out from the attic: “Elder Yuangui got into huge trouble, which is why he asked us to help. All we have to do is try. It doesn’t matter whether we can save his life or not.”

That female voice said again, “Did you see who killed Saint Tongyi?”

Empress Moran hesitated for a while, but eventually, she said, “I sensed a trace of familiar force in the place where Saint Tongyi was killed. The force was kind of similar to that of the descendant of time and space, Zhang Ruochen.”

“Descendant of Time and Space, Zhang Ruochen? How can it be him?”

The female voice turned weird.

Princess Moran said, “I’ve searched the information about that person after I went back to Blood God Sect. That guy seems to be connected to the deity.”

“Interesting.”

Gentle laughter was transmitted from the attic.

After getting back to Secret Dragon Palace, Zhang Ruochen immediately checked his wounds. He was indeed seriously injured. All his organs were rugged, and most of his veins were cut off.

Within the veins was a mighty wicked force flowing inside. The wicked force broke away Holy Qi.

That came from the saint power from Discipline King Diyuan, and it was difficult to resolve.

“Fortunately, I’ve sanctified one hundred and forty-three apertures, which greatly improved my body constitution. Otherwise, I wouldn’t have resisted the attack from Discipline King Diyuan.”

Zhang Ruochen performed ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture,’ mobilizing the Holy Qi in his lower abdomen and masculine Qi in his Xuan Embryo. He followed the pulse route of Xuan Embryo Ping Motian to refine the saint power of Discipline King Diyuan.

He needed to resolve that saint power first if he wanted to recover.

The cultivation of Discipline King Diyuan might have reached Heaven Pass Realm, so his saint power was very forceful. Normally, he needed to ask monks whose cultivation surpassed Heaven Pass Realm to resolve that.

However, ‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ was no ordinary techniques. Once someone had reached a certain level, he or she could resolve some of the wicked power.

‘Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture’ didn’t disappoint Zhang Ruochen. It only took him a large circle to resolve a small part of the saint power of Discipline King Diyuan.

Zhang Ruochen resolved the saint power of Discipline King Diyuan after three circles. He wasn’t healed yet, but he felt relieved. That discomfort was gone, and the pain was alleviated.

Zhang Ruochen supported his injured body with his powerful body and thick holy Qi.

Ghost King Bloodmoon went back to Secret Dragon Palace to bring the good news that he had killed Discipline King Diyuan.

Ghost King Bloodmoon was carrying a blood-red pill. It was translucent and glinting. There was a small human being inside the pill.

It was a soul pill.

It was made of the saint soul of Discipline King Diyuan.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you swallow the saint soul of a saint at Heaven Pass Realm, your level will be improved again.”

Ghost King Bloodmoon looked apathetic. She didn’t have any facial expressions on her face. She put back the soul pill.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The saintly source of Discipline King Diyuan is not that useful to you. Give that to me.”

“Don’t you forget. Your cultivation is not at my level yet. We’re equals. You don’t have the right to command me. If you want the saintly source, give me something in exchange,” Ghost King Bloodmoon said.

“Okay.”

Zhang Ruochen took out his Ruyi Treasure Bottle, swirled around the bottle with his fingers. A saintly heart flew out.

Ghost King Bloodmoon was very acute. She sensed the saint soul, and she rushed toward it, grabbing it with her fingers.

A blood-curdling scream came out of the saint heart. The saint soul of the black-robed monk was taken out.

And then, Ghost King Bloodmoon put her hands together, and two balls of ghost fire gushed out, refining the saint soul of the black-robed monk into a saint pill.

Ghost King Bloodmoon pinched the saint pill with her fingers and said, “How powerful the saint soul is. It’s at the same level as the one of Discipline King Diyuan.”

“It was a saint soul of a mind power saint, so certainly it’s strong. If you give it a body, it’ll swallow the soul of the original owner of the body and be reborn,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen’s mind power was strong enough to be resurrected even if his body was destroyed, as long as his saint soul and saint heart remained intact.

Certainly, his martial arts path would also be destroyed, after which he could only be a mind power saint.

Ghost King Bloodmoon took out a saint source and gave it to Zhang Ruochen, and then, she went into Scroll World to refine two more soul pills to improve her cultivation.

After a short while, Elder Yuanzhou, Shangguan Xianyan, Huang Yanchen, Ji Shui and Zhao Shiqi went back to Secret Dragon Palace.

Zhao Shiqi told Zhang Ruochen, “After the fight last night, we killed another twenty-one half saints. As of now, we’ve annihilated most of the immortal vampires in Blood God Sect. Besides, Saint Huang killed an immortal saint.”

“Nice job. Here’s a gift for you.”

Zhang Ruochen waved his hand, and a saint heart flew toward Zhao Shiqi.

Zhao Shiqi held the saint heart with both of his hands. He was so thrilled that he kneeled down on the ground. He said, “Thank you for your gift, deity. I’ll do anything for you, your highness.”

Zhao Shiqi’s mind power had already reached pinnacle level forty-nine, which meant he was one step away from sanctifying his mind power. As long as he could refine the saint heart, Zhao Shiqi was confident that he could become a mind power saint.

The gap between a saint and a half saint was gigantic, status-wise or power-wise.

How could Zhao Shiqi not be excited?

Elder Yuanzhou looked worried. He had been thinking all the time. He noticed the saint heart in the hands of Zhao Shiqi, and then, his eyes glinted.

“Saint Tongyi. That’s the heart of Saint Tongyi,” Elder Yuanzhou said.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t familiar with the seniors from Blood God Sect at all. He hadn’t heard of the name Saint Tongyi. He asked, “Who’s Saint Tongyi?”

“He’s a mind power saint in the clan of Elder Yuangui. He is a grandson of Elder Yuangui,” Elder Yuanzhou said.

Elder Yuangui not only was a saint elder from Blood God Sect, but also created a saint clan by himself. It was a power that belonged to Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “That person you met must be Elder Yuangui, isn’t he?”

“Ai!”

Elder Yuanzhou sighed, as he had a complicated mood.

Elder Yuanzhou and Elder Yuangui were brothers who followed the same teacher. They had been friends for hundreds of years, yet now, they were going to be mortal enemies. This was something he couldn't get over.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “What's the result?”

Elder Yuanzhou sighed and said, “I injured him, but I didn't kill him.”

“You didn't kill him? Or you didn't want to kill him?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

“What's the point of asking this question?” Elder Yuanzhou didn't want to talk about it. He said, “Rest assured, I'll definitely capture him and bring him back to Blood God Sect.”

This was something major. If someone like Elder Yuangui got away, it would have severe consequences. It would be destructive to Zhang Ruochen and Blood God Sect.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Elder Yuanzhou for a while, but he chose not to ask him any further questions about Elder Yuangui. He asked, “Qing Mo is being hunted by a saint elder from Elder Pavilion, and she's still not back yet. Does your token work or not?”

“I'll go there by myself. I'll bring her back safely.”

His emotions led to the escape of a major enemy. Elder Yuanzhou felt guilty toward the others, so he wanted to make up for his mistake.

“Wait a second.”

Zhang Ruochen recalled another issue. He asked, “Elder Yuanzhou, do you know that there is a valley called Mo You Valley in Ancient Snow Mountain?”

“Mo You Valley!”

The eyes of Elder Yuanzhou popped with terror. He said, “How do you know that place? That place is off-limits. You'd

better not trespass in that place. Don't even be curious about that place.”

“What kind of place is that?”

Zhang Ruochen became more curious, as someone like Elder Yuanzhou was intimidated by Mo You Valley.

“That's where the wife of the hierarch lives. Anyone who trespasses in that place will be killed,” Elder Yuanzhou said.

“Wife of the hierarch?” Zhang Ruochen was surprised.

Being the wife of a hierarch meant she used to be a saintess.

Being a saintess meant the wife of the hierarch was someone with great potential, and she came from the same era as the hierarch of the Blood God Sect and the four discipline kings.

All four discipline kings were at the level of Heaven Pass Realm, which meant the cultivation of the wife of the hierarch was more powerful.

Elder Yuanzhou continued, “In the past, the wife of the hierarch had better constitution and talents than our hierarch. She was supposed to be the hierarch, however, she voluntarily gave away the opportunity and decided to live in seclusion in Mo You Valley. After that, she's never stepped out of Mo You Valley.”

“However, that doesn't mean she didn't meddle with the issues in Blood God Sect,” Zhang Ruochen said.

Perhaps the wife of the hierarch was the real force to be reckoned with.

Chapter 1182 - Invitation From the Hierarch's Wife

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

If a talented woman had the chance to become the leader of all, why would she choose to give it up and live in a secluded valley?

There were two possibilities.

First, she really didn't wish to become the Hierarch. She didn't want to be weighed down by the miscellaneous tasks of the sect, and only wished to cultivate in peace. However, all signs showed that she wasn't this kind of woman.

The second possibility was that she had an unspeakable secret that couldn't be revealed. If she became the Hierarch, she would be under the spotlight. She would become a big figure that every cultivator in Kunlun's Field paid attention to. Her secret could be exposed easily.

What secret does the Hierarch's wife have?

Zhang Ruochen decided that he would explore Mo You Valley once his injuries healed.

Elder Yuan Zhou's expression was solemn. "What exactly did you discover? Is the madame an infiltrator from the Immortal Vampires too?"

Zhang Ruochen was silent for a moment. Then he recounted everything that he'd experienced.

Everyone gasped when he finished speaking.

"The true ruler of the Blue Dragon Void World is actually related to the Hierarch madame?" Shangguan Xianyan was

extremely shocked. “How mighty of a force did she develop in secret?”

Everyone fell silent. The Blood God Sect’s crisis seemed to be even worse than they’d thought.

Huang Yanchen was calm. “After tonight’s battle, they must sense that a hidden force is targeting them. They won’t just sit and wait. They will definitely act now.”

“Discipline King Diyuan has died,” Zhang Ruochen said. “Elder Yuan Gui is injured and the palace lord of the Disorder Heavenly Palace has escaped. In addition to Saint Hongyuan, Liao Teng, Saint Tongyi and Saint Yuluo that you killed, half of their force in the Blood God Sect has been taken out. With their current abilities, they won’t be able to cause much damage even if they tried.”

Elder Yuan Zhou’s eyes were cold. “Now is the time for us to make the fatal hit. We must use a powerful method to kill them all.”

“The infiltrators on the list aren’t stupid,” Zhang Ruochen said. “They definitely sensed danger and are hiding now. How can they wait for us to kill them?”

Elder Yuan Zhou huffed coldly. “You underestimate the Blood God Sect. We are an ancient sect. They aren’t able to escape or hide so easily.”

It seems that the Blood God Sect still has some secrets they haven’t revealed. Thinking of this, Zhang Ruochen said, “Since we’ve already reached this step, we can only continue fighting.”

Not too long after Elder Yuan Zhou left, two women in red came to the Hidden Dragon Palace.

They were tall and slender with cold auras. Their looks were one-in-a-thousand too. They seemed to be in their twenties, but their cultivations were shockingly high. They were already in the Saint Realm.

“Zhen Yin, fifth disciple of the Hierarch Madame, greets the Deity.”

“Fan Yin, sixth disciple of the Hierarch Madame, greets the Deity.”

Since two Saints had come, Zhang Ruochen naturally couldn't block them outside the door. He had to welcome them in.

Cough, cough.

Zhang Ruochen sat in his chair, holding a white silk handkerchief in his hands. He covered his mouth and coughed, pretending to be weak.

“Senior Sisters, for what reason have you come to the humble Hidden Dragon Palace?”

After becoming the Deity, Zhang Ruochen was like the Blood God Sect Hierarch's disciple too. It was reasonable for him to call the madame's disciples “senior sister.”

Zhen Yin had a red dot between her brows. She studied Zhang Ruochen with her shining eyes. “Tonight, countless Saint-level battles erupted in the Blood God Sect. The Hierarch Madame is worried about your safety, so she sent us to protect you.”

It seems that I left behind my aura when I killed Saint Tongyi, Zhang Ruochen thought. That Hierarch Madame is suspecting me already. She says she's here to protect me, but it's actually to test me.

Fan Yin's long black hair hung down to her bottom. She had a demonic aura about her. “The Deity seems to be hurt very badly.”

Cough, cough.

Zhang Ruochen coughed again, this time coughing out blood that dyed his white handkerchief red. “Two days ago,” he said weakly. “I suffered an assassination attempt from an Immortal Vampire Saint. I am badly hurt. Even though I've taken a Withered Pill, I am still recovering very slowly. I still can't fight with others.”

Zhang Ruochen was indeed heavily hurt, but it wasn't to the point of not being able to fight with others. What he'd just said was half truth, half lie.

Right now, neither Zhang Ruochen nor the Blood God Sect dared to end things with the Hierarch Madame.

First, no one knew just how advanced her cultivation was. Second, just how powerful was her force?

Before knowing these two points, they would be very passive once they entered a war.

Of course, she didn't know just who was cleaning out the infiltrators either. She was also passive and didn't dare to act impulsively.

Whoosh.

A communication rune flew into Fan Yin's hands. She opened it, looked at the words, and then looked up at Zhang Ruochen.

"The madame said that you have unparalleled talent. You are the hope of the Blood God Sect. Nothing can happen to you. She wishes for us to invite you for a short stay in the Mo You Valley."

"Short stay?" Zhang Ruochen said, expression unchanging. "I am grateful, but I'm used to living in the Hidden Dragon Valley. I don't dare disturb the madame's peace."

Mo You Valley was the madame's territory. Once Zhang Ruochen lived there, it would be impossible to come back out. He may very well die in there.

"The madame has already ordered that if we cannot lead you back, we will be punished," Fan Yin said.

Right now, the madame at most suspected that Zhang Ruochen was the one who killed Saint Tongyi. She only suspected but wasn't sure that Gu Linfeng was Zhang Ruochen.

If Zhang Ruochen continued to reject her, it would seem unnatural. He may be killed fiercely by the Hierarch Madame.

Who in the Blood God Sect could stop her, other than the Taishang Elder and Hierarch?

Zhang Ruochen's thoughts spun in an instant. Finally, he decided to take the rest. Smiling, he said, "Sure! I should go

greet the madame once too. Senior Sisters, please lead me there!”

He pushed himself up but fell back down as soon as he stood up. He sighed. “I’m too weak and can’t even stand up.”

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin exchanged glances. With two fragrant whiffs, they went to either side of Zhang Ruochen. They helped him up and then flew out of the Hidden Dragon Palace as two beams of light.

Huang Yanchen walked out of the invisibility formation. Standing in the pavilion, she looked toward the entrance and scoffed. “Such a good actor.”

Zhao Shiqi stood humbly behind Huang Yanchen. “Mo You Valley is a lion’s den. What should we do now? Should we notify Elder Yuan Zhou immediately to save the Deity?”

Huang Yanchen’s eyes were deep. “Elder Yuan Zhou can’t deal with that wife of the Hierarch. Don’t worry! Since Zhang Ruochen dares to go, he must be confident that he can escape. I’m just afraid that he’ll sink into the softness and not want to leave.”

Zhen Yin, Fan Yin, and Empress Moran were all top beauties and Saints. Their auras couldn’t be compared to average beautiful women.

At the moment, Zhen Yin and Fan Yin supported Zhang Ruochen on either side. The three touched each other. Zhang Ruochen occasionally touched their waists too.

Anyone else would be burning from lust to be so close to two Saint beauties. However, Zhang Ruochen was clear that they were dangerous, so he kept alert.

However, his hands reached out voluntarily and squeezed Zhen Yin and Fan Yin’s thighs. They were very soft, smooth, bouncy and warm. Zhen Yin and Fan Yin shuddered as if shocked by electricity. They glared at Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

They were two high and mighty Saints but were touched and squeezed so carelessly. They were furious.

Zhang Ruochen acted fearless and just smiled at them.

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin had naturally checked Gu Linfeng's information before. They knew that he was lustful, but they didn't think that he would be so daring as to make moves on them.

Seeing that they suppressed their anger and didn't unleash it, Zhang Ruochen was surer that the madame only suspected him.

In that case, what was there to be afraid of?

Then he could act fearlessly as Gu Linfeng for once! He believed that the Madame would be interested in a genius that she could control.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and looked at Zhen Yin. Smiling, he said, "Senior Sister Zhen Yin is as beautiful as the nine goddesses. You can be the number one beauty of the Blood God Sect."

Zhen Yin ignored him. Disdain flashed past her eyes. This man was about to die soon and he still dared to flirt with her?

"Senior Sister Zhen Yin," Zhang Ruochen continued. "Do you want to become the future Hierarch Madame?"

Hearing this, Zhen Yin's eyes grew even colder. She thought that Gu Linfeng was just a delusional idiot. Did he really think that he could take the Hierarch's position?

Since Zhen Yin was silent, and Zhang Ruochen turned toward Fan Yin. "Senior Sister Fan Yin," he said, smiling. "Would you like to become the future Hierarch Madame?"

Fan Yin had the same feeling as Zhen Yin. She thought that Gu Linfeng was too full of himself. Did he really think that all girls would go for him just because he was the Deity?

Gu Linfeng's talent could be compared to Time and Space Descendant Zhang Ruochen, but he was miles away in other aspects.

He could be treated in the same way as treating a fool. He could be taken down in a few moves.

Chapter 1183 - Seven Emotions Fragrance

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Zhang Ruochen came to Mo You Valley again, helped by Zhen Yin and Fan Yin.

There were peach trees planted everywhere in the valley. Some of the peach blossoms were beautiful and shined like pink crystals, emanating a captivating fragrance.

Zhang Ruochen only took one breath, and the masculine Qi inside his body started to move restlessly as if there was a fire burning in his abdomen.

“Something’s wrong with the flower fragrance.”

To keep Zhen Yin and Fan Yin from being suspicious, Zhang Ruochen was still breathing regularly, inhaling the air and covering the fragrance with Holy Qi, trying to refine it.

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin were standing on the sides of Zhang Ruochen. Each of them was holding one arm of Zhang Ruochen. He could clearly feel that Zhang Ruochen was getting heated up, and he was breathing much faster.

They couldn’t help laughing inside. They were sure that Gu Linfeng was affected by the flowers, which meant it would be rather easy for them to deal with him.

The flower fragrance in the peach forest wasn’t regular medicine. Instead, it was ‘Seven Emotions Fragrance.’

The emotions and desires of monks who smelled the fragrance would be infinitely magnified, after which they would lose

their mind and the ability to think. And then, they would expose all their secrets.

Even most of the saints couldn't refine the medicinal power of the Seven Emotions Fragrance.

“What a loser. Our madam made him reveal his true color with just a little trick.”

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin were thinking that way. They looked down upon Zhang Ruochen. Even though he had great talents and power, he would become powerless soon.

They led Zhang Ruochen to an attic and asked him to rest there, and then, they both left.

It was still dark outside.

The lampstand had a holy stone inlaid in it, which gave out white light. Traces of holy Qi emanated from the holy stone.

It was indeed very difficult to refine Seven Emotions Fragrance, and even ‘Nine-sky Emperor Ming Scripture’ could only suppress it temporarily. It could transport the fragrance out of the body in a short period of time.

...

Deep in Mo You Valley was a palace where holy Qi permeated.

There were dozens of monks in the palace. Aside from the wife of hierarch Zhen Yin, Fan Yin, there were great beings who survived from Blue Dragon Dynasty, including Blue Dragon Emperor whose cultivation had reached Heaven Pass Realm. They all stood there respectfully without any majesty of an emperor.

The wife of hierarch stood on a stone table wearing a red cape which was ten feet long.

She didn't look old at all. Instead, she looked exquisite and elegant. She had smooth skin and looked like she was only in her late twenties. There was a knot in her hair, and a phoenix hairpin that was made of crystal was stuck within it.

Although she was an exquisite woman, she had the force of a queen.

The wife of the hierarch pointed at the space with her long finger.

Hua.

A ripple spread, forming a circular mirror that was ten feet long.

A room and a human being showed up in the mirror.

The human being became clearer and clearer, and it was Zhang Ruochen who was sitting in the chair.

Zhen Yin and Fan Yin stood behind the wife of the hierarch. They stared at the mirror and observed what Zhang Ruochen was doing.

The voice of Zhen Yin sounded gentle. She said, “He must’ve realized that something’s wrong, and he’s trying to refine the Seven Emotions Fragrance. He’s got something, not a total moron.”

Fan Yin sneered and said, “Even the saints at Heaven Pass Realm can’t refine Seven Emotions Fragrance after they inhale it. As for him, I think it’ll be impressive for him to persist for fifteen minutes.”

They observed Gu Linfeng for a while, and they saw that he looked worse and worse. His eyes started to lose their light, and his facial expressions looked conflicted, as if he wanted to cry and laugh at the same time. These were signs that the Seven Emotions Fragrance had kicked in.

“What do you know?”

The voice of the wife of the hierarch sounded very apathetic, which terrified Fan Yin. Her body kept shaking, and she didn’t dare say anything further.

And then, the wife of the hierarch said, “I’ve already figured out what the situation will be like in a hundred years after the battle in Blue Dragon Void World. The top-tier talents will become the pillars of the world in the future.”

“Either Gu Linfeng or Zhang Ruochen will become top-tier talents. If we can admit him, it’s going to be more valuable than controlling a Blood God Sect.”

“I understand!” Fan Yin said carefully.

The wife of the hierarch stared at Zhang Ruochen in the mirror. She said, “It’s almost time now. Ask Mo Yin to try him.”

Zhang Ruochen was still relatively conscious. However, the masculine Qi in his body surged, which was very difficult to control, which gave him a headache.

There was a melodious flute sound coming out of the room.

Suddenly, the light in the room became dreamy. Twelve beautiful girls showed up in front of Zhang Ruochen.

None of them were wearing much, showing their white skin, perky breasts, and thin waists. Each of them was curvy and seductive.

Twelve sexy girls were dancing at the same time. They had flexible bodies and emanated fragrance. They couldn’t be more tempting.

Zhang Ruochen looked up and stared at them. He smiled wickedly, and then, he walked toward them.

A white-clothed girl walked forward from behind the twelve sexy girls.

She looked spotless. She was holding a jade flute, playing a piece that was easy on the ears. She couldn’t be more beautiful, and she was innocent compared to the other twelve beautiful girls.

“Empress Moran.” Zhang Ruochen recognized her.

Certainly, Zhang Ruochen didn’t know that Empress Moran was the fourth disciple of the wife of the hierarch, Mo Yin.

Empress Moran had an unrivalled appearance, which surpassed that of Fan Yin and Zhen Yin. No matter how strong-willed a man was, it was difficult to resist.

Zhang Ruochen ignored the twelve sexy girls and rushed toward Empress Moran.

The eyes of Empress Moran were as beautiful as stars. She smiled enchantingly seeing Zhang Ruochen throwing himself at her.

“What are you doing, your highness?”

Empress Moran stopped playing the flute, and her body was flexible like a snake, slipping through the arms of Zhang Ruochen. She smiled seductively.

Zhang Ruochen turned around again, guffawed and said, “What am I doing? What do you think I am doing?”

Zhang Ruochen threw himself toward Empress Moran again.

This time, Empress Moran didn't try to dodge him. She was standing still with her well-rounded breasts, allowing Zhang Ruochen to hold her.

Her breasts pressed against Zhang Ruochen's chest.

“Damn it! Your highness, how can you be like this?”

Empress Moran looked up, and she stared at Zhang Ruochen with her glinting eyes.

Their faces were close to each other.

Just as Empress Moran spoke, Zhang Ruochen could feel the humidity stroking his face, which made him numb.

Even Zhang Ruochen's mind power was slightly bent in front of a seductive and wicked woman like that.

Zhang Ruochen stroked the back of Empress Moran all the way to her butt. He squeezed her butt and smiled, “Why do you think I'm doing this? Let me strip you first, then we'll talk.”

Before Empress Moran could resist, Zhang Ruochen tore a large part of her dress off. Princess Moran showed her long legs.

Inside the palace, Blue Dragon Emperor was infuriated. His blue veins popped, and he looked ferocious.

“Damn it! Grand master, I’ll go kill him.”

Blue Dragon Emperor saw Zhang Ruochen embrace Empress Moran and squeeze her all he wanted. He saw Zhang Ruochen stripping Empress Moran. He clenched his teeth, and there were fire gushing out of his head.

“Stand there.”

The wife of the hierarch yelled, “Wait for another moment. I believe Mo Yin will figure out who he really is very soon.”

Blue Dragon Emperor stopped, as he didn’t dare go against the will of the wife of the hierarch.

Blue Dragon Emperor was the eldest disciple of the wife of the hierarch. He knew how powerful and ruthless she was.

Anyone who dared go against her would end up miserable.

Zhang Ruochen went further. He held Empress Moran and threw her on the bed.

“Wait.”

Empress Moran lay on the bed, panting. She pressed against the palm of Zhang Ruochen and said, “Who are you, your highness? Why do I feel that you look like that descendant of time and space?”

“What descendant of time and space? I only have you in my eyes? I don’t care about others.”

Zhang Ruochen pushed away the hands of Princess Moran and tore off the last layer of clothes, and then, he froze.

The monks in the palace couldn’t see the body of Princess Moran, and they all missed a heartbeat seeing Zhang Ruochen spin the last piece of white cloth in his hands.

And then, they couldn’t help looking toward Blue Dragon Emperor.

Blue Dragon Emperor couldn’t be more furious. He felt that he was about to explode. If it weren’t for the wife of the hierarch, he would’ve rushed forward and torn Zhang Ruochen apart.

In the mirror, Gu Linfeng froze.

Empress Moran saw Gu Linfeng stop. She was surprised.

Peng!

Zhang Ruochen fell on the ground, and his five-sense organs were all bleeding, looking miserable.

Empress Moran put on her clothes again and walked to Zhang Ruochen, checking whether he was okay or not. She thought, He was severely injured, and he was hit by Seven Emotions Fragrance. He fainted. Anyway, I've checked his true identity, and I've finished the task of grand master. However, my virgin body was seen and touched! Should I hold him responsible?

Chapter 1184 - Bitch

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After inhaling the Seven Emotions Fragrance, even a Saint would lose their mind and not be able to hide any secrets.

Thus, Empress Moran and the cultivators of Mo You Valley trusted Gu Linfeng. They no longer suspected that he was Zhang Ruochen.

“Gu Linfeng and Zhang Ruochen may have had some interactions,” Zhen Yin said. “But they can’t be the same person. They have completely different personalities.”

“I will go kill him now,” the Blue Dragon Emperor intoned.

“Who allows you to do so?” The Hierarch Madame turned around. Her eyes were as sharp as daggers.

The Blue Dragon Emperor didn’t dare to meet her eyes and immediately lowered his head.

“Gu Linfeng has only gone through the first Pre-Saint Trial and can already kill someone like Saint Hongyuan. He is a definite talent. Since he is lustful, then he has a weakness. Those who have weaknesses are those who can be controlled.”

“Master,” Zhen Yin said. “Do you want Gu Linfeng to follow you?”

The Hierarch Madame nodded. “Not only that. I also want him to become the Hierarch. Of course, before that, we must choose someone to become his wife to control him. This way, no matter how advanced Gu Linfeng’s cultivation becomes, he will only be my chess piece, a tool. Zhen Yin, you go!”

“I...” Zhen Yin said.

“What, you don’t have the confidence?” the madame asked.

“Or are you unwilling?”

“I will try!”

Zhen Yin didn’t dare go against the Hierarch Madame, so she quickly agreed. If she could control Gu Linfeng and become the hidden controller of the Blood God Sect, then she would naturally receive benefits that others couldn’t.

Thinking of this, Zhen Yin’s lips curled up into a beautiful smile.

The Blue Dragon Emperor also let out a relieved breath. Thankfully, the Hierarch Madame hadn’t made Empress Moran continue to seduce Zhang Ruochen. Otherwise, he would’ve gone crazy.

...

Zhang Ruochen naturally hadn’t really lost consciousness. It was completely an act.

Empress Moran was indeed a beautiful fairy. She was a rare specimen and a powerful Saint. Any man would be unable to stop after ripping her clothes off.

However, Zhang Ruochen still stopped.

That feeling was more painful than going crazy. The Masculine Yang Qi within him was almost burning him.

Of course, he didn’t regret this.

Empress Moran was very calculative with evil methods. If Zhang Ruochen really slept with her, he would definitely have a bad seed planted in him. She might be even more troublesome than Han Qiu.

Plus, she was Blue Dragon Emperor’s woman. Zhang Ruochen wasn’t interested in someone else’s old shoe.

A while later, footsteps sounded.

Zhen Yin walked in and came to Zhang Ruochen’s side. She took out a white pill and fed it into his mouth.

The pill transformed into shreds of fresh air. They flooded into Zhang Ruochen's stomach, clearing out the Seven Emotions Fragrance.

"They're making me serve you. You really got it easy."

Zhen Yin pursed her lips. Finally, she picked Zhang Ruochen up and came to the bed. She quickly took off all his clothes.

Rustles sounded immediately after.

Unexpectedly, Zhen Yin also took off her clothes, revealing her snow-white and curvy figure. She came to Zhang Ruochen's side and lay down.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes flew open and he shot up.

Zhen Yin was shocked too. She didn't expect for Gu Linfeng to wake up so quickly.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at her. Putting on an angry expression, he demanded. "What are you doing?"

Zhen Yin was extremely speechless. She hadn't done anything and Zhang Ruochen had already woken up. Was she supposed to lie to him that they'd done something?

Gu Linfeng was an old player. He wouldn't be tricked. Zhen Yin froze, not knowing what to do.

Zhang Ruochen snickered inwardly, but he had an expression of realization. "Earlier when I asked if you want to be the Hierarch's wife, you seemed like you didn't want to. How much time has passed? And you actually want to take advantage of how I was unconscious to rape me? I must say, you really are a lowly woman."

Zhen Yin shook with anger and she ground her white teeth, but she couldn't say anything. The Hierarch Madame placed importance on Gu Linfeng and wanted to help him become the next Hierarch. No matter how furious Zhen Yin was, she must endure it and take it with a smile.

Pushing down her anger, she smiled fawningly. "You are so handsome and charismatic," she said softly. "You are like a dragon amongst people. Who doesn't wish to be your wife?"

The next moment, Zhang Ruochen sent her flying with a slap. Zhen Yin didn't expect that he would actually hit her, let alone hit so forcefully.

With a thud, her naked body flew out, breaking the window and landing outside the building.

Zhang Ruochen walked out and leaned against the railing to look down.

Zhen Yin was still a Saint. Though in a pathetic state, she still stood up and created a red robe for herself.

She was furious. Her long hair flew up and icy Qi flooded out like sharp needles. "Are you looking for death?"

Zhang Ruochen had a look of disdain. "I am the Deity of the Blood God Sect, the future Hierarch. Who are you to threaten me?"

Zhen Yin clenched her fists and gritted her teeth in anger. Gu Linfeng was badly hurt right now. She was confident that she could kill him.

However, to the Madame, Gu Linfeng was much more valuable than she was. She wanted to help Gu Linfeng become the Hierarch too. If Zhen Yin offended him now, wouldn't he take revenge in the future?

Zhen Yin felt heavy regret. If she'd known, she would've controlled herself. What should she do now?

Zhang Ruochen acted very arrogant, saying, "You should look at yourself. You want to become my wife with just your looks? You barely qualify to become a servant."

Zhen Yin lowered her head, but her eyes were practically shooting flames.

What had just happened shocked all the cultivators in Mo You Valley. However, they stayed in the illusion formation and didn't show themselves.

Seeing Gu Linfeng berate Zhen Yin, everyone exchanged glances. Some were gleeful while others were curious as to what had happened.

With Zhen Yin's looks and cultivation, countless cultivators in Kunlun's Field viewed her as one of the nine goddesses. They could only look from afar. How come she couldn't even take down Gu Linfeng?

"Gu Linfeng is one of the top talents. He's lustful, but he isn't stupid. He must know that he's being calculated, so he took his anger out on Saint Zhen Yin."

"Everyone knows that Gu Linfeng is crazily arrogant. He doesn't respect anyone. The typical person can't handle him."

...

Zhen Yin clenched her jaw, lips trembling. "Deity...you are correct. Zhen Yin...doesn't qualify to become your wife."

Zhang Ruochen coughed. Jutting out his chin, he said, "I remember that I saw a beautiful figure just before I fell unconscious. She had mesmerizing curves and snowy white skin, like a goddess. Do you know who she was?"

The Blue Dragon Emperor was standing in the shadows. Hearing this, he freaked out. This bastard Gu Linfeng was still thinking about his empress.

The Hierarch Madame smiled eerily. Glancing at Empress Moran, she said, "Mo Yin, you are the most beautiful of the disciples. You also are the most tactful. Seems like only you can take Gu Linfeng down. If you can make Gu Linfeng submit to you and only listen to you, then you can use any of the Blood God Sect's resources that you wish."

Empress Moran's eyes flashed with mesmerizing light. "As long as Gu Linfeng is a man, he won't be able to resist me."

The Blue Dragon Emperor walked out. He stopped Empress Moran, not wanting her to leave. Anyone could see that Gu Linfeng was a hungry man who just wanted to swallow Empress Moran. If she went, it would be like a lamb going to a tiger.

"Move," Empress Moran huffed.

"Who does Gu Linfeng think he is?" the Blue Dragon Emperor asked. "I can kill him ten times with a finger. Why

must you insult yourself by serving him?”

“I don’t think it’s an insult.” Empress Moran’s long lashes trembled as she chuckled. “Merely Gu Linfeng’s courage is ten or 100 times stronger than you. It’s only a matter of time before his cultivation surpasses you too. Can’t I choose a stronger man?”

The Blue Dragon Emperor clenched his teeth, hands trembling. He wished he could slap Empress Moran. But when she walked past him, his hand stopped in mid-air. He couldn’t do it.

Empress Moran wore a pure white dress and walked on the peach blossom petals with her bare feet. Her figure was curvy and had an elegant aura. She was moving, like a goddess from heaven.

Zhang Ruochen gaped when he saw her. He was acting but also truly shocked by her beauty.

She was a beauty that overturned the world. When she was foxy, she was a demoness that could steal souls. When she was quiet, she was like a fairy, so pure that people couldn’t bear to touch her.

“Mo Yin greets the Deity.”

Empress Moran bowed to Zhang Ruochen. Her smile was pure and flawless. It was very pleasant to look at.

“Oh, Mo Yin. I am indeed infatuated by you.”

Zhang Ruochen walked over and grabbed her slender waist with a hand. He carried her up the building.

Seeing this, the Blue Dragon Emperor’s eyes turned bloodshot. He was so angry that he was about to explode.

Chapter 1185 - Situation

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Nothing happened between Zhang Ruochen and Empress Moran. Instead, he kept practicing, claiming that he was injured.

The sunlight of a new day shone upon Blood God Sect.

A shocking piece of news was spread to all the major powers in the state of Tiantai, even to the entire Central Region.

“One of the four discipline kings from Blood God Sect, Discipline Diyuan, was killed by a ghost king.”

“Saint Tongyi and Saint Yuluo were both annihilated by a mysterious great being. A large group of half saints were assassinated.”

...

After such a mishap happened to Blood God Sect, all the sects near Blood God Sect were terrified.

In the afternoon, Elder Pavilion sent a message to the world: “The saints and half saints who were killed last night were all spies from the immortal vampire race. One of the six saint elders, Elder Yuangui and the palace leader of Disorder Heavenly Palace, Yu Huacheng, are both seniors from the immortal vampire race, and they’ve escaped.”

Meanwhile, the Elder Pavilion also published a list, sending it to all the subsidiaries and appendages of Blood God Sect.

After a while, Blood God Sect sent a second order: “From now on, Blood God Sect will be closed for three months, and we will turn on the Blood God Ancient Formation. Anyone who dares approach the territory of Blood God Sect will be killed.”

The turmoil in Blood God Sect had a huge influence.

Chaos took place in the subsidiaries and appendages of Blood God Sect, and the major powers in the state of Tiantai were also affected.

The chaos wasn't caused by the immortal vampires. Instead, it was because of the seniors in Blood God Sect. Besides, most of the saints and half saints from the immortal vampire race who hid in Blood God Sect were killed, so Blood God Sect didn't suffer a huge loss.

In the Central Emperor City.

After the empress left, the spirit Qi of sky and land in the city declined sharply, which negatively influenced this city.

However, the First Central Empire had a strong foundation and a perfect system. After the empress left, no huge turmoil took place in the emperor city. The imperial government, the emperor city and all the officials were all doing their jobs without being disturbed.

However, the center of the emperor city changed from the Ziwei Palace of the empress to Lianzhu Mansion of the minister Wang Shiqi.

Wang Shiqi was the oldest disciple of Emperor Wen.

After Emperor Wen secluded himself, Wang Shiqi was the leader of the Way of Confucius.

Even the saints from the Way of Confucius needed to call Wang Shiqi 'Saint Master' respectfully.

Wang Shiqi was a minister, the head of all officials.

The only person who could outclass him was the empress. Even the secretaries of the Ministry of War, Ministry of Divinity and Ministry of Heavenly Criminal were below him.

Now, Wang Shiqi was in charge of the First Central Empire, and he managed the human resources and materials in the empire to ward off the enemies.

Wang Shiqi's Lianzhu Mansion was made of nine different mansions, and there were nine ancient saintly formations,

standing in a straight line.

At this moment, all the top-tier people gathered in the ninth mansion, standing around a chessboard.

Other than Wang Shiqi, all the four sect masters of Way of Confucius were there, and there were dozens of great Confucius and saintly Confucius masters. Everyone had a solid background.

Each and every one of them was world-renowned.

Saint Lady was wearing a white cape, dressed like a man. She looked simple and elegant, with her bright eyes and teeth. She stood out among all the old Confucian scholars.

Saint Lady gazed at the chessboard that was at the center of the palace, and mind power gushed out of his eyes.

Boom!

The chessboard that was originally nine feet long became larger and larger, extending in all directions. Eventually, it became an enormous world like a scroll of the sky and land.

The stronger a monk's mind power was, the larger and more detailed the world seemed to him. Every mountain, every river and everyone showed up in his eyes.

Monks with different cultivations would see different worlds.

This was the legendary Heaven and Earth Chessboard!

The legend of Heaven and Earth Chessboard was widespread in Kunlun's Field, however, only few monks could actually see it.

The north of the chessboard stood for the northern city of the first Central Empire, and there was bloodshed and hostility.

Billions of chess pieces lined up together on the chessboard. Some of the chess pieces were gleaming like stars, and they had explosive energy ripples.

Those chess pieces stood for saints.

Some chess pieces, on the other hand, were barely glinting, and they were crowded.

They stood for ordinary human beings.

Saint Lady frowned and said, “The battle in the north is getting worse. It’s only been six days, yet eighty-four checkpoints were conquered. The immortal vampires are moving forward faster and faster, and it’ll only take them a short time to conquer the sixth line of defense. If that happens, Night North Mansion will be savaged by the immortal vampires.”

The north of the chessboard was covered by bloody Qi, and it was being devoured.

The immortal vampires were breaking in full fury, and they could sense the aggressiveness from the chessboard. Even the armies from the first Central Empire and the allied forces from all the major families couldn’t resist them.

The battle in the north was tragic, and tens of thousands of human beings became food for immortal vampires.

If the north was completely conquered, billions of people living in the north would be rendered defenseless and be slaughtered by the immortal vampires.

All the top-tier beings from the Way of Confucius looked solemn. They all held their breath and couldn’t be more worried.

“If our empress hadn’t left, those immortal vampires wouldn’t have dared to do something like this. Those blood emperors must have fled a long time ago,” a saint scholar said.

The master of Picture Sect, Chu Siyuan, was very aggressive and said, “What’s the point of saying this? I think we should all dash there and fight the immortal vampires to death. The power of the Way of Confucius and the army from the imperial government are enough to fight the immortal vampires.”

Saint Lady said, “There might be lots of immortal vampire spies within the Way of Confucius. If they decide to assassinate us, half of us might be killed before the battle can begin.”

Chu Siyuan calmed himself as he knew that what Saint Lady said was true.

Immortal vampires had been planning for eight hundred years, and they had spies in all the major powers. If they decided to assassinate someone, that person wouldn't stand a chance to live.

The sect master of zither sect, Mr. Mei said, "If we all head to the north, who will make sure that the central region is stable? If the central region is lost, the entire human race will also lose its foundation. The world will be in chaos. We need to be extra careful about this, and it needs a long discussion."

An old Confucius scholar said, "Should we utilize Saint Book Ruzu?"

Saint Lady didn't feel pressure at all standing among a group of hundreds-of-years-old Confucius scholars. She said, "Saint Book Ruzu is indeed almighty. If we can utilize it, we can suppress the immortal vampire emperors, but if the spies from the immortal vampire race obtain Saint Book Ruzu, it'll be a disaster for all human beings."

She then glanced around the Confucius saints and said with a smile, "There might be immortal spies among us."

Everyone found it hard to deal with. If they couldn't find the immortal vampire spies and get rid of them, they couldn't do anything.

The top-tier people from Way of Confucius walked out of the ninth mansion and kept discussing how to deal with the current difficult situation.

Chu Siyuan was very stubborn. He insisted on leading all the students from Way of Confucius to the north and fighting the immortal vampires to the death.

"I'd rather die than be humiliated. If everyone is extra cautious like you, how will we accomplish something great?" Chu Siyuan said.

All the saint Confucius scholars knew Chu Siyuan. They stopped arguing with him as they knew that it was no use to argue with him.

Minister Wang Shiqi said, “It’s not that we don’t want to fight. We want to minimize our potential loss. We can’t ruin the entire war because of impulse. We don’t just represent ourselves, but the entire First Central Empire. If we make one mistake, millions will die.”

Why are we being so paranoid? We might as well just kill a couple of immortal vampire saints. Chu Siyuan really wanted to say this, but he suppressed the urge as he didn’t want to be scolded by those people.

Everyone from the Way of Confucius went into silence and kept thinking about strategies.

At this moment, a soldier wearing white armor walked into and kneeled down with one knee. He said, “Saint Lady, your grace. Two monks were outside Lianzhu Mansion, and they said that one of your friends brought you an incredible gift.”

Chu Siyuan sneered and said, “An incredible gift? How incredible it can be? I think it’s just some spoiled kid who wants to get close to Mr. Nalan and brought some cute presents.”

“This is a crucial moment for our empire, yet those youngsters are still wasting their energy on this kind of thing. They’re just so spoiled.”

“We’re talking about matters of life and death. We don’t need to care about them.”

...

Saint Lady was a well-renowned talent who was also one of the Nine Heavenly Maidens. She had countless pursers.

All the Confucius scholars viewed Saint lady as the leader of the new generations of the Way of Confucius. To them, few people were on ‘Five Heros List.’

As for the others, they were nothing but flies. All they needed to do was to shoo them off.

Saint Lady pinched her fingers, and she came to a conclusion very quickly. She smiled and made a decision which stunned all the elders around her.

“Sorry, I have to meet those two friends of mine.”

Saint Lady made a slight bow and walked out.

“What’s happening? Whose son is it that won our Nalan’s heart?” Chu Siyuan was dazed as he found it unbelievable.

Chapter 1186 - Saint Lady's Worries

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Saint Lady could write the Half-Saint Rank and Outer Rank. She was naturally clear about Sikong One and Sikong Two's identities and information, as well as their relationship with Zhang Ruochen.

The two monks took out the copy of the Vampire Secrets and gave it to the Saint Lady.

This was definitely a surprise. Even with her cultivation, it was still hard for her to stay calm. She quickly took it and started flipping through.

She'd never seen the Vampire Secrets before, but with her vast knowledge, she was able to know that it was real.

The legendary Vampire Secrets was a weapon that could defeat the Immortal Vampires. Zhang Ruochen had people bring it to her at this critical moment. It was like an emergency cure.

The Saint Lady slowly closed the copy. Her heart still racing, she asked, "Did... Did he have anything else to say to me?"

Sikong Two was very honest. "No," he said. "Senior Uncle is doing everything he can to defeat the Vampire infiltrators in the Blood God Sect."

Cough.

Halfway through, Sikong One cleared his throat, so Sikong Two couldn't continue.

Saint Lady looked disappointed, but then she grew thoughtful again and nodded. Clearly, she already knew about the Blood God Sect's situation. She was a bit worried about Zhang Ruochen's safety.

The Blood God Sect was a no-man's land now with many hidden dangers. Even if she went, she wasn't confident in handling matters either. Could Zhang Ruochen do it?

After settling Sikong One and Two, she went into the Lianzhu Mansion with the Vampire Secrets.

The various Saints of the Confucius Way all looked over when she returned.

"What's wrong?" she asked, smiling.

Mr. Mei, sect leader of the Qin Sect, combed his whiskers. "We are only curious as to which family's talent is lucky enough to attract your attention."

"I'm more curious about what that guy gifted you to make you smile so brilliantly," Chu Siyuan of the Art Sect said.

"A big gift, of course." Holding the Vampire Secrets, Saint Lady waved her arm slightly.

Whoosh—

A large patch of words flew off of the pages. They filled the sky like stars, flying through the building.

Everyone present was sensitive to words. Even though the words were disorganized, the people could still sense that they were extraordinary. They quickly formed a complete passage in their minds.

Warden Wang Shiqi's Spiritual Power was the highest. He was the first to organize the words and memorize them all. Slightly shocked, he said, "This...is the legendary...Vampire Secrets..."

Following him, the four sect leaders of the Confucius Way and the other Saints organized the words in their minds too. Seeing the content, they all exchanged glances incredulously.

Not only did the book tell them ways to see through a Vampire's disguise, it also had some secret spells to defeat them.

"Is this really the Vampire Secrets?" Chu Siyuan asked. "Girl, who gave you this? Are you sure he didn't do anything to the contents?"

"Please rest assured," Saint Lady said. "My friend is very trustworthy. With the Vampire Secrets, it is much easier for us to defeat them now."

"Let us not publicize it now," Wang Shiqi decided. "We must first use these secret methods to clear out the infiltrators in the Confucius Way and imperial court."

Wang Shiqi was always decisive and fast. He seemed to have not moved from his seat, but he'd actually already sent out dozens of orders to start a giant cleanup.

At the same time, he'd sent the copy of the Vampire Secrets to the Ministry of War's base in the north.

On the side, Chu Siyuan said, "I heard that the Vampire Secrets went missing with the national treasury of the Sacred Central Empire. It was possibly in the hands of the Guarding Dragon Pavilion. Girl, who exactly is your friend?"

"Sect Leader Chu, are you really that curious?" the Saint Lady asked.

Chu Siyuan was obviously curious. Not only him, but all the Confucius Saints present wanted to know the answer too. They all perked up their ears, listening carefully.

Saint Lady's eyes swept side to side, scanning everyone. "If Sect Leader Chu is willing to agree to one condition, I can tell you the secret, and you alone."

The Saint Lady knew Chu Siyuan's personality, so she purposely created this trap for him.

Chu Siyuan was tempted. "I'll be the only person you tell?" he asked.

"Of course." Saint Lady nodded.

Chu Siyuan looked at how everyone else was disappointed and instantly smiled. He knew that as long as he had this secret, he'd be able to get more benefits from the others.

Those guys were much more curious than him.

"I am the sect leader of the Art Sect," Chu Siyuan said determinedly. "I can agree to ten conditions, let alone one."

"Okay." The Saint Lady didn't hold back. She told him Zhang Ruochen's name directly.

"It's him?" Chu Siyuan uttered involuntarily, expression changing.

Zhang Ruochen's identity was very sensitive. The entire Kunlun's Field was gossiping that he may be the crown prince of the Sacred Central Empire from 800 years ago. Now that he'd sent over the Vampire Secrets, he was even more of a suspect.

Chu Siyuan was very stubborn, but he was also smart. He knew how sensitive this topic was, so he didn't reveal it so easily.

The other Saints were all curious. They kept asking, but Chu Siyuan wasn't willing to say a single word.

The Saint Lady invited Chu Siyuan alone to the ninth mansion. They went to the Heaven and Earth Chessboard.

"Girl," Chu Siyuan said immediately. "You best stay away from Zhang Ruochen. He is definitely a bad seed. Don't jump into this fire pit."

The Saint Lady had a faint smile. She stared at the chessboard as if observing something.

Chu Siyuan continued, "If that Zhang Ruochen really is the Sacred Crown Prince from 800 years ago, then he and the Empress must have some conflicts and rivalries. The Empress has only left the imperial city temporarily to search for the chance to become a god. She'll return someday. You won't benefit at all by getting too close to Zhang Ruochen."

The Saint Lady seemed not to hear Chu Siyuan's warning. She reached out and pointed at where the Blood God Sect was.

“Their situation is very complicated right now. Zhang Ruochen won’t be able to handle it alone. Someone must go help him.”

“What do you mean?” Chu Siyuan asked.

“Zhang Ruochen is the Blood God Sect’s Deity, Gu Linfeng,” the Saint Lady replied.

“So what?”

“The Blood God Sect is already in unrest. More than one Saint has fallen in the past few days. The situation will only become more and more dangerous. The imperial court can’t remain uninvolved. I wish to send a Saint to help the Blood God Sect. It’ll be best if he can kill all the Immortal Vampires.”

“And then help Zhang Ruochen become the Blood God Sect Hierarch?” Chu Siyuan asked.

“It’s better if the Blood God Sect is in his hands than an Immortal Vampire,” the Saint Lady said.

“This has nothing to do with me. It’s Zhang Ruochen’s own matter... What are you looking at me for? I must go fight north. How can I go to the Blood God Sect?”

Seeing that the Saint Lady kept staring at him, Chu Siyuan sensed that something was wrong. He turned to flee.

“Sect Leader Chu, you promised me something earlier,” the Saint Lady said. “Are your words truly so unreliable?”

Chu Siyuan stopped and sighed. “Girl, you already planned this, right?”

The Saint Lady’s expression was serious. “The Blood God Sect is one of the seven ancient sects. Its force is spread amongst the nine states of the central region. If the Immortal Vampires take control of it, the entire central region will be in chaos. This is very important. You must take action personally.”

“Fine, I’ll go,” Chu Siyuan said seriously. “No matter what, Zhang Ruochen was able to send over the Vampire Secrets. This means that the big picture is still in his mind. Helping him is helping the human race.”

In the end, Chu Siyuan couldn't embarrass himself like this. After all, he'd agreed to the Saint Lady's condition in front of all those Saints. If he went back on his word, he'd become a laughingstock.

"According to my information," the Saint Lady warned, "a big figure from the Immortal Vampire's Huangtian Tribe is hurrying over from Tiantai State. They prepare to control the Blood God Sect completely. You must be careful. It's best if you meet with Zhang Ruochen instead of acting alone."

"I've seen all types of storms," Chu Siyuan said excitedly. "Don't worry. I can make it so that ten powerful Vampire figures will never return, let alone one."

Then he brought Sikong One and Two away from the Central Emperor City. They rode a flying ship straight to the Blood God Sect.

The Saint Lady was still worried. She felt that Chu Siyuan would definitely act alone without discussing with Zhang Ruochen. This might make things worse.

...

Mo You Valley.

Zhang Ruochen took the pill medicine that Empress Moran gave him. Both his outer and inner wounds recovered quickly.

There were illusion formations throughout Mo You Valley. Zhang Ruochen could be under watch at all times. He didn't dare to enter the scroll world at all.

It looked like a gentle refuge, but there was actually danger all over. He could die from any small mishap.

While healing, he cultivated with all his might. He wanted to go through the second trial as soon as possible or open the last aperture to turn his physical body into a Saint.

Since my Spiritual Power is already a Saint, I can combine the memories and Saintly Way knowledge from the fourth and fifth lives. If I increase my knowledge of the Saintly Way, I'll be able to go through the second trial very soon.

Zhang Ruochen's injuries were around 60% healed now. He could definitely fight with a Saint now.

Thus, he stopped healing. Instead, he started combining the memories and knowledge from the fourth life of the Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map to improve his cultivation a bit more.

Chapter 1187 - Prince Xia

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

After his mind power had reached level fifty, Zhang Ruochen was able to store more memories and saintly way comprehension. He easily absorbed all the gains he had from the fourth lifetime.

After merging himself with memories and saintly way comprehension from the fourth lifetime, Zhang Ruochen immediately started to merge himself with those of the fifth lifetime.

Practicing in ‘Seven Lives and Seven Deaths Map’ was also a refinement. The more you refined yourself, the more you could comprehend it.

Zhang Ruochen’s saintly way comprehension was still being improved. His understanding of saintly way rules was getting clear, and it was also immensely mysterious and mesmerizing.

After a long time, Zhang Ruochen absorbed the memories and saintly way comprehension of the fifth lifetime, and he was able to fully utilize it.

“I should be able to attract the trial clouds of the second pre-saint trial now.”

The second pre-saint trial was called ‘Eight Nine Trial.’ One needed to go through seventy-two trial thunders, which were several times more dangerous than the first pre-saint trial.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be able to maintain his Traceless 36 Changes, after which he might reveal himself. If that hierarch wife found out who he really was, the consequences would be catastrophic.

Zhang Ruochen didn't rush to pass the trial, instead, he suppressed it. He needed to wait until he left Mo You Valley.

After integrating the memories and saintly way comprehension from both lifetimes, Zhang Ruochen fully comprehended 'Sword Six,' and he had reached the completeness level.

Zhang Ruochen was much closer to the sword saint level now.

After that, he would start to comprehend Sword Seven. As long as he comprehended the ten levels of Sword Seven, Zhang Ruochen would soon become a real sword saint.

Every sword saint was famed in Kunlun's Field, and they were all worshipped by the sword master monks.

If a sword saint was able to establish a sect, he or she could attract lots of talented monks. This glory overwhelmed that of ordinary saints.

What Zhang Ruochen wanted to do was to improve his cultivation level.

He needed to train his martial arts level to the saint level to utilize all martial art techniques.

After merging two lifetimes of memories, Zhang Ruochen's mind power was greatly improved again, and he was one step away from reaching level fifty-one.

After his mind power reached level fifty, it would be more and more difficult for him to improve his cultivation. The gap between each level was like that between realms, and it would take a long time for him to make a breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen had only improved his mind power to level fifty a couple of days ago, and now, he was already at pinnacle-level-fifty. He was about to reach level fifty-one.

Such a rapid improvement made all the mind power saints in the world jealous.

Just as Zhang Ruochen released his mind power, he found Empress Mo Ran walking toward him.

Zhang Ruochen knew that Empress Mo Ran was also a formidable being, so he had always been careful when he was

getting along with her.

Hua.

The enormous amount of mind power flowed back to Zhang Ruochen's saint heart.

Empress Mo Ran walked in, holding a jade xiao. She said with a smile on her face, "It seems that you've recovered from your injuries?"

"Almost there now."

Zhang Ruochen stood up, looked at her and said, "Can you take me to meet the hierarch wife now?"

"Now that you've fully recovered, it's time for you to meet our grand master."

Empress Mo Ran twisted her body and sat beside Zhang Ruochen. She then wrapped her arm around his arm.

Her body felt boneless. She was light, smooth and warm. He could feel the enchantment from the capes.

They looked very intimate, and while they walked through the peach forest, everyone stared at them weirdly.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen felt a trace of hostility and aggression. He was confused. "Someone wants me dead in Mo You Valley."

Zhang Ruochen didn't turn around. Instead, he used his mind power to inspect.

That trace of hostility came from a middle-aged man. He looked chubby, yet his eyes gleamed with belligerence.

"How powerful he is..."

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He wasn't able to confirm that person's mind power.

That person was definitely stronger than upper-class saints. He had at least reached 'Xuan Huang Realm,' possibly further.

A being like that could rival the palace leaders of Ten Heavenly Palaces.

“He’s targeting me, but I’ve never seen him before. There’re no grudges between us.

Zhang Ruochen looked to Empress Moran beside him.

Is it about her?

Zhang Ruochen recalled something and couldn’t help smiling. “Is he Emperor Blue Dragon?”

Zhang Ruochen decided to try him.

He reached out his hand and wrapped it around the thin waist of Empress Moran.

That sense of hostility became fiercer.

The wind in the peach forest blew the petals up.

The person hiding in the dark didn’t do anything. Instead, the venting force withered away.

“It’s Emperor Blue Dragon.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed. He’d just made himself an enemy of a powerful being.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen felt a bit guilty. After all, Empress Moran was the wife of Emperor Blue Dragon, yet she was being held by him.

He could easily tell that Emperor Blue Dragon was in agony.

Zhang Ruochen wouldn’t be naïve enough to assume that Emperor Blue Dragon wouldn’t kill him. He reckoned that someone more powerful was controlling him.

Hierarch wife.

That hierarch wife is a force to be reckoned with, Zhang Ruochen thought.

Just as Zhang Ruochen and Princess Moran went to see the hierarch wife, two prominent beings from Huangtian Tribe, one of the major ten immortal vampire tribes, arrived in the state of Tiantai.

Actually, most of the immortal spies in Blood God Sect were from Huangtian Tribe.

Huangtian Tribe had been planning this for hundreds of years. They wanted to control Blood God Sect at the smallest price possible.

And now, the time had come. It was time for them to take over the entire Blood God Sect and attack the central region.

Inside a mansion of a wicked city stood soldiers wearing iron armor. All those soldiers had blood-red pupils, and they looked bloodthirsty.

Peng!

Elder Yuangui flew out of the house, hitting the solid stone floor, spitting blood out.

There was a red handprint on his face. Obviously, he had been slapped.

Elder Yuangui was one of the six saintly elders, and he was of royalty with immeasurable cultivation. Who had the guts to slap him?

“Unwise bastard. Huangtian Tribe has been arranging this for hundreds of years and spending countless human resources and materials. You cost us half the efforts in a couple of days. How dare you come face me?”

Prince Xia walked out of the room, wearing a golden-thread python cape. He looked energetic, and his skin was glowing with golden light. He had powerful ripples all over his body.

And then, Huangtian Crown Princess also walked out of the room, standing beside Prince Xia and looking at Elder Yuangui apathetically.

Elder Yuangui tried to hold himself up and kneeled on the ground. He lost all the dignity a saint was supposed to have and begged, “Mercy, prince! Mercy Crown Princess! I’ve devoted everything to our tribe. I know we suffered a huge loss, but we still have a chance to control Blood God Sect. Only I know how to do that.”

Huangtian Crown Princess rolled her eyes, walked toward Elder Yuangui and said, “Most of the saints and half saints

from Huangtian Tribe in Blood God Sect have been eliminated. What other chance do we have?”

“Other than Huangtian Tribe, another mysterious immortal vampire power also has their spies in Blood God Sect, but I don’t know which tribe they are from.”

Elder Yuangui continued, “If we can cooperate, it’ll be easy to take control of Blood God Sect.”

“Another tribe sent a lot of people to Blood God Sect?”

Huangtian Crown Prince frowned, thought for a while, tapped on the shoulders of Elder Yuangui and said, “Stand up and tell me everything.”

Elder Yuangui took a long breath and said, “I suspect that the hierarch wife of Blood God Sect comes from one of the immortal vampire tribes, and she’s also a spy in Blood God Sect. I found that out by chance, and I contacted her after that, and we’ve formed a pact.”

“What does she look like? And how’s her cultivation?”

He wanted to infer the identity of that hierarch wife from the descriptions of Elder Yuangui.

Elder Yuangui shook his head and said, “I couldn’t even see her face, nor could I infer her cultivation. When I was looking at her, I felt as if I was looking at the oceans and astral skies. She was unfathomable!”

Chapter 1188 - Trial Once Again

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Prince Xia grew thoughtful. “It seems that the Hierarch Madame is a very powerful figure,” he said. “I should go meet her and see just what kind of person she is.”

After that, he had Elder Yuan Gui send a message to the wife of the Hierarch. He wanted to meet her personally. If they could work together to take down the Blood God Sect, it would be the best.

Elder Yuan Gui took out a communication rune. He carved some words and then added Holy Qi into it, sending it out.

Whoosh!

The rune turned into a streak of light. It flew past thousands of miles into the Ancient Snow Mountain, flying into Mo You Valley.

The Hierarch Madame sat cross-legged on a floating stone slab. Her long robe was as red as blood.

Her slender brows arched. Sensing the incoming communication rune, she extended two fingers and pressed forward elegantly. The next moment, a jade rune scroll appeared between her fingers.

Zhang Ruochen and Empress Moran stood below the stone slab. He watched quietly, wondering who would send a message to the Hierarch Madame.

After reading the content, the madame chuckled softly. “Prince Xia of the Huangtian Tribe actually wishes to meet me. What

do you two think?”

The Hierarch’s Madame trained her eyes on Zhang Ruochen, wanting to see his expression change. Zhang Ruochen was clear that the madame wanted to reveal all her cards to test his attitude.

He immediately put on a suspicious expression. “Madame,” he said softly. “You actually communicate with the Immortal Vampires?”

Red smoke flooded out from the woman. It transformed into a red cloud that covered her entire body. “You are not an outsider, so I can tell you. I am actually an Immortal Vampire. Deity, are you interested in joining?”

Without hesitating, Zhang Ruochen lowered onto one knee. “As long as you can help me become the Hierarch and gift me Mo Yin, I will do all I can for you, even if I die.”

Empress Moran smiled mesmerizingly.

“You are quite clear about the current situation.” Collecting the red smoke back into her, the madame said, “It’s highly possible that Empress Chi Yao has died already. The human race’s golden era has already passed. The weak humans will become food and slaves. Only the strong humans are qualified to choose their fate—either join the Immortal Vampires or... die.”

Zhang Ruochen’s entire body shook. Fat beads of sweat rolled down his forehead, dripping onto the ground. Of course, this was all an act to numb the Hierarch Madame and Empress Moran.

“You need not be afraid. As long as you work for me dutifully, you will remain above the others. No one will dare to look down on you just because you are a human.”

The Hierarch Madame crushed the communication rune.

“Since that Prince Xia wishes to work with me, how about you visit him for me?”

“Prince Xia wishes to see you,” Zhang Ruochen said. “I’m afraid it’s unsuitable for me to meet him.”

“You are the Deity of the Blood God Sect, the future Hierarch. Your status is definitely qualified to speak to him. If they have rich conditions, we can indeed work together. Actually, we can control the Blood God Sect with our own abilities, but it’ll be a bit harder. We’ll have to take risks too.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and smiled. “I understand! If we work together from the inside and outside, we can clear out the conservatives of the Blood God Sect much easier. Then the sect will completely be in our hands.”

“Correct,” the madame said. “Go off now! I still have some things to instruct Mo Yin on. Later, she will go visit the cultivators of the Huangtian Tribe with you.”

Zhang Ruochen retreated. He didn’t let out a long sigh until he walked out of the cave residence.

Doubt entered his eyes. This Hierarch Madame isn’t in the same group as Elder Yuan Gui. Then which tribe is she from? The Blood God Sect truly has deep waters. I could drown if I’m not careful.

The mere bits that Zhang Ruochen knew now were enough to make him feel depressed and unable to breathe. Just how shocking could the other secrets be?

In the cave residence, Empress Moran stood respectfully on the bottom. “I believe that Gu Linfeng has only submitted to you because he’s worried about getting killed. He might not genuinely wish to join the Immortal Vampires.”

“So what?” the Hierarch Madame said. “Once he joins us, he will never be able to turn back. Even if he does, the humans will see him as a traitor. They won’t accept him.”

“Master, you are correct,” Empress Moran said. “We indeed should make him sink even deeper. In the end, he won’t be able to leave even if he wants to. He can only continue to work for us.”

“This time, I am sending you two to meet with the cultivators of Huangtian Tribe to test him further.”

Cold light flashed past Empress Moran’s eyes. “What if he has other thoughts and wants to spread news of our identity?”

“If it’s the first time, just give him a lesson. There’s no need to kill him. After all, humans are no different from animals. They must all be tamed before they’ll listen to you. He will become obedient after a few lessons. Just order him around like a dog. He won’t dare to do anything to you.”

Empress Moran nodded and smiled. “I will not disappoint you. I will do my best to tame that wild dog, Gu Linfeng.”

She was already an upper Saint. It was naturally a simple task for her to deal with a Pre-Saint.

To the Hierarch Madame, with Empress Moran watching, Gu Linfeng wouldn’t be able to do anything, no matter how powerful he was.

...

Zhang Ruochen and Empress Moran rode a blood-soul war chariot and rushed out of Mo You Valley. They flew into the air and disappeared between the white clouds in the blue sky.

The chariot was extremely fast. It crossed tens of thousands of miles soon, rushing out of the Blood God Sect’s territory.

Zhang Ruochen sat in the chariot and moved the curtains aside to look down. However, all he saw were rolling green mountains and overlapping peaks. There was no sign of civilization. It must be a primitive forest.

“Here it’ll be!” Zhang Ruochen said to himself.

Empress Moran was studying Gu Linfeng who was sitting across from her. Hearing that weird phrase, she was taken aback slightly. “Deity, what do you mean?” she asked.

“The trial.”

Zhang Ruochen opened his arms. Powerful Holy Qi surged out of him, instantly shattering the chariot.

Empress Moran was shocked. She thought that Zhang Ruochen wanted to attack her, so she quickly retreated. She also activated the Holy Qi within her.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the air, long hair flying. Powerful Holy Qi rippled out, forming a vortex that crossed dozens of

miles.

The shards of the chariot flew in the vortex, whistling past.

The rules of the world became denser and denser above Zhang Ruochen's head. Closely after, it formed a pitch-black trial cloud. It scattered, covering hundreds of miles in the sky.

Thick bolts of lightning snaked through the clouds, unleashing terrifying power.

“He's going through another trial?”

Empress Moran was shocked and incredulous. After all, only a few days had passed since Gu Linfeng's first Pre-Saint Trial. Most cultivators wouldn't have stabilized their cultivation in a few days, but Gu Linfeng was already starting his second trial.

“This guy is way too crazy. Pre-Saint Trials aren't so easy to pass. The second trial will be much stronger than the first too.”

Empress Moran felt unsafe. Worried that she would be swept into the thunder, she retreated again.

She didn't stop until she was 500 miles away, standing at the edge of the trial cloud. She looked inside with her saintly eyes. She really wanted to know if Gu Linfeng could pass the second trial successfully or not.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen was under a lot of pressure and had been forced to undergo the second trial. Only this way was he confident in opening the last aperture and turning his physical body into a Saint.

Once his body was a Saint, his combat ability would also improve greatly. He would be able to counter Empress Moran.

Plus, he needed a Saint body to bear the Universe World.

Once the scroll world evolved into the Universe World and became one with his physical body, he would be able to manipulate the power of the Universe World and Divine Sky-Connecting Tree. He'd be a figure connected to the heavens and earth—fearless.

With his current condition, he naturally knew that he was too impatient with the second trial. Thus, he was very careful. He

tried hard to clear all his thoughts. Holy Qi flowed faster and faster through his Saintly Meridians.

Kaboom.

A thick bolt of lightning stretched out of the cloud like a divine spear. It went straight for Zhang Ruochen's head.

The image was so shocking that one would think Zhang Ruochen would be shattered the next instant.

The lightning struck Zhang Ruochen's head and pierced his entire body. Some lightning surged out of the pores on his neck, chest and arms. More lightning flew out of his feet and landed on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen's entire body was penetrated by lightning.

Boom, boom!

The lightning that fell to the ground split a 2000-meter-tall mountain into a sea of lava. It flooded out in all directions.

The second Pre-Saint Trial had 72 bolts of lightning. Each bolt was more menacing than the last.

This was only the first bolt!

Despite being hundreds of miles away, Empress Moran still felt great pressure. "Gu Linfeng's Pre-Saint Trial is too terrifying," she muttered to herself. "If my trial had been like this back then, my soul would have flown away with the first bolt. Can Gu Linfeng really take 72 bolts?"

Chapter 1189 - Terrifying Lightning Fire

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The area within hundreds of square miles was completely covered by the lightning trial, and each lightning bolt looked like a giant dragon, traveling within the lightning clouds.

All the beasts in this primal forest were scared, and they all tried to run out. Some of the weak savage beasts were too terrified to move. They could only lie on the ground and wait for their death.

The power contained in the lightning was horrifying, which melted a mountain and turned it into lava, swallowing the flowers, grass, and trees in the primal forest.

Hong Long.

The second lightning bolt fell and pierced through Zhang Ruochen's body.

There was raging lightning flowing in the apertures and bloodstreams in Zhang Ruochen, shuttling back and forth in every tissue of his body.

He was quenching his body time and time again. Although he was going through agony, it was incredibly great for his body.

Why did someone need to go through three pre-saint trials to become a saint? Because when someone was going through the pre-saint trials, his body characteristics were being completely transformed, and they would ascend above ordinary people and become saints.

They had dangers and opportunities at the same time.

When the third lightning bolt hit Zhang Ruochen, the lightning inside Zhang Ruochen became greater. He felt that his apertures, veins, and saintly apertures were about to burst, and he found it difficult to handle the force of Natal Way.

Zhang Ruochen roared.

Hua!

All the one hundred and forty-three apertures in his body were opened, and those bolts of lightning rushed into the apertures.

There were one hundred and forty-three small holes on Zhang Ruochen's body, and lightning flew toward each of the holes, making rumbling noises.

The power of lightning passed through the apertures, refining them.

The apertures that had already been sanctified became holier, and the energies inside surged.

Zhang Ruochen's body couldn't withstand eighteen flashes of lightning at the same time, and there were some small wounds on him.

Fortunately, his body had great healing power, and those wounds disappeared quickly.

He then withstood nine more lightning bolts, and the healing abilities of Zhang Ruochen couldn't catch up with the tearing strength of the lightning. There were wounds everywhere on his body, which was badly mangled.

When the thirty-fourth lightning bolt struck his body again, his body burst and fell onto the ground. He fell into the lava and sank.

The power from the lightning trial turned this entire forest into a lava lake. The heatwave was burning this whole place and there was smoke everywhere. Thickly-dotted lightning engravings flowed on the lava.

The lightning trial didn't stop. Instead, it hit through the lava and struck Zhang Ruochen again. It wouldn't stop until it killed Zhang Ruochen.

The lightning became fiercer and fiercer.

Zhang Ruochen was already barely standing the thirty-four trial lightning. Would he actually pull through the following trial lightning?

Empress Moran was impressed. She thought, I've underestimated that brat. He withstood thirty-four bolts of lightning, and he's still alive.

Empress Moran speculated that she would've been killed by the thirty-four trial lightning without using any saintly weapons to ward them off.

Which meant the body of a first-trial pre-saint was sturdier than her body, and she was an upper-class saint.

“Are the monks really that powerful? God knows how strong he will be after his body is sanctified.”

However, Empress Moran didn't think Gu Linfeng would have a chance to sanctify his body. She reckoned that Gu Linfeng wouldn't pass the lightning trial.

“It that guy can be humbler, he might become a force to be reckoned with in the future. Unfortunately, he has some serious character issues. No matter how powerful he is, he might be killed.” Empress Moran still looked down upon Gu Linfeng.

The only youngster she admired was that Time and Space Descendant she had met in Blue Dragon Void World.

He was a real talent. Not only did he have incomparable potential, but he was also perseverant and was unsusceptible to any temptations.

Even with Empress Moran's cultivation, she still felt powerless in front of him.

After ten more flashes of lightning, Empress Moran couldn't sense the life force of Gu Linfeng anymore. She thought Gu Linfeng might've been annihilated.

However, the trial lightning didn't stop. It kept hitting the lava lake, which meant Gu Linfeng was still alive.

How many strikes can he take? Empress Moran thought.

Zhang Ruochen was sitting at the bottom of the lava lake with burning liquids around him, hotter than fire.

He clenched his teeth and tried to pull through. He still looked intractable. Even the lightning formed by the sky and land couldn't bend his will.

Carnivorous Holy Flower was screaming inside his body.

“I can't take it anymore! Zhang Ruochen! Give me a saintly source. I need to merge my virtual body with my real body, otherwise, I'll be killed by your lightning trial.”

Carnivorous Holy Flower was already very powerful. It was one of the strongest plants, stronger than many Taigu remains. However, it still had a difficult time withstanding the second lightning trial.

Each lightning trial made it scream.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give Carnivorous Holy Flower as he thought it had a long way to go yet before it reached the limit.

The reason it wanted that saintly source badly was that it wanted to seize this chance to reach the state of saint, after which it could swallow Zhang Ruochen when he was at his weakest.

Hong.

Hong Long Long.

...

Nine bolts of trial lightning struck Zhang Ruochen, and Carnivorous Holy Flower kept yelling.

The mind power ripples from Carnivorous Holy Flower became weaker and weaker. It then said to Zhang Ruochen, “I can't take this anymore. If you still refuse to give me your saintly source, I'll resort to absorbing your power to reach the state of mind. Then, we might die together.”

Zhang Ruochen could feel that Carnivorous Holy Flower couldn't be weaker, and it might die at any time.

If it absorbed Zhang Ruochen's without considering the consequences at this moment, Zhang Ruochen would be in grave danger.

"Stop yelling, I'll give you a saintly source now."

Zhang Ruochen was still sitting with his legs crossed. A gleaming saintly source flew out of the space ring on one of his fingers.

The saintly source flew into the lower abdomen of Zhang Ruochen through the martial deity print between Zhang Ruochen's eyebrows.

At the same time, a green vine grew on the spine of Zhang Ruochen, and it turned thicker and thicker in the lightning.

The branches of Carnivorous Holy Flower went into the lower abdomen of Zhang Ruochen, enveloping the saintly source and absorbing its essence, turning it into nutrition to help it merge its virtual body and its real body.

Sixty-three bolts of lightning had struck Zhang Ruochen, and there were only nine left.

Zhang Ruochen was in agony. His body kept being injured, and the only thing that helped him get through it was his mindpower.

His lightning trial was way fiercer than that of other pre-saint trials.

Even lower-class saints and mid-class saints would be killed by the lightning.

"I've underestimated the power of the lightning trial. If I'd waited for a bit longer, I wouldn't have had such a hard time."

The trial bolts of lightning kept hitting Zhang Ruochen's body; the dragon soul and the elephant soul also emerged, screaming.

The dragon soul and the elephant soul seemed to be more solid after being quenched by the lightning trial.

All the deity prints of Zhang Ruochen emerged. Some of them were on his feet, some of them were on his arms and some

were on his head. Thanks to all these deity prints, Zhang Ruochen's body could recover again and again.

Otherwise, his body would've disintegrated a long time ago.

Sixty-seventh trial lightning.

Sixty-eighth trial lightning.

Sixty-ninth trial lightning.

...

Seventieth trial lightning.

Seventy-first trial lightning.

Just before Zhang Ruochen was about to pass the second pre-saint trial, Carnivorous Holy Flower sneered, "I've finally become a saint. Zhang Ruochen, I'll swallow you now, take your body and seize your saintly way."

The branches of Carnivorous Holy Flower grew and stuck to the lower abdomen of Zhang Ruochen. It wanted to absorb all the nutrients of Zhang Ruochen.

It was without doubt a huge blow to Zhang Ruochen.

Carnivorous Holy Flower had already been robust before it reached the state of saint, much stronger than lower-class saints. Now, it had merged its virtual body and the real body. God knew how strong it was now.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen had been severely injured when passing the pre-saint trial. He couldn't be weaker.

The situation was unfavorable to Zhang Ruochen.

He immediately mobilized his Holy Qi and infused it into Universe Spiritual Map. He wanted to ask Blood Moon Ghost King and Sky-connecting Divine Tree to help him suppress Carnivorous Holy Flower.

This was the only way he could save himself now.

At this moment, the seventy-second trial lightning bolt struck.

Hong Long.

Carnivorous Holy Flower screamed in anguish, and its body cracked.

The last strike of the trial lightning was the strongest one.

Unfortunately, Carnivorous Holy Flower was too rushed and tried to swallow Zhang Ruochen before the lightning trial was over. Trial lightning caught its force and struck it with most of its power. Only a small portion of it hit Zhang Ruochen.

Carnivorous Holy Flower had just merged its virtual body and real body. Its body was very unstable.

Its real body started to detach from its virtual body, and its virtual body was rugged, about to crumble.

Carnivorous Holy Flower screamed and begged Zhang Ruochen, “Master, please find a saintly soul to replace my virtual body, otherwise I’ll never reach the state of saint in the future.”

Chapter 1190 - Physical Body Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Holy Carnivorous Flower completely did this to itself. It actually wanted to turn on Zhang Ruochen when he was the weakest and eat him. No one would be able to bear this.

Even if Zhang Ruochen couldn't kill it, he still needed to give it a harsh lesson.

Ignoring the flower's pleading, Zhang Ruochen activated the Emperor Ming Nine-sky Scripture. He manipulated the Holy Qi within him, circulating it through him.

After going through the second Pre-Saint Trial, a vast force of vitality coursed through Zhang Ruochen. It quickly mended his broken body.

The lightning in the meridians, blood vessels, and Saintly Meridians also merged into his body, becoming part of him.

A while later, he healed completely in the bottom of the lava. He was even stronger than before. Each inch of his skin glowed with saintly light; each drop of blood contained explosive strength.

After going through the second Pre-Saint Trial, my physical body has also strengthened. I should take advantage of this to open the last aperture.

Ferocity in his heart, Zhang Ruochen clenched his fists. He guided all his Blood Qi into the ten Spiritual Meridians.

Boom, boom.

The ten meridians were like ten bounding rivers. Earthquake-like sounds were produced as they went for the meridian at the top of his head.

Zhang Ruochen's entire body shook. He could clearly see the ten meridians followed ten mysterious paths to join at his head.

If he could open the last aperture, his body would become a Saint.

...

Empress Moran stood hundreds of miles away. She actually let out a relieved breath when she saw the clouds disperse gradually.

The entire land was turned to scorched dirt. The previously rolling mountains and primitive forest were disfigured now. Flames and thick smoke rose up from many places.

"All 72 bolts of trial lightning struck," Empress Moran said to herself. "Did Gu Linfeng survive the second trial?"

This was an incredible thing. After all, the lightning earlier had been too strong. It was hard for even her to stop. Who would expect that Gu Linfeng could survive until the end?

Feeling doubtful, Empress Moran walked to the center of the scorched earth.

However, a dozen miles later, golden light appeared in the sky. They formed a mass of golden clouds. They converged like rivers and kept changing in the sky. They looked beautiful, but they made Empress Moran feel unprecedented danger. They seemed even more frightening than the trial clouds.

"What's going on? Did he form trial clouds again? Golden trial clouds?"

Empress Moran streaked back, retreating from that area again. She was very shocked and confused. What exactly was happening?

The golden trial clouds weren't the only things. Thousands of miles of land was also shaking lightly. The meridians hidden

deep down actually changed direction and converged toward the clouds.

Whoosh!

A red beam of Blood Qi shot up from the distance, going straight into the golden clouds. The clouds instantly started rolling. The next moment, a golden waterfall fell from the clouds, plummeting to the ground.

Kaboom!

The ground shook even more violently. Thick black smoke rushed into the sky, making it dark and dim.

Obviously, Empress Moran didn't know that Zhang Ruochen had opened the last aperture on his head. He'd opened all 144 apertures. As long as he could survive the trial clouds, his physical body would become a Saint.

A physical body Saint didn't need to go through three Pre-Saint Trials, but they had to go through the heaven and earth trial at the same time.

The heaven trial was the golden clouds in the sky. The earth trial was the force from the earthly meridians. That kind of force could melt boulders, rip apart the earth, and multiply gravity by thousands of times.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was being attacked by both trials. His body cracked and popped. It felt like even his bones would shatter.

“Persist. I must persist.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the heaven and earth trial wanted to destroy him, but this was exercising his body too. He could only become a true physical body Saint if he could endure this pain.

A cultivator with 143 saint apertures and one with a saint body were completely different.

Empress Moran was a Saint, so she was naturally very knowledgeable. She quickly guessed what was happening. “Going through the heaven trial, leading to the earth trial. Is Gu Linfeng turning his body into a Saint?”

After all, a cultivator with a saint body was synonymous with “undefeatable” in the same realm. They were even more powerful than Sword Saints.

The crown princes of the Immortal Vampires were all geniuses with natural advantages. They would still face great troubles when cultivating their bodies. How could Gu Linfeng reach this level so easily?

The heaven and earth trials lasted for around two hours before slowly dissipating.

The sky cleared and the ground calmed again.

“It’s finally over!” Empress Moran really wanted to know the result.

Using a physical technique, she hurried over to the heart of the trials. She saw that the ground had turned into a lake of lava. The mountains and woods all vanished.

The second Pre-Saint Trial and heaven and earth trials had produced terrifying destruction that even a Saint was shocked by.

“There are no signs of life. Gu Linfeng probably didn’t survive.”

Empress Moran let out a sigh. If Gu Linfeng really survived the double trials and became a physical body Saint, then even she wouldn’t be his match.

Thinking carefully though, countless talents died under the trial lightning throughout history. Some were even more excellent than Gu Linfeng.

She thought carefully and decided to send a message to the Hierarch Madame. After all, Gu Linfeng’s death wasn’t a small matter. It would disrupt her plan and arrangements.

Whoosh!

A vortex opened up in the lava under Empress Moran. It grew bigger and bigger. Powerful energy waves surged out of the center. The next moment, Zhang Ruochen flew out of it and charged at Empress Moran.

She felt a strong current going toward her. She instinctively reached out to attack.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen was extremely strong. He crashed into Empress Moran and sent her flying.

Empress Moran felt like her bones were about to fall apart. She manipulated all the Holy Qi in her to dissolve the force.

Her feet stepped back a dozen times on the surface of the lava lake before stopping. Her chest rose and fell. Furious, she said, "Gu Linfeng, what are you doing?"

"Killing you," Zhang Ruochen said directly.

He charged again.

They were very close, so Zhang Ruochen arrived before Empress Moran in an instant with his current speed.

Boom, boom.

Zhang Ruochen's entire body shone with golden light. He punched using his physical strength, not utilizing any saint weapons. His palm power felt strong enough to topple mountains. Even an upper Saint like Empress Moran could only retreat. She couldn't stop them.

Back in the Blue Dragon Void World, Empress Moran and Zhang Ruochen already became enemies. Now that his physical body became a Saint and had a chance to kill her, Zhang Ruochen definitely wouldn't let her leave.

Plus, Empress Moran was working for the Immortal Vampires. She deserved to die.

After 63 consecutive attacks, Empress Moran couldn't withstand Zhang Ruochen's palm power anymore. She spat out saintly blood and was tossed out. Her hairpin snapped and her long hair tumbled down.

Empress Moran was both shocked and furious. She never would've guessed that Gu Linfeng was this powerful now. Even more, she didn't think that Gu Linfeng would do this to her.

“Gu Linfeng, how dare you? What are you doing?” Empress Moran asked coldly, wiping the blood on her lips.

Zhang Ruochen raised his hands. Feeling how strong he was after becoming a physical body Saint, he moved his hands softly. The air seemed to crackle.

“What am I doing? Didn’t I already say?”

He didn’t want to waste time talking to Empress Moran anymore. Guiding Holy Qi into the blood-red belt at his waist, it transformed into the Ten Saints Blood Armor and covered his entire body.

“Seven-Apertures Blood Palm.”

The seven apertures in his palm opened completely. A blood cloud was formed. Next, the Spiritual Qi in the sky started bubbling furiously.

Pluto’s apparition appeared behind Zhang Ruochen. It was like a demonic god.

After becoming a physical body Saint, the Seven-Apertures Blood Palm was naturally even more terrifying. He hadn’t attacked yet, but it already gave Empress Moran pressure.

She was now sure that Gu Linfeng really wanted to kill her. But she didn’t understand why.

Even if Gu Linfeng didn’t want to join the Vampires, he didn’t have to kill her. Wasn’t he a lustful man? How could he bear to kill a woman like her?

There was only one possibility: Gu Linfeng had always been acting. This man wasn’t lustful nor was he arrogant. He was just pretending to be weak to his enemies.

Thinking of this, Empress Moran didn’t dare to underestimate him anymore. She took out a squarish bronze stamp. Holding it, she put all her Holy Qi into it.

This stamp was one of the Blue Dragon Dynasty’s top treasures. The surface had a realistic dragon carved onto it.

Roar!

Dragon roars sounded within the stamp.

Empress Moran waved her hand. The stamp flew up and enlarged until it was more than 400 meters on all sides. It radiated with mighty blue fog. A huge dragon appeared in the fog. It snaked around the stamp.

Chapter 1191 - Fight an Upper-class Saint

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Seven-Apertures Blood Palm clashed with Blue Bronze Palm, trembling the spiritual Qi of sky and land around it. It could almost crush eardrums, and the clouds one-thousand square miles around it all withered away.

Their powers were at the same level.

“How is it possible? Even Destruction of the Thousand-patterns can’t crush his body?”

Empress Moran looked pale. She retreated and drew her distance from Gu Linfeng.

Gu Linfeng was still standing straight, glowing with golden light.

That blue bronze print was called ‘Blue Dragon Emperor Print.’

Empress Moran had already triggered three thousand inscriptions, releasing powerful destruction of thousand-patterns, yet Gu Linfeng was able to ward it off with his handprint. How could she not be shocked?

Gu Linfeng had just sanctified his body, yet he was powerful enough to rival an upper-class saint?

Were people whose bodies had been sanctified that terrific?

Zhang Ruochen trampled the space and rushed forward, making cracking sounds in the air and leaving a trace of thunder fire behind, racing toward Empress Moran.

Zhang Ruochen slapped down, and the phantom of the twelve-winged Lord Pluto showed up again, with tumbling bloody Qi.

Empress Moran felt that everything around her had disappeared, and she was trapped in a gigantic bloody Qi whirlpool.

An enormous phantom of a demonic god showed up and hit her head.

“No!”

Empress Moran held her Blue Dragon Emperor Print and tried to ward it off.

Peng!

Empress Moran wasn't able to resist that force. Her body fell and knocked a hole in the ground.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. He didn't show any mercy because of the exquisite face of Empress Moran. He would fight to the end as long as it was an enemy.

Empress Moran was, after all, an upper-class saint. She had solid cultivation, preventing her from being killed. She flew up and stood across from Zhang Ruochen.

Her hair and clothes looked a bit messy, and some parts of her body were bleeding with saintly blood, tainted by mud.

Empress Moran had never been in such a fix since becoming a saint, especially when fighting male monks. One look from her could mesmerize any male enemies, so she didn't need any fighting skills to subjugate them.

“Damn it! Gu Linfeng! You dare try to kill me!? You dare betray the hierarch wife!? Aren't you afraid that the hierarch wife will kill you?” Empress Mora showed her white teeth, and her eyes were glinting with fierceness.

Zhang Ruochen said, “I've never sought her patronage. How am I betraying her? I'll kill everyone who works for immortal vampires.”

“Even if you have sanctified your body, our lady can kill you from a hundred thousand miles away. You can never imagine

how powerful my lady is.”

Empress Moran knew that the best she could do was to rival Gu Linfeng. Even if she used all her power, she wouldn't be able to kill him.

However, if she let Gu Linfeng go, the identities of her and her lady would be revealed, and they would be hunted by all human monks.

Empress Moran flicked her fingers and sent a signal flare.

A signal flare could be sent back to Valley Mo You in an instant.

If her lady knew about this, she would kill Gu Linfeng using her extraordinary skills.

If it were another person, it wouldn't be able to stop the signal flare. After all, the signal flare could travel as fast as light.

Zhang Ruochen had been cautious about this. Just as Empress Mo Ran sent the signal flare, he vanished, crossed the space and grabbed the signal flare.

Peng.

Zhang Ruochen crushed the signal flare, and white jade powder fell from his hand.

“Great Spatial Move... You're Time and Space Descendant, Zhang Ruochen.” Empress Moran's eyes popped with horror, as she found it inconceivable.

Empress Moran didn't expect that someone she had been looking for was staying with her all this time.

Zhang Ruochen smiled, standing in the sky, and said, “Empress, did you expect to see me so soon after Blue Dragon Void World?”

“Fantastic! Give me the world spirit of Blue Dragon Void World now,” Empress Moran said.

“Why would I give it to you? Can you get it with your power?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“I need to show you my real power so that you can realize you can’t rival an upper-class saint.”

Bloody saintly Qi gushed out of Empress Moran’s feet turning into a cluster of clouds hundreds of square miles large. A gigantic saintly look ascended from the clouds, standing behind Empress Moran.

After utilizing the saint look, the forces of Empress Moran surged.

Hua!

Blue Dragon Emperor Print flew up again, and traces of blue inscriptions emerged.

Blue Dragon Emperor Print was a mighty thousand-patterns saintly weapon, and there were more than eight-thousand inscriptions inside. Once it was completely utilized, it could easily kill a saint.

Empress Moran was only powerful enough to trigger four-thousand inscriptions. She wasn’t able to fully wield its power.

Four-thousand inscriptions were terrific enough. Other upper-class saints who didn’t have such powerful thousand-patterns saintly weapons weren’t able to ward off attacks like that.

Empress Moran had just become an upper-class saint, so she was relatively weak among those at the same level, yet with the help of Blue Dragon Emperor Print, she could rival the powerful upper-class saints.

Empress Moran had only triggered three-thousand inscriptions before.

Hong Long.

Four thousand inscriptions emerged, and the destruction of thousand patterns painted the sky and land blue.

All ten saintly shadows around Zhang Ruochen crumbled under the influence of the destruction of thousand patters. An invisible force shook Zhang Ruochen so fiercely that he couldn’t even stand still.

“Die!”

The hair of Empress Moran waved, and her eyes glinted ferociously, wielding Blue Dragon Emperor Print.

Zhang Ruochen could see a blue dragon dashing toward him with a tremendous amount of power, shaking the ground under him. The continent seemed to be sinking.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't afraid at all. He didn't try to dodge it. Instead, he confronted it.

Empress Moran looked disdainful and said, "I've triggered four-thousand inscriptions on the Blue Dragon Emperor Print. Even upper-class saints would try to dodge it. He dares confront it directly? He's being suicidal."

Just as Zhang Ruochen was about to clash with the Blue Dragon Emperor Print, he suddenly disappeared, using the power of space and showing up right in front of Empress Moran.

"Sword Six."

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers into a sword technique, performing Sword Six and dispelling all the attack skills from Empress Moran.

Pu Chi!

Tens of thousands of sword Qi condensed into a sword pillar and pierced through the saint body of Empress Moran.

A huge bloody hole showed up on the chest of Princess Moran. Her bones and organs were crushed.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers again, leading to a palm print and hitting her body.

Peng.

That almost knocked the saint soul out of Princess Moran's body, and there were dozens of bloody wounds on her body. She bounced away tens of miles, falling into a lava lake.

Zhang Ruochen caught up with her, trying to kill her.

Just as he arrived beside the lava lake, a heated wave dozens of times hotter than lava gushed out.

“No.”

Zhang Ruochen was startled. He immediately mobilized the power of space and wanted to run away.

Yet he was still late.

Empress Moran couldn't be faster. She hit Zhang Ruochen, engulfed in flames.

Zhang Ruochen bounced back.

Empress Moran was using a God-connecting technique, which wielded ten times her own power, to save her life.

God-connecting techniques required burning one's blood and spirits. Almost everyone saint knew how to perform it to save their lives. However, it was so costly that no saints would use it unless it was their only resort.

Zhang Ruochen clashed with a burning mountain, and lots of stones fell on his body.

Zhang Ruochen spat blood as he was severely injured.

Peng.

Empress Moran looked like an exquisite Goddess of Death, descending from heaven, trampling the earth and walking to Zhang Ruochen.

There was still blood on her chest and lips. She looked aloof and fierce, walking toward Zhang Ruochen, and said, “You don't have the power to fight an upper-class saint.”

Empress Moran clenched her hand, rushed forward and hit toward Zhang Ruochen's head, trying to crush it.

Suddenly, a Blood Repression Rune showed up between Zhang Ruochen's fingers.

Hua!

The Blood Repression Rune flew toward Empress Moran, exploded and turned into white chains, covering her body and repressing her bloody Qi.

Zhang Ruochen flew out of the rocks and stabbed the head of Empress Moran with Abyss Ancient Sword.

The life force of Empress Moran drifted away, then Zhang Ruochen was relieved. He pulled Abyss Ancient Sword and said, “No wonder she was an upper-class saint. I had to use the only saint-level Blood Repression Rune I had to kill her completely.”

The body of Empress Moran was a bit bizarre. She was a human being, but her body had some characteristics of an immortal vampire.

Were there some techniques that could turn human beings into immortal vampires?

Zhang Ruochen couldn't figure it out at this moment, so he stopped thinking.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the corpse of Empress Moran, and he found that the saint soul of Empress Moran was still intact. He wondered whether he should infuse Carnivorous Holy Flower with her saint soul to replace its virtual body or not.

Chapter 1192 - Smelting

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

When Zhang Ruochen decided to take the Holy Carnivorous Flower in the beginning, he'd already predicted that it wouldn't be obedient. It would want to eat him.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen didn't only use it as help in battle. He also used it to force himself to improve faster and fend off its threat.

After the challenge of the heaven and earth trials, the Holy Carnivorous Flower's projection body was completely shattered. Its true body also withered. It hid in Zhang Ruochen's spine, unable to move.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower is still quite powerful. It provided a lot of auxiliary help.

After thinking carefully, he decided to awaken the flower's vitality. Thus, he reached out his clean hands and hovered above Empress Moran's corpse. He released his Spiritual Power. He grabbed downward and separated Empress Moran's saint soul.

Her saint soul was like a fist-sized ball of light. It glowed and hovered between Zhang Ruochen's hands. He could vaguely see a beautiful figure standing in it. It was identical to Empress Moran.

I wonder what miraculous things will happen after combining Empress Moran's saint soul into the Holy Carnivorous Flower's true body. The flower's animosity toward me will probably strengthen.

Zhang Ruochen's lips curled into a smile. He didn't care about that threat.

Whoosh!

He took a deep breath. Empress Moran's saint soul flew into his body as a streak of light.

He wrapped the soul in Holy Qi and moved it within him. He forced the soul into his spine to combine with the Holy Carnivorous Flower's true body.

The saint soul was much stronger than the flower's projection body. However, they didn't come from the same source. They expelled foreign bodies and were very hard to combine.

"Seems like I need to use some tactics."

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms. Bolts of purple lightning appeared in his palms and he pressed them against his chest.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Electricity coursed through Zhang Ruochen's entire body. More than 70% went to his spine, stimulating the Holy Carnivorous Flower and Empress Moran's saint soul to combine more quickly.

As they combined, black vines slowly grew out of Zhang Ruochen's back. Leaves sprouted, releasing faint Holy Qi.

The tendrils grew longer and thicker. They reached from the ground all the way to the clouds and radiated with powerful auras.

By the time Empress Moran's saint soul and the Holy Carnivorous Flower completely melded, the flower reached its peak state again. It radiated with extremely mighty Holy Qi.

The tendrils shook slightly and the surrounding Spiritual Qi shook violently. Rings of energy waves rippled out.

A voice that sounded like Empress Moran came from the flower. It carried extreme hatred. "Zhang Ruochen, you dared to put my soul into the Holy Carnivorous Flower. I will swallow you first!"

Whoosh!

Sharp thorns broke through a tendril as thick as a jar. The tendril swept toward Zhang Ruochen like a sword. The thorns

were created by the Rules of Saintly Way and carried icy strength.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged on the ground. He hummed softly and his thoughts jumped. The Holy Qi in him automatically turned into red-hot flames that flooded toward his spine.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower's true body was one with his spine. Suffering from the flames, the flower trembled and cried out.

Sizzle, sizzle.

Flames flooded out of Zhang Ruochen's back. It crept up the tendril, burning upward. The flower's new leaves were burned to dust.

"Master, master," the flower begged. "I'm sorry, I was wrong. Please put away your fire."

The voice was still similar to Empress Moran's voice. It was soft and gentle. It produced a strange feeling after Zhang Ruochen heard it.

Actually, the Holy Carnivorous Flower was in the Saint Realm and was very strong too. However, it already accepted Zhang Ruochen as its master. Zhang Ruochen could use any simple move to make it suffer.

It couldn't break free from Zhang Ruochen's control unless its cultivation was much, much stronger than him. Zhang Ruochen wouldn't let that happen. He would definitely keep the flower's abilities at a level that he could control.

He gradually put away the fire and used Spiritual Power to communicate with the flower. "Whether you're the Holy Carnivorous Flower or Empress Moran," he warned, "you better be obedient. Otherwise, I'll destroy you next time."

The flower now had part of its own mind and Empress Moran's consciousness. The two were currently melding. By the time they finished, they wouldn't be able to be distinguished.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower had seen Zhang Ruochen's power before and didn't want to be punished again. "Master, please don't worry," it quickly said. "I won't dare to have other thoughts, no matter how much courage you give me."

The flower's personality had indeed changed. Before, it had been very stubborn and would never try to placate Zhang Ruochen. Now, it seemed to have accepted him as its master and was willing to work for him.

Is it because it melded with Empress Moran's soul? Or because I cultivated my physical body and Spiritual Power to the Saint Realm, impressing it? Or maybe both?

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. He didn't want to think about it too much.

He dug out a blood-red saintly source from Empress Moran's corpse and gave it to the Holy Carnivorous Flower. "You just entered the Saint Realm. Take this saintly source to reinforce your level."

The flower rushed out of Zhang Ruochen's body. It extended its many roots and latched onto Empress Moran's corpse. It covered the corpse and saintly source at the same time.

The flower had just entered the Saint Realm. It was still very unstable, so it needed a lot of nutrients to reinforce its level. Plus, absorbing Empress Moran's saintly source, blood, and Holy Qi could help the flower's true body meld with Empress Moran's soul better. It had endless benefits.

Zhang Ruochen dug the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp out of the ground. He held it in his hands to study it.

"It's carved with 8,747 runes. This is definitely within the top 100 of the Thousand-pattern Weapon List. It's quite an impressive treasure," he praised.

Refining such a powerful Thousand-pattern Weapon in a void world was very difficult.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen wasn't interested in it. He could just give it to the Abyss Ancient Sword to advance it.

He took out the sword and struck down on the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp.

Boom!

The stamp shone with dazzling blue light. A blue dragon's shadow flew out and escaped from the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen made a sound of surprise.

The weapon spirit was an ancient dragon soul. It was very intelligent and obviously wouldn't allow itself to be butchered.

"Human, what are you doing?" The weapon spirit spoke to Zhang Ruochen in human tongue. "Don't you know that the Blue Dragon Dynasty used up more than half of the dynasty's resources to create this stamp? And you want to destroy me?"

"So what?" Zhang Ruochen said indifferently. "I can destroy the world with only one sword."

The Abyss Ancient Sword whistled. It flew toward the stamp with a long trail of light behind it.

The two Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons started fighting. The clashes were intense, like two Saints fighting.

The Abyss Ancient Sword's material was far stronger than the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp, but its level was much lower. It couldn't repress the stamp at all.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen joined the battle. He controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword to repress the stamp and start to refine it slowly.

"After refining the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp," Zhang Ruochen murmured to himself. "The Abyss Ancient Sword should have at least 5,000 runes, right?"

"Human... don't you know... the value of a Thousand-pattern Saint Weapon with 8,000 runes... You actually want to refine me..."

The weapon spirit felt like it had met a fool. Any other Saint would be overjoyed to get it. Who would want to refine it?

The Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp shook violently. Low dragon roars kept coming from it.

The weapon spirit wasn't willing to be refined by the Abyss Ancient Sword, but without its master's control, even the most powerful saint weapon would have limited power.

Under the tragic dragon cries, the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp was completely melted. The blue liquid melded with the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his clean right hand and grasped the Abyss Ancient Sword's hilt. He held it and closed his eyes, sensing carefully.

There were 5,132 patterns within the sword. They were organized in a mysterious way, as if some top weapon master had carved them personally.

Zhang Ruochen didn't use Holy Qi. He just waved his sword offhandedly.

Whoosh!

Thousands upon thousands of Sword Qi automatically forged before the sword. It formed a Sword Qi wall, countless of meters tall. It pushed forward with piercing screeches.

"The Abyss Ancient Sword's power improves vastly with every thousand new runes. Even though there are only 5,000 runes, it doesn't seem much weaker than the Blue Dragon Emperor Stamp."

Zhang Ruochen was quite satisfied with the Abyss Ancient Sword. Merely its sharpness already surpassed other Thousand-pattern Saint Weapons. It could even slash through the others.

The Holy Carnivorous Flower sucked dry Empress Moran's saint soul, liquid and Holy Qi. Various small blue buds sprouted on the vine.

"Are you going to bloom a second time?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

The flower's Spiritual Power reached into Zhang Ruochen's mind. "Master, as long as I can absorb enough nutrients, the holy flower will bloom completely within a year and reach the prime state. By then, my cultivation will also surpass the

Heaven Pass Realm. I'll be comparable to a Saint and can help you do much more.”

“The nutrients you receive depend on how obedient you are,” Zhang Ruochen replied simply.

Then he used Spiritual Power to enter the scroll world and communicate with the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree.

“My physical body has already become a Saint. I can take the Universe World at any time.”

A while later, the Divine Sky-Connecting Tree messaged Zhang Ruochen to inform him that it had started refining the Blue Dragon Void World's World Spirit. In the following days, tremendous changes would happen to the scroll world.

In the end, the Universe Spiritual Map would shatter. The scroll world would develop into a much vaster and more stable world—the Universe World.

Chapter 1193 - News About Divine Weapons

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Scroll World would be closed again for evolution.

It would take a long time for Scroll World to evolve into a Universe World.

Normally, it would take tens of millions, if not hundreds of millions of years for a world to be born.

With the help of Sky-connecting Divine Tree, it wouldn't take that long for Universe World to be born. The power of Sky-connecting Divine Tree could accelerate that process by tens of thousands of times.

Before the Scroll World closed, Blackie walked out and gave Zhang Ruochen two Blood Repression Rune. It said, "I've tried my best, but the saint level Blood Repression Rune is too complicated. I can only make two."

Zhang Ruochen gave it two thousand drops of divine blood, yet it was only able to make two Blood Repression Runes, which reflected the value of one saint-level Blood Repression Rune.

For some saints, they could put all they had together and still wouldn't have enough to make even one Rune.

Zhang Ruochen put the two saint-level Blood Repression Runes into his space ring carefully, then, he looked to Blackie and said, "How long will it take for Scroll World to evolve into Universe World?"

“At least a couple of months, if not several years,” Blackie said.

“That long?” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

“Long? The evolution of the Universe World has already gone against the natural rules of the birth of a world. Do you know how long it took Blue Dragon Void World to become a stable world? At least millions of years. As for Kunlun’s Field, we don’t even know how long it’ll take,” Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If I’d known it would take that long, I would’ve let Sky-connecting Divine Tree refine the world spirit of Blue Dragon Void World first.”

“Refine it first? What if your body hasn’t been sanctified? Without a sanctified body, you can’t withstand Universe World. Once the Universe World is born, it’ll be exposed to the universe and be plundered by all the other worlds,” Blackie said.

Zhang Ruochen was very confident as he was certain he could sanctify his body.

Yet after hearing what Blackie said, he became more cautious and asked, “The universe is massive...is there any world just like Kunlun’s Field? If Kunlun’s Field is exposed, will it be plundered by other worlds?”

“Who knows?”

Even Blackie, who claimed to be a know-it-all, couldn’t handle a question like that.

Universe Spiritual Map was completely shut. Nobody could enter the Scroll World through the space door.

Blood Moon Ghost King didn’t leave Scroll World. According to Blackie, there were heaps of opportunities when Universe World was evolving, and it was the time when the rules of the world came into being.

Blood Moon Ghost King wanted to seize this chance to comprehend the rules of sky and land to improve her cultivation.

Blackie said, “When Universe World is stabilized, Blood Moon Ghost King’s cultivation will reach a whole new level.”

Without Blood Moon Ghost King, who was as powerful as a heaven-pass-realm saint, Zhang Ruochen had to delay many things he meant to do.

However, he was way weaker than Blood Moon Ghost King now, so he couldn’t order her to do anything.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to rely on other people. He also believed that he was only strong when he empowered himself.

I need to spend time improving my own cultivation, Zhang Ruochen thought.

After reaching the state of saint, Zhang Ruochen came into contact with different people, who were all standing among the top of the refining world. Everyone was renowned and revered.

He needed to be stronger to get along with them.

Blackie sighed and said, “Zhang Ruochen, Universe Spiritual Map is about to crumble. I need to find my real body, and you need to help me.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that most of what Blackie said was bluffing. Actually, it was only a device of Universe Spiritual Map, just like the dragon soul in Blue Dragon Emperor Print. It didn’t have the power to outclass everyone.

Once Universe Spiritual Map was broken, Blackie would lose its inhabitation. It would become a specter of a ghost, and it might die with the map.

Zhang Ruochen looked serious and said, “Finding your body? What does that mean?”

Blackie started to talk nonsense again. “I was called the king of slaughter, and I was powerful enough to suppress everyone in the same era. All the legends were nothing compared to me.

“Because of my cultivation, I did lots of stunning things, which infuriated Xu Mi and made him jealous. He thought I

stole his thunder, so he separated my body and my saint soul in a despicable way.

“My body is sealed in some ancient remains, and my saint soul is sealed in ‘Universe Spiritual Map.’”

Zhang Ruochen stroked his chin, as he found what Blackie said unbelievable. He said, “It’s been one-hundred-thousand years. Your body might’ve decomposed already. Do you need me to find you an extraordinary saint weapon to carry your saint soul?”

“No! I need to find my real body so that I can be almighty again. I’ll roam Kunlun’s Field like it’s never seen before.”

Blackie became ferocious, and it stood up, trampling on the ground with its claws, “I used to be invincible and indestructible. Even after one-hundred-thousand years, my body is still intact.”

“Then I’ll go with you no matter what,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“Don’t worry. I won’t let your efforts be in vain. There’s an incredible true treasure in the ancient remains that sealed my real body,” Blackie said.

“What true treasure?” Zhang Ruochen asked, but he didn’t take it seriously.

Blackie rolled its eyes and looked around. It lowered its voice and said, “Do you still remember Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower, one of the ten divine weapons in Kunlun’s Field?”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart skipped a beat, and he stared at the round cat eyes of Blackie.

“Are you serious?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Blackie had mentioned Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower before, and it took lots of energies to cultivate a monk who could operate such a divine device.

The cat was brilliant. If it didn’t know where Divine Dragon Sun and Moon Chaos Tower was, it wouldn’t say something like that out of nowhere.

The ten divine devices had been missing for a long time in Kunlun's Field and had become a mere legend.

If Zhang Ruochen could really find a divine device, he could intimidate everyone in Kunlun's Field.

"I swear to God it's true," Blackie raised its claws and said seriously.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Where are the ancient remains?"

Blackie hesitated a bit. This had to do with a divine device, so it didn't tell Zhang Ruochen. It smiled and said, "Then should we head to the ancient remains now?"

"No." Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, "I need to finish off the business with Blood God Sect first."

"Then there's no rush. I'll take you to the ancient remains myself later. You might've heard of them before."

Blackie said this on purpose, but it didn't say anything about where the ancient remains were.

Zhang Ruochen didn't ask any further questions, instead, he was thinking how to deal with the hierarch wife and Prince Xia from Huangtian Tribe.

If he could eradicate them both, the dangers facing Blood God Sect would also be gone. Other immortal vampire spies were all nobodies.

"Blood God Sect is definitely not able to fight the hierarch wife. Perhaps all five saint elders combined can't rival the hierarch wife. Besides, there might be someone who answers to the hierarch wife out of the five saint elders."

He needed to ask someone else for help.

Some people emerged in Zhang Ruochen's mind: Kong Lanyou, Ling Feiyu, Luo Xu and so on... Yet he vetoed them all.

If Zhang Ruochen asked them, they would definitely offer their help.

Zhang Ruochen took out the blood print saint decree Saint Lady gave him and held it in his hands. He murmured, "How

about asking the imperial government and Way of Confucius?”

The imperial government and Way of Confucius were the most powerful in the central region.

If he used the blood print saint decree of Saint Lady, it would be like Saint Lady arriving herself. She could mobilize an enormous power with her status in the imperial government and Way of Confucius.

Zhang Ruochen was worried that the imperial government and Way of Confucius might take this chance to annihilate Blood God Sect after getting rid of Prince Xia and the Hierarch wife.

Blood God Sect was one of the top-tier evil way powers. Although it didn't stand against the imperial government in a blatant way like Sacred Central Crypt, there were many conflicts between them.

The imperial government would definitely seize this chance to eliminate Blood God Sect.

“I can borrow the power from the imperial government and Way of Confucius first to get rid of that Prince Xia from Huangtian Tribe. As for the hierarch wife, I can give it some time.” Zhang Ruochen made a decision.

And then, he used his signal flare to send two messages to both Elder Yuanzhou and Huang Yanchen.

Elder Yuanzhou was the only trustworthy one out of the remaining five elders from Blood God Sect.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen told him that the hierarch wife was an immortal vampire spy right after he learned about it. He hoped that Elder Yuanzhou could be better prepared for everything coming.

Chapter 1194 - Meeting

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Blood God Sect sealed the mountain for a time to clear out the inside. Infiltrators were found in the Ten Heavenly Palaces, Elder Pavilion, and the four Discipline Kings' mansions.

The entire sect was overturned and blood flowed like rivers. Many pavilions, spiritual mountains and cave residences were destroyed.

However, this chaos didn't actually last too long. Things had already stabilized and order was recovering quickly.

Even with Elder Yuan Zhou and Yuan Xing's strong cultivations, they were still exhausted from these past few days. They were tensed at all times, fearing that something uncontrollable would happen.

Right now, they could finally breathe more easily. They rested in a small pavilion of the Elder Pavilion.

Elder Yuan Xing sighed. "Thankfully, the Deity cleared out most of the top figures of the Immortal Vampires. Otherwise, I have no clue how big the chaos would be. Hundreds of thousands of years of heritage might have ended."

Elder Yuan Zhou had interacted with Gu Linfeng before, so he was sure of the latter's abilities. He nodded. "No matter what, Discipline King Diyu has been killed, Yuan Gui and Yu Huacheng were driven out too. With the following cleanup, the Blood God Sect will definitely be revived and grow stronger."

Whoosh!

Just then, a communication rune flew in from the sky and stopped in the air above the pavilion.

Elder Yuan Zhou would receive many such runes every day. He didn't find it strange, so he reached out and grabbed. The rune crossed hundreds of feet to appear in his hand.

Seeing the content on it, Elder Yuan Zhou's eyes widened. A sharp aura poured out of him.

Elder Yuan Xing felt that something was wrong, so he asked, "What happened?"

Elder Yuan Zhou handed the rune to Elder Yuan Xing. Seeing the words on it, Elder Yuan Xing inhaled sharply. His eyes grew more and more serious.

Half a beat later, they let out a long sigh and started at each other.

"What do you think?" Elder Yuan Xing asked first.

Elder Yuan Zhou stood up and paced through the pavilion. "That Gu Linfeng always reveals such frightening information. If we hadn't found so many infiltrators, I really wouldn't believe this."

"What if the Hierarch Madame really is working for the Immortal Vampires?" Elder Yuan Xing asked.

Elder Yuan Zhou gradually calmed down. "Gu Linfeng is always flawless with his actions," he said gravely. "He rarely makes mistakes. Since he dares to send this to me, it must be true."

Elder Yuan Xing also nodded. "Back then, the Hierarch Madame was the most talented of us disciples. She also cultivated the most quickly. She'd been secluded in Mo You Valley for the past 300 years. I don't know what terrifying level her cultivation has reached."

The two Saint Elders finally realized something horrible. The Blood God Sect's crisis hadn't been resolved. The true boss was still hidden behind the curtains.

With the Hierarch Madame's wisdom and cultivation, who would be able to stop her if she attacked?

“Should we activate the Blood God Altar to destroy Mo You Valley?” Elder Yuan Zhou asked.

Other than the Blood God Mace, the sect had another extremely effective treasure. It was the Blood God Altar created by millions and millions of bones piled together.

It included the skeletons and saint souls of all of the past Hierarchs and grandmasters. It was horribly mighty. Once activated, it meant that the moment of life or death for the sect had arrived.

Elder Yuan Xing shook his head. “Not only will activating the Blood God Sect cost us greatly, it can also be activated only once per year. What if there are more huge changes this year? We shouldn’t activate it if we can help it.”

After discussing, Elder Yuan Xing and Yuan Zhou decided that Elder Yuan Zhou would personally guard the defensive formation. As long as he was careful, he could use the formation’s might to repress the Hierarch Madame.

“If she appears, use the formation directly to kill her. Do not speak with her.”

After saying that, Elder Yuan Xing left the Elder Pavilion to investigate everything about the Hierarch Madame. No matter what, he was still doubtful about Gu Linfeng’s information. He had to find evidence to prove the Hierarch Madame’s identity.

...

Huang Yanchen received Zhang Ruochen’s communication rune. She immediately left the Hidden Dragon Palace with Qing Mo and soon reunited with him.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Qing Mo and nodded. Since Elder Yuan Zhou could save Qing Mo, he thought, this means that he deserves to be trusted.

Huang Yanchen was already clear about the situation. A smile appeared on her snow-white and delicate face. “I didn’t think that you could be cruel to a beauty like Empress Moran. Didn’t you feel bad at all?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “Stop being jealous. We must work on the important task now. Can you help me do something?”

“What?” Huang Yanchen asked.

Zhang Ruochen took out the Saint Lady’s blood-printed saint decree and gave it to Huang Yanchen. “Bring this scroll to Zhou Mu of Tiantai State and tell him where Prince Xia of the Huangtian Tribe is hiding. Even if you don’t give him an order, I trust that he’ll know what to do.”

Huang Yanchen sensed the Saintly Way aura from the scroll and something strange entered her eyes. “The Saint Lady’s decree? It’s written in blood too. It seems that you have a deep relationship with this renowned Saint. I heard that seeing the blood-printed saint decree is like seeing the true person.”

Zhang Ruochen didn’t want to let Huang Yanchen know his relationship with the Saint Lady, but he couldn’t help it. He needed Huang Yanchen to do this.

Since it was exposed, he could only go with the flow. “I’ll tell you how I met her later,” he said. “Is that okay?”

“Of course.” Huang Yanchen seemed quite calm.

After that, Zhang Ruochen told her some other things. Then they separated again, hurrying in two opposite directions.

Huang Yanchen and Qing Mo headed toward Yunzhong City in Tiantai State. Zhang Ruochen and Blackie went to the Black Market’s headquarters in Tiantai State. Prince Xia and the strong cultivators of the Huangtian Tribe were waiting there.

The Black Market’s headquarters gathered cultivators of the Evil Way from all over. All sorts of people were here. It could be known as the capital of evil.

The Huangtian Tribe noticed this, so they’d come to hide here in the Black Market’s headquarters.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie hurried over first. Naturally, it was to check beforehand just how many cultivators from the Huangtian Tribe were there. This would make catching them easier.

“Elder Yuan Gui and Yu Huacheng, lord of the Disorder Heavenly Palace, must have escaped to here as well,” Blackie said. “They might have grouped with the Huangtian Tribe.”

The Huangtian Tribe was filled with strong figures. Elder Yuan Gui and the Disorder Heavenly Palace’s lord were both cruel figures too. With Zhang Ruochen’s current cultivation, he was far from able to counter them. It was extremely dangerous for him to head to the Black Market’s headquarters now.

However, he had no other choice.

“The Black Market and Immortal Vampires are enemies too,” Zhang Ruochen said. “We can send a message to the Black Market’s upper level and use their power against the Vampires.”

“Should we really do that? What if we alert the Vampires instead?” Blackie was worried.

“In the Black Market’s headquarters, their forces will naturally be the strongest. If they can fight against the Huangtian Tribe, it’ll be much easier for us. We must try, no matter what. Of course, we must find a suitable person to help us send the information to the various Saints.”

In the Blue Dragon Void World, the cultivators of the Black Market and imperial court had worked together for the dignity of the human race and kill the Immortal Vampires and beasts.

Thus, Zhang Ruochen believed that most of the evil Saints still wished to defeat the Vampires.

Zhang Ruochen and Blackie hurried down the road. They only used around half a day and could already see the silhouette of the huge black city on the horizon.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t change his features. He just shrouded himself with Spiritual Power. This way, those weaker than him wouldn’t be able to see his features and figure clearly.

He walked into the Black Market just like that.

“Seventh Street, Xingyun Mansion.”

The Hierarch Madame had told Zhang Ruochen this location before leaving Mo You Valley.

Right now, he'd come to the Seventh Street. He was ready to go meet Prince Xia as Gu Linfeng. He wondered just how powerful this prince was.

Since the Huangtian Blood Emperor sent him to meet with the Blood God Sect, he must not be a minor figure.

When Zhang Ruochen reached Xingyun Mansion, the door opened automatically before he even reported his name. Three figures walked out.

They were Elder Yuan Gui, Disorder Heavenly Palace lord Yu Huacheng, and an extremely beautiful and young woman standing between them. This woman had a very elegant aura. She walked gracefully too. This was Empress Huangtian whom Zhang Ruochen had fought with in the Blue Dragon Void World.

Empress Huangtian clearly knew that Gu Linfeng represented the Hierarch Madame, so she smiled. "Deity, we've been waiting. Please come in!"

Gu Linfeng had killed Saint Hongyuan, an infiltrator from the Huangtian Tribe, so he had some conflicts with them. However, he was now under the Hierarch Madame. He was working for the Immortal Vampires, so Empress Huangtian didn't mention it.

To her, taking down the Blood God Sect was the important matter.

Chapter 1195 - Tianluo Sect

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Soldiers were talking to soldiers while generals were talking to generals.

The hierarch wife sent Gu Linfeng to get in contact with Huangtian Tribe, so Huangtian Tribe sent a crown princess to talk with him. Both of them were important people of the young generation, and they had a great say in their teams.

Which was why Zhang Ruochen didn't get to meet Prince Xia.

That Prince Xia was a real force to be reckoned with.

After the interaction, Zhang Ruochen had a brief understanding of the powers Huangtian Tribe sent to the state of Tiantai.

According to Huangtian Crown Princess, they not only brought some of the top-tier great beings from the north, but also gathered some of the immortal vampire saints who had hid in the state of Tiantai for a long time. They had enough power to help the hierarch wife take control of Blood God Sect.

Most of the spies who had escaped Blood God Sect had returned to their true forms and gathered in Xingyun Mansion.

There was an immense number of great beings in Xingyun Mansion. It was a piece of cake for them to annihilate a sect.

Zhang Ruochen had been cautious the whole time.

After the negotiation, Zhang Ruochen said goodbye to Huangtian Crown Princess and left Xingyun Mansion.

He had already achieved what he wanted before. He had confirmed that many seniors from Huangtian Tribe were gathered here. He himself had already seen seven immortal vampire saints, and God knew how many more there were.

Carnivorous Holy Flower said, “So much nutrition. I really look forward to eating all the immortal vampire saints. After that, my cultivation will definitely be boosted.”

“You will have your chance,” Zhang Ruochen said.

There were wicked forces gathering in the black market headquarters, and evil was bred in the mud, which was why the rules of sky and land were a bit different. The sky was covered by dark clouds, and sunlight was not seen.

There were blue ghost lamps standing on the sides of the streets. The light was dimming.

Zhang Ruochen walked on the street by himself, thinking. Even if the imperial government and Way of Confucius come to Black Market Headquarters, they can’t mobilize an entire army. The best they can do is to send some powerful saints to encircle Prince Xia. I need the power of the black market to get rid of all the monks from Huangtian Tribe.

Black Market Headquarters was a sensitive area. Even if the imperial government sent a large group of armies here, the black market would fight the imperial government before dealing with the immortal vampires.

Just as Zhang Ruochen thought about how to send the message to the seniors of the black market, he sensed something. He looked around.

“Illusions.”

There was an illusion on the street, and Zhang Ruochen stepped into it.

However, that illusion wasn’t cleverly set. Zhang Ruochen saw through it easily.

Two guys and two girls stood at the four corners of the illusion. Each of them was holding a crystal, operating the illusion and trying to kill Zhang Ruochen with it.

“What? Four illusionists, who’re not even at level forty try to fight me?”

Zhang Ruochen found it amusing. After all, he was a mind power saint, standing at the top of the chain. Should he be revered by everyone?

Apparently, the four illusionists saw how young Zhang Ruochen was, and that he happened to be dressed like a rich kid, so they wanted to kill him and rob him of his wealth.

Many great beings of the evil way gathered in the Black Market Headquarters. Most of the wicked way powers had their headquarters established here.

There were no police, only the law of nature. Killings happened every day, and many people who came from prominent families lost their lives here.

The four people who manipulated the illusion were disciples from Tianluo Sect, one of the most prominent wicked way powers in the Black Market Headquarters. They not only practiced martial arts, but also practiced mind power and illusions. They had their fame in the state of Tiantai, and they were called ‘Wicked Four of Tianluo.’

The oldest one was called Lu Yi, and he was a level-three half saint. He was proficient in mind power and illusions.

Lu Yi was holding an illusion crystal, controlling the illusion. He said to Chen Shunan, who was standing at the southwest corner, “Third brother, that brat has been trapped in our illusion. Kill him.”

Chen Shunan looked skinny. He smiled wickedly, carrying a two-foot-long sword and trying to slash Zhang Ruochen.

“What a fool. He dares trespass in the black market headquarters by himself. How suicidal.”

Chen Shunan swirled his waist, and the sword hit toward the spine of Zhang Ruochen like a trace of blue light.

Peng.

To the surprise of the wicked four of Tianluo, the short blade made a clicking sound when hitting Zhang Ruochen’s body.

Chen Shunan felt that his fingers were going numb, as if his bones were about to be crushed.

It seemed that the sword had hit an iron wall instead of a human being.

Zhang Ruochen exclaimed, opened his arms, and invincible destruction Qi gushed out of his body, tumbling like waves.

Pi Pa.

The short blade disintegrated.

Peng.

The right arm of Chen Shunan exploded, and the bones turned into ashes. He lay on the floor and made blood-curdling screams.

The other three wicked ones were all shocked. They knew that they were facing someone powerful, so they immediately performed their body techniques and tried to run in three different directions.

“Lie down.”

Zhang Ruochen infused his voice with mind power.

Lu Yi, Wang Qianfang and Hua Xue heard the voice of Zhang Ruochen. Their bodies trembled as if they were hit by lightning.

Peng Peng.

All three wicked ones lay on the floor. Blood flowed out of their sensing organs. They stared at the young man standing on the street.

They were all half saints, yet they were powerless in front of that young man.

They couldn't even think of fighting back in front of a power like that.

He must be a saint. Because of his cultivation, he can stay young forever, Lu Yi thought.

Zhang Ruochen didn't strike them harshly, otherwise, they would've been long dead.

He spared their lives because he wanted to ask them some questions.

Lu Yi climbed up, kneeled on the ground and groveled, "Saint, we're just ignorant, and we're so sorry that we wronged you. Please spare our lives for the sake of our Tianluo Sect master."

Chen Shunan, Wang Qianfang and Hua Xue climbed up, kneeled in front of Zhang Ruochen and begged for his mercy.

Everyone else was nothing in front of a saint.

Only saints had the power to talk to other saints.

"Tianluo Sect," Zhang Ruochen murmured. He tried to recall that name.

Zhang Ruochen soon remembered it.

When Ling Yufei was injured and turned into Beauty Shi, Zhang Ruochen fought the great beings from Demonic Sect to take her away.

Wicked way saints from the black market tried to take a treasure from Zhang Ruochen. The master of Tianluo Sect, Yao Ji, was one of them.

Zhang Ruochen curled his lips and said, "Your master is called Yao Ji, a divine fox from the half-human race, isn't that right?"

"Yes."

They were all relieved knowing that the saint standing in front of them knew their master.

Since he knew their master, he would spare their lives for the sake of their master.

"I've been wanting to visit your Master Yao. Lead the way, could you?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"Umm..."

They all looked hesitant, as they didn't dare bring a saint back to their sect. What if he was an enemy of Tianluo Sect?

Lu Yi said, "It would be our honor for you to come visit Tianluo Sect. Perhaps you could tell us your name, and we'll

tell our sect master to prepare a welcoming ceremony for you.”

“That’s right! You deserve a great welcoming ceremony if you’re visiting Sect Tianluo,” Wang Qianfang said carefully.

Zhang Ruochen knew what they were thinking. He sneered, “I’m a confidant of Master Yao. If you don’t lead the way, then I’ll show no mercy to you.”

Great saint power emanated from Zhang Ruochen’s body, pressuring the wicked four from Tianluo. They almost fell on the ground.

At that moment, they realized that the young man in front of them was a saint, and there was no bargain.

Lu Yi, Wang Qinfang, Chen Shunan and Huaxue led the way in the front. Zhang Ruochen followed them with his eyes closed.

He walked while comprehending the saintly way, solidifying his level of second-trial pre-saint.

Yao Ji was a beautiful girl with three fox tails. She had transparent skin, and she looked like a fox angel.

“A confidant of mine?”

Yao Qiu received the message sent from Lu Yi. She looked suspicious, and several people emerged in her head. Those were all her confidants, but she wasn’t sure which one it was.

“Yi?”

Yao Ji felt the tumbling saintly power coming from outside the palace.

Peng. The bronze door opened, and the wind blew inside, whistling.

At the next moment, Yao Ji saw a young person standing in the center of the palace.

That young man stood there with his hands behind his back, and he looked dynamic. He was covered by blood Qi. She couldn’t see the true body of that person.

Chapter 1196 - Senior And Junior Brother Meeting

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

Yao Ji was sure that this wasn't a friend that had gone through life-or-death experiences together. Instead, he was unfriendly and may be a great enemy.

Three white fox tails flew out instantly. Like three white waterfalls, they passed through the room and hit the young figure standing below.

The three tails quickly tangled up, forming a murderous aura. Affected by the force, mysterious defensive runes appeared on the walls, pillars, and glass tiles in the building. They looked like thousands of chains of light.

The young man hummed softly.

Whoosh!

The Blood Qi surrounding him spun quickly, forming an expanding vortex.

The three fox tails crashed against the vortex of Blood Qi and ricocheted with a powerful force. Many white strands of hair fell off.

Yao Ji felt extreme pain from her tail. She shook her perky butt and bit her red lips. Leaving her seat, she charged into the vortex of Blood Qi, pointing forward.

Her finger seemed to be made from jade. It was slender and snowy white.

Sizzle.

Her finger carried extremely advanced Saintly Way power. Rings of fire formed around it, connecting into a long trail that stretched to the young man's forehead.

It pierced through the Blood Qi. Yao Ji finally saw the man's features clearly. It was Zhang Ruochen, the Time and Space Descendant.

“It's him...”

Yao Ji had fought Zhang Ruochen once before. She'd wanted to take his treasure, so she immediately guessed that Zhang Ruochen was here for revenge.

Zhang Ruochen smiled nonchalantly. He slammed forward with his right hand, attacking first and hitting Yao Ji's chest.

Thud!

All of Yao Ji's Holy Qi was scattered. She flew backward.

Zhang Ruochen's physical body had already become a Saint. Even without using Holy Qi, his palm was still impossible to bear for a lower Saint like Yao Ji.

Zhang Ruochen's hand pressed on Yao Ji's chest and flew out with her. He slammed her onto the palace's steps with a loud boom.

“Ah!”

Yao Ji spat out fresh blood. The steps below her caved in, fissures snaking out. Suffering from Zhang Ruochen's palm, she couldn't stand back up.

Zhang Ruochen collected his power. Walking up the steps, he moved to the uppermost seat of the palace. He sat down and said, “Long time no see. Sect Leader Yao, you haven't improved at all.”

Yao Ji climbed up from the ground. She supported herself with her hands. Like a beautiful fox, she looked up at Zhang Ruochen in both shock and anger. “Zhang Ruochen, what do you want?”

Zhang Ruochen's earlier power had been so strong that Yao Ji felt suffocated. How long had it been? Zhang Ruochen's

cultivation could not completely defeat her.

“Do you think I’m strong enough to destroy Tianluo Sect now?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yao Ji’s heart skipped a beat. Hurriedly putting away her anger, she lowered her stance. “What happened before was indeed my mistake. I shouldn’t have greedily attacked you. I apologize. Zhang Ruochen, you are a powerful man who will rule the world in the future. Please let a small sect like us go.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Yao Ji. His lips curled up. “Do you think I’ll forgive you just because you apologized?”

“What do you want?” Yao Ji asked. “You can take any treasure from Tianluo Sect if it meets your standards.”

Yao Ji was forced to bow down before an absolute power. If giving some treasures could resolve their conflict, it would be best.

Zhang Ruochen had a whole world and the Blue Dragon Dynasty’s national treasury. He possessed extremely rich resources. He really didn’t care for Tianluo Sect’s treasures.

Tapping on the table, he smiled and said, “What if I want you, Sect Leader?”

Yao Ji froze. Immediately after, a gentle smile appeared on her foxy face. Swaying her slender hips, she walked gracefully toward Zhang Ruochen. “It is my honor,” she said gently, “for the renowned Time and Space Descendant to notice a commoner like me.”

Yao Ji had cultivated for more than 300 years now, but she was still a lower Saint. It was possible that she’d never reach a higher state in her life.

It was different for Zhang Ruochen though. He’d already become a Saint at his young age. He’d risen up rapidly and had boundless potential. If Yao Ji could really become his woman, it would be a great opportunity for her.

“Sect Leader Yao, you’ve misunderstood me!” Zhang Ruochen’s voice was cold. “I’m not interested in your body. I

do need you to help me do something though. If you can complete it obediently, our past conflicts will be resolved.”

Yao Ji had no change in expression nor did she feel awkward. “What is it?” she asked.

Zhang Ruochen quickly told her about the strong figures of the Huangtian Tribe hiding in the Black Market’s headquarters.

Hearing this, Yao Ji’s expression grew serious. “Actually, the Shopkeeper told us a while ago that a large portion of the Huangtian Tribe is hurrying toward Tiantai State. He wants us to pay attention and report to him as soon as there is information.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that the so-called Shopkeeper was the leader of the Black Market in Tiantai. He was the top figure here. All the leaders of the Evil Way sects in Tiantai State had to listen to him.

You could say that he was the number one figure of the Evil Way in Tiantai State.

“What is the Black Market’s attitude toward the Immortal Vampires?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Yao Ji pointed up and said, “I heard that the uppermost level of the Black Market, the evil emperor in Huanyu Sky, ordered that all Immortal Vampires must be killed.”

Huanyu Sky was a sacred place of the Black Market. Other than Saints of the Evil Way, no one knew where it was.

Clearly, the evil emperor of Huanyu Sky wasn’t the same one as 800 years ago.

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Go! Go send the message to the Shopkeeper. I’d like to see what he will do next.”

After Yao Ji left, Zhang Ruochen didn’t stay in Tianluo Sect either. He left as well.

Basically, Zhang Ruochen was still worried about Yao Ji. What if she leaked information about him and led a group of Saints to defeat him?

Zhang Ruochen had to be careful.

Walking out of Tianluo Sect, he received a communication rune. Reading the content, he smiled. "Second Senior Brother is indeed fast. He's already at Tiantai State."

He ordered a room in an inn near Tianluo Sect. Then he sent a message to Second Senior Brother, telling him the location.

Zhu Hongtao, second disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, was 14 feet tall. He had a chubby face and an extremely wide girth. Wearing red pants and a green shirt, he waddled into the inn with his round belly hanging.

Wan Ke, third disciple of Sword Saint Xuanji, walked beside Zhu Hongtao. He seemed to be around 30 years old. He had a hairless face and sophisticated bearing. He smiled modestly at all times.

Thankfully, Wan Ke was beside Zhu Hongtao. Otherwise, the latter's fierce features would scare away even Evil Way cultivators.

The three brothers finally met. Zhu Hongtao and Wan Ke were extremely excited to see Zhang Ruochen.

"Sixth Junior Brother, you're still alive. How come you didn't come to find me all these years? When I received your message and saw that you're in trouble, Third Junior Brother and I hurried over to Tiantai State without stopping."

Zhu Hongtao looked angry, but he cared deeply about friends.

Wan Ke was still composed. Smiling, he said, "Sixth Junior Brother, I've heard about everything you've done. Other than Master, you're the one I appreciate the most now."

"Yes," Zhu Hongtao said. "I heard that you went to the netherworld to find the Pill of Reincarnation to bring Master back to life. We should've all gone together. How could you risk it by yourself?" he complained.

Wan Ke continued, "In the Blue Dragon Void World, you terrified the savage beasts and Immortal Vampires. According to the students of the Eastern Saint Academy, the beasts and Vampires all have to hide when you pass. No one dares to compete with you. If I hadn't reached the Saint Realm, I probably would've fought alongside you in the Void World."

“I heard that many humans owe you from the Blue Dragon Void World. They are so impressed and see you as the top figure of the next generation. Many younger cultivators worship you and want to learn from you.”

...

Zhu Hongtao and Wan Ke were both excited. They were proud to be Zhang Ruochen’s senior brothers. Every time other cultivators mentioned Zhang Ruochen’s name or said that he’d done another amazing thing, Zhu Hongtao and Wan Ke would immediately say, “He’s our junior brother.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that they were expressive. He was a bit embarrassed by their praises. Chuckling, he said, “We’ve finally reunited. Let’s sit down to talk!”

After that, the trio talked about many things. They discussed how Feng Han had poisoned Sword Saint Xuanji, causing him to die.

“So hateful! I always thought that Master was stronger than Sword Saint Jiuyou. How could he lose and die? I can’t believe it’s because of that traitor.”

“Now, the swordsmen in the east all think that Sword Saint Jiuyou is the top Sword Saint. They’re all going to Jiuyou City to study.”

“The disciples of Sword Saint Jiuyou are the worst. They always insult Master and praise Sword Saint Jiuyou. I must publicize the truth and let them know that the top Sword Saint of the eastern region is Xuanji, not Jiuyou.”

Zhu Hongtao was furious. With anger burning inside, he slammed his fist down on the table, shattering it with a boom. “Even if Feng Han is dead, I will make the Vampires pay,” he uttered. “I will go to the northern battlefields now. I will not return until I kill ten Immortal Vampire Saints.”

“Why go to the north to kill Immortal Vampires?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Chapter 1197 - Shopkeeper

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

“Why would you go to the north if you want immortal vampires?”

Wan Ke was very clever. After hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, he frowned and said, “Does the problem you’re having have to do with the immortal vampires?”

Zhang Ruochen then nodded and told them everything he knew.

He had absolute trust in his brothers, so there was nothing to hide.

“Okay! If there’re so many immortal vampires here, let’s go get them first!”

The sense of hostility gushing out of Zhu Hongtao solidified the air around him.

“No need to rush. Let’s wait for a while. There’ll be a great war in this evil city tonight. We’ll join the war later,” Zhang Ruochen said with a smile.

Zhang Ruochen received a message from Huang Yanchen after a short while. She had already left Yunzhong City and was heading back to the black market headquarters.

“Administrator Print and Yue Shuzi from the state of Tiantai have learned what happened here. They’ll take action soon,” Huang Yanchen said.

“Then let’s see the skills of the imperial government and the black market. Let’s drink.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his wine glass and drank with Zhu Hongtao, Wan Ke, and Huang Yanchen.

The city where the black market headquarters was located had dark clouds above it all the time. It looked like a ghost town from the netherworld. Those who couldn't tell time well had no sense of the difference between nighttime and daytime.

Prince Xia stood on the stairs in Xingyun Mansion, looking at the dark clouds from afar. He looked worried.

Huangtian Crown Princess was wearing golden armor, looking heroic. She asked, "What's wrong, uncle?"

"I can feel that something's happening," Prince Xia said.

"What's happening?" Huangtian Crown Princess asked.

"I can't say it for certain, but I can sense that a danger is drawing near," Prince Xia said.

The more powerful a creature was, the more sensitive its senses were, and the easier it became for it to sense dangers.

It was the ability of connecting saints. They would run away before the danger arrived.

The invisible danger made Prince Xia repressed. He had never felt this way before, which was why he gave an order. "All the monks from Huangtian Tribe, leave Xingyun Mansion now. We can't stay here anymore."

Prince Xia led Huangtian Crown Princess to leave Xingyun Mansion. However, the second they stepped through the door, they felt that a spinning power was upon them.

That power destroyed the rules of sky and land, turning the sky and land upside down.

"Destruction of Tianxuan."

Prince Xia was dazed. His cape waved. Weng. After that it emanated golden light that was shinier than the sun, disrupting that spinning power.

And then, Prince Xia grabbed the arms of Huangtian Crown Princess, and they retreated back to Xingyun Mansion.

Huangtian Crown Princess was very close to the state of saint, and she could rival a lower-class saint, yet she had still been injured by that spinning power just now.

Fortunately, Prince Xia was powerful enough to protect her, otherwise, she would've been torn into pieces.

“Who refined Destruction of Tianxuan to this level?”
Huangtian Crown Princess's heart pounded rapidly, and her legs couldn't help shaking.

Only monks who practiced ‘Tianxuan Demonic Heart Picture’ in ‘Heavenly Devil Stone Inscription’ could practice Destruction of Tianxuan.

Only a few monks in Kunlun's Field were able to destroy rules of sky and land and to turn them upside down.

Prince Xia looked at the streets outside.

“Da Da.”

A short and chubby old man walked out in the dark.

The old man was pretty well-dressed, with a golden-thread cape and a jade belt buckle. However, he was only five feet, three inches tall.

Two black-caped monks who were seven feet tall were following him. They were wearing caps, dragging their capes behind them. They wore golden masks, and appeared forceful.

Huangtian Crown Princess felt the two suffocating forces coming at them. She said, “Impressive. They're definitely top-tier great beings within the state of saint.”

“Those are two door gods from the black market headquarters of the state of Tiantai. Demonic Eye Saint and Ghost Claw Saint,” Prince Xia said.

“It's them. No wonder I feel so oppressed.”

Huangtian Crown Princess missed a heartbeat. She had heard of those two saints before as they were human powerful beings who had killed more than one other saint.

Prince Xia sneered and said, “They're not the real extraordinary ones. That shopkeeper is.”

Prince Xia pointed at the short and chubby old man walking in front of Demonic Eye Saint and Ghost Claw Saint.

The short and chubby elder seemed to sense something. He looked up and smiled kindly as if he had just met an old friend. He said, "Why didn't you tell me you came from state of Tiantai? I should've treated you like a real guest."

Prince Xia sneered and said, "You must've refined the fifteenth level of 'Tianxuan Demonic Heart Picture' already. No wonder you're favored by the Demonic Emperor. I've been wanting to see the real power of your Destruction of Tianxuan, but I've never gotten the chance."

"Here's your chance."

The Shopkeeper spun his arms as he spoke.

The pupils of Demonic Eye Saint became larger and larger, filling his entire eyes as if they were two black holes.

Hua.

Two black pillars gushed out of the eyes of Demonic Eye Saint, and lightning shuttled back and forth among the light pillars. They had terrifying tearing power.

In an instant, all the buildings along the street turned into dust. Even the defense formation couldn't resist that power.

Zhang Ruochen put his hands behind his back at the top of a thirteen-floor-tall black tower, looking at Xingyun Mansion. He saw two light pillars rushing forward, destroying everything. He was thrilled. "How powerful Demonic Eye Saint is."

Wan Ke looked serious and said, "Demonic Eye Saint and Ghost Claw Saint are the door gods of the black market headquarters in the state of Tiantai. They help the shopkeeper deal with all the issues in the evil way. Even the master of Tianluo Sect will salute them. They're certainly immensely powerful."

Huang Yanchen said, "The shopkeeper only brings two door gods, yet he dares go to Xingyun Mansion. He's definitely very confident in his power."

The guarding formation of Xingyun Mansion was opened. Crimson light pillars gushed out of the slates, walls, buildings, and ponds. They were connected with each other thirty feet above the ground, forming a half-oval light screen.

Hong Long.

The two traces of black pillars hit the guarding formation.

The ground outside the mansion cracked and started to sink. Xingyun Mansion was still standing there, emanating bloody light.

The shopkeeper looked at the broken land and got a bit worried.

He realized that he needed to end the fight as soon as possible, otherwise, it would be a huge loss to the black market headquarters.

“Activate Great Four Silence Formation and annihilate everything in Xingyun Mansion.” The shopkeeper transmitted his voice, which echoed in the sky and land.

All seventy-two formation towers were activated, releasing destructive and horrifying forces.

Clusters of heated clouds were formed at the top of each formation tower. All seventy-two fiery clouds hung in the sky. They were burning and permeating, tainting the dark city red.

“The Great Four Silence Formation was activated. What’s happening? Are the armies from the imperial government coming to attack us again?”

“All the seventy-two formation towers have been activated. Something major must be happening.”

...

The evil way monks in the black market headquarters had no idea what was going on. They were all in a panic.

The sect masters of the evil way powers were all very calm. They had known before what was going on, so they all performed their physical techniques and raced toward Xingyun Mansion.

Prince Xia knew the power of Great Four Silence Formation. Once the formation was completely activated, the monks from Huangtian Tribe would definitely be annihilated.

“We have no choice but to fight our way out.”

Three pairs of silver wings emerged on the back of Prince Xia. Each wing was more than sixty feet long, and it was as if they were made of silver, giving off a metal luster.

Prince Xia spread his wings, ascending to the sky with Huangtian Crown Princess like a light pillar.

The immortal vampire saints gathering in Xingyun Mansion also led teams of blood spirit guards to fight their way out of the city.

They tried to get out of the black market headquarters before the Great Four Silence Formation was completely activated.

“Do you really think you can run?”

The shopkeeper stared at Prince Xia and Huangtian Crown Princess flying in the sky. He spread his arms, and engravings emerged from a palm. Each engraving turned into mountains and rivers.

“Sky and Land Spin.”

In an instant, the space of one thousand square miles shook, and the sky and land were both turned upside down with the land becoming the sky and the sky becoming the land.

Prince Xia and Huangtian Crown Princess, who were flying out, were trapped in a huge whirlpool. They couldn't move at all.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes gleamed upon seeing this, and he recalled another space trick.

If he could refine that trick, he could spin the sky and land as well, and that transformation was more complete.

“Damn it, Destruction of Tianxuan again.”

Prince Xia was a bit upset. He glared at the shopkeeper down there, and then, he wielded holy power and hit the back of

Huangtian Crown Princess. He said, “Your highness, please go first. Go find Mr. Mu Qian. I’ll go fight that shopkeeper.”

Hua!

With the boost of holy power, Huangtian Crown Princess got several times faster and rushed out of the Great Four Silence Formation.

“Don’t you dare run!”

Zhang Ruochen was standing at the top of the thirteen-level black tower with his legs open. He took out Blue Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow. He drew the bow and aimed at Huangtian Crown Princess, who was flying in the sky.

Chapter 1198 - Three Strong Figures

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

The Clear Sky Bow and Shining Sun Arrow were both ultimate treasures of the Qingtian Tribe. Naturally, they were powerful. The more Holy Qi poured into them, the stronger the force that could be released.

In the ancient times, an emperor of the Qingtian Tribe had once used the bow to shoot down a star from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen combined his physical strength and Holy Qi. A blue light instantly flashed on the bow. It covered the entire region, making it look like a clear sky.

The long arrow was covered in rings of white light, like a bright sun.

The clear sky and shining sun phenomenon appeared.

Whoosh.

The blazing white sun flew out, shooting across the sky. It quickly caught up with Empress Huangtian up above.

“Shining Sun Arrow... Zhang Ruochen...”

Empress Huangtian looked back. With her fastest speed, she activated all the defensive treasures on her, forming 12 levels of shields to protect her.

Boom, boom.

The penetration ability of the Shining Sun Arrow was shocking. It could fend off a Saint's full-power defensive

shield. It passed through easily as if it was a thin piece of paper.

The arrow hit Empress Huangtian, setting off shocking energy waves. With a thud, she plummeted into the wilderness outside the city in the distance. It was unknown whether she was alive or not.

Seeing this, all the members of the Huangtian Tribe were furious. After all, she was the future Blood Emperor of the tribe.

If she was killed, then it would be because they didn't protect her well enough. The Huangtian Blood Emperor would definitely blame them. By then, they would all have to die.

“Looking for death.”

Prince Xia didn't expect that this would happen either. Golden flames spewed out of his eyes. Waving his hand, he went to attack Zhang Ruochen at the top of the tower.

Zhang Ruochen was very cautious. After shooting the arrow, he immediately used the Great Spatial Move and escaped to dozens of miles away.

As soon as he steadied himself, he heard an explosion from miles away.

The 13-level black tower was shattered by Prince Xia's palm force. Even the buildings around it collapsed, setting off a heavy cloud of dust.

The defensive formations under the Black Market's headquarters were all activated, but they still couldn't fend off Prince Xia's power. Hundreds of cultivators died from that hit. Countless were injured.

Prince Xia locked down on where Zhang Ruochen was. He pointed to attack again. This time, Prince Xia's speed surpassed Zhang Ruochen's escape speed. He was going to kill Zhang Ruochen.

“Prince Xia, I would like to meet you.”

A middle-aged man in an official's attire printed with a peacock stood in a humble chariot on the street. He stood up

tall and had a scholarly temperament. It was Yue Shuzi, the administrator of Tiantai State.

After receiving Huang Yanchen's news, Yue Shuzi and the other strong cultivators of the imperial court and Confucius Way secretly came to the Black Market. They waited for just this moment.

Yue Shuzi looked to be around 50 years old and was spirited. He held out two fingers and drew an abstruse image in the sky. The image flew out and shattered Prince Xia's force. Then it flew above his head and pressed down.

Yue Shuzi's appearance excited all the Evil Way cultivators in the Black Market.

The top figures of the imperial court and Evil Way had appeared at the same time. Usually, they would be overturning the world in a fight.

But today, they were working together against Prince Xia of the Huangtian Tribe.

At this moment, Prince Xia felt quite some pressure too.

Yue Shuzi and the Shopkeeper were both at the same level as him. Even if he couldn't defeat them, he could still escape easily if they were fighting one-on-one. However, he was facing them together now. He was at risk of dying.

Boom.

The battle between the three top figures set off immediately. The entire city was swept in. All the Evil Way cultivators escaped outward. They were afraid that they would die from the shockwaves if they were a bit too slow.

Prince Xia fought while retreating. He wanted to escape quickly.

"It seems that Prince Xia won't be able to flee today," Zhang Ruochen said.

If three Martial Saints of different abilities were fighting and two went to kill the other, it was possible that they would fail. However, Yue Shuzi and the Shopkeeper were able to stop the

opponent from fighting. One had shockingly strong Spiritual Power. The other was skilled in the Tianxuan Force.

It definitely wasn't easy to escape from these two.

Zhu Hongtao looked toward Xingyun Mansion. "The other Vampire Saints of the Huangtian Tribe are trying to break out. We'll go over and kill whoever we can."

He and Wan Ke flew over. They started fighting the Vampire Saints with the Saints of the Black Market and Immortal Vampires.

There were ten times more Black Market and imperial court Saints than the Immortal Vampires. No matter how powerful the Vampire Saints were, they would definitely be massacred today. It was extremely unlikely that they could escape.

Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the city to check whether Empress Huangtian was alive or not.

In the Blue Dragon Void World, Empress Huangtian was already in the top-tier level. It was evident just how terrifying her potential was. Once she became a Saint, she would definitely become a great enemy of the human race.

Killing Empress Huangtian was more significant than killing ten Vampire Saints.

A while later, Zhang Ruochen rushed into a forest and found where Empress Huangtian had landed.

A corner of the dark mountain there had caved in. The dirt within hundreds of feet was all scorched. Rubble was scattered all over. Chaotic Holy Qi surged in the air.

Whoosh!

A beam of white light flew out of the ground and landed in Zhang Ruochen's hand. It transformed into a translucent arrow.

The Shining Sun Arrow.

The tip was dyed red with blood.

"It surprisingly didn't kill her."

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power but didn't find Empress Huangtian's aura underground. It was disappointing, but Zhang Ruochen quickly accepted it.

As an empress of a tribe, she definitely had many levels of protection on her. With the saintly reinforcement from Prince Xia, it was normal that the arrow couldn't kill her.

Huang Yanchen hurried over. "She escaped?"

"She won't get far."

Zhang Ruochen released his Spiritual Power. It was like billions of spots of white light flying out. The lights worked with the Spiritual Qi and kept expanding outward 100 miles, 200 miles...

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was investigating thousands of miles away.

Nothing could hide from him wherever his Spiritual Power went. Even two ants fighting in their hill would appear clearly in his mind.

Zhang Ruochen's eyes flew open and looked in one direction. "She's pretty fast. She's already 2,300 miles away. She must have used a saint decree. I'll catch up to her and kill her."

With that, fire clouds appeared under his feet with a Luan bird and phoenix's apparition. He rushed out.

After turning his physical body into a Saint, even his running was shockingly speedy. He'd also combined the Luan Phoenix Deity Print Speed with his physical strength. Every step he made could shatter the earth and move him dozens of miles forward.

While hurrying, Zhang Ruochen would also use the Great Spatial Move when he amassed enough spatial power. Every move was also more than 100 miles.

Zhang Ruochen pushed his speed to the max. He didn't want to waste a single instant. With his crazy speed, he was comparable to a Saint in the Heaven Pass Realm.

The distance between him and Empress Huangtian kept decreasing. When he was within 1,000 miles, Zhang Ruochen

pulled the Clear Sky Bow back again and shot the arrow.

Empress Huangtian was badly hurt. The armor on her back was broken and blood kept flowing out. Sensing the power from the Shining Sun Arrow behind her, despair appeared on her face.

Even so, she didn't give up on trying to live. She plummeted.

Poof!

The arrow hit her right shoulder and ripped off her right arm and part of her body. Blood splattered through the sky. It was beautiful.

Empress Huangtian fell to the ground and struggled in pain. Not only had the Shining Sun Arrow hurt her, a destructive force had also invaded her body. It kept devouring her vitality.

A short while later, Zhang Ruochen caught up. He dropped from the sky and appeared near her.

Zhang Ruochen collected the Shining Sun Arrow before walking over. He didn't say anything extra and was ready to kill her with one palm.

Empress Huangtian was familiar with him. She knew how powerful and decisive Zhang Ruochen was. She probably couldn't survive today.

"You are an opponent that I fear," Empress Huangtian said coldly. "As long as you don't die, you will become a great emperor of the human race. I guess it's an honor to die by your hand."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were indifferent. He slammed down at Empress Huangtian's head with a palm.

Just then, he sensed something and looked toward the river in the distance. The flowing river actually flew up in the air.

The surging waters rushed down at Zhang Ruochen.

Crackle, crackle.

The meters-wide river twisted into a spear in the sky and turned into white crystal.

“Empress, Sir Mu Qian told me to come help you.”

One could vaguely see a man in a red robe across the river. He held a scepter pointed at Zhang Ruochen’s forehead.

If Zhang Ruochen let his palm fall, he could kill Empress Huangtian, but he would also be hit by the crystal spear. Even if he didn’t die, he would be badly hurt.

Zhang Ruochen turned his wrist. A dragon roared from his wrist.

Roar!

Thick flames grew out of his palm. His palm print changed direction and crashed against the incoming crystal spear.

Chapter 1199 - Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique

Translator:

Larbre Studio

Editor:

Larbre Studio

A river that was over a hundred feet long flew up and became an ice crystal spear, emanating cold forces.

That force trembled the sky and land.

The man wearing a blood-red cape sneered and said, “You dare try to ward off that strike with your palm. You’re being suicidal.”

The tip of the ice crystal spear was extremely sharp as if it could pierce through everything in the world.

Zhang Ruochen’s palm clashed with the ice crystal spear, making rumbling sounds.

An overwhelming power was transmitted through his palm, knocking Zhang Ruochen more than ten miles away.

“Break.”

Zhang Ruochen yelled and opened all his one hundred and forty-four apertures, emanating forces of a ferocious beast. He pushed forward.

Pi Pa.

The tip of the ice crystal spear started to crack, and it spread to the entire spear. It then disintegrated completely, and the pieces fell.

That bloody-caped man had walked to Huangtian Crown Princess. He took out a red pill and gave it to her.

She was using the power of the pill to resolve that of Shining Sun Arrow.

The bloody-caped man looked to Zhang Ruochen. He said, "It's rare for a human being to refine his body to the state of saint."

Savage beasts and immortal vampires had an innate advantage as they had powerful body constitution. It was relatively easy for them to sanctify their bodies.

Even so, it was still very difficult for savage beasts and immortal vampires to sanctify their bodies.

As for human beings, it was definitely shocking for someone to sanctify their body.

Zhang Ruochen walked forward and said, "It's also rare for an immortal vampire to have this level of mind power."

Zhang Ruochen had already figured out the mind power of that blood-red-caped man. His mind power was close to level fifty-two now. Even upper-class saints weren't his match.

"I can tell that you've just sanctified your body, and you only have a very shallow understanding of how to use your body's strength."

The man in the blood-red cape was insightful, and he thought that he had seen through Zhang Ruochen, and then he smiled. "My name is Tianluo. I'll fight you, human who has sanctified your body."

Mind power saints had mysterious abilities, and besides, Tianluo Saint was a mind power genius who had excellent control over his mind power. He wouldn't be scared of a human being who just sanctified his body.

Tianluo Saint wielded the scepter in his hand and stuck it in the ground.

And then, nine circular gullies emerged, centering on his feet.

Blood gushed out of the mud, filling the gullies. Those gullies looked like circular blood rivers.

The smallest blood river had a diameter of thirty feet.

The largest one had a diameter of thirty miles.

Nine bloody Qi light walls emerged from the nine circular blood rivers, surging to the sky.

Tianluo Saint performed mind power technique, which was called 'Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique.' It had great defense and attack power.

Tianluo Saint had to be cautious, as he was fighting a warrior whose body had been sanctified. If his opponent got close to him, he would definitely die.

Zhang Ruochen was trapped into the Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique. He sensed that the rules of sky and land became chaotic, and the ground under his feet felt like a swamp, which made it extremely difficult for him to walk.

Even if he performed great spatial move, he couldn't get close to Tianluo Saint.

In a valley close to this place, two immortal vampire monks wearing the same blood-red capes as Tianluo Saint looked on from afar.

One of them had a white star between their eyebrows.

The other one had a black star between their eyebrows.

The immortal vampire monk with a black star was Chen Yi, who was the eldest disciple of Sir Mu Qian.

Chen Yi looked calm. "Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique was a technique on 'Ten Thousand Laws Treasured Book.' Once someone's trapped, he won't be able to get out, even the Time and Space Descendant."

"Celestial way dictates that everything has its weaknesses, even the power of time and space. There're always techniques which can suppress them," the immortal vampire monk with a white star said.

She was Chen Xi, the second oldest disciple of Sir Mu Qian.

Chen Yi said, "Let's see how long Zhang Ruochen can last in Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique. Hopefully, he won't be too weak."

Chen Xi nodded and said, "The more powerful he is, the more valuable his blood is."

Zhang Ruochen released his space domain, covering the area of Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique, and gradually, he could stand still and tell the directions.

Hua!

A blood-armored giant fifteen feet tall showed up on his left, ascending from the blood river and holding a sword, slashing at the neck of Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen moved his body sideways and dodged it.

Hong Long.

The blood-armored giant hit the ground with his sword, digging a hole.

The sword wind attacked Zhang Ruochen, which stung.

"Such powerful mind power techniques. It's not a phantom, but a blood-armored giant as powerful as a lower-class saint." Zhang Ruochen was impressed.

Zhang Ruochen summoned Abyss Ancient Sword and swept toward the blood-armored giant, cutting it in half.

The blood-armored giant exploded, turning into a cluster of bloody mist.

Zhang Ruochen flicked his fingers, opening a space crack, which led to a layer of a bloody Qi light wall, dashing toward the center of the nine blood rivers.

Powerful creatures rushed out of the blood rivers, trying to stop Zhang Ruochen.

There was a blood-armored giant, a blood-red skull that was hundreds of feet tall, and snakes with four wings. The closer one was to the center, the more powerful the creatures were.

When Zhang Ruochen got to the eighth blood river, Tianluo Saint was already sweating, feeling pressured.

“No wonder he’s Time and Space Descendant. Even Nine River Forbidden Dragon Technique can’t suppress him.”

Tianluo Saint felt a grave danger coming, and his blood almost stopped flowing.

Zhang Ruochen, who was standing outside the eighth blood river, performed the technique of Human Sword, turning into a trace of sword light, piercing through two layers of bloody Qi light walls and showing up in front of Tianluo Saint.

“That is... Sword Six...”

Tianluo Saint’s heart pounded. He grabbed his scepter and yelled, “Gather!”

The nine circular blood rivers joined together quickly and gathered above the scepter, forming a shield and trying to ward off Zhang Ruochen’s attack.

The tip of Abyss Ancient Sword hit the center of the blood-red shield. It seemed that it was about to pierce through the shield and hit the eyebrows of Tianluo Saint.

Tianluo Saint clenched his teeth and looked to the front. He could see the sword tip getting closer, and his legs started to shake.

“How powerful Time and Space Descendant is.”

Chen Yi and Chen Xi both sensed the danger Tianluo Saint was facing. They knew that Time and Space Descendant might be too powerful for Tianluo Saint to resist.

They then rushed to the battlefield, using the power of wind and fire.

Zhang Ruochen could sense that there were saints coming toward him. He thought, “I can’t get trapped in this stalemate with Tianluo Saint anymore. If those two immortal vampire saints arrive, I’ll be at a huge disadvantage.”

Just when Tianluo Saint felt that he couldn’t resist it anymore, Zhang Ruochen retracted a part of his strength.

Tianluo Saint felt relieved. He thought Zhang Ruochen didn't have any power anymore. He wanted to seize this chance to fight back.

“You're not as powerful as I thought, Time and Space Descendant. Die!”

The blood-red cape worn by Tianluo Saint waved, and his mind power gushed out, filling the shield. He pressed forward.

Zhang Ruochen retreated, and meanwhile, he squinted his eyes.

“Son Sword.”

Abyss Ancient Sword merged with time print, pausing the time around it.

At this moment, Abyss Ancient Sword pierced through the shield print and stabbed the heart of Tianluo Saint.

Tianluo Saint panted, and his eyes popped. He found it unbelievable. He looked down. “How... How is it possible... What kind of sword technique is this...”

To mind power monks, hearts were more important than brains.

Once the saint heart was injured, most of the mind power would be gone.

Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint who rushed here also paused, and then, they yelled in anger and attacked Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen shot a glance behind him.

Hua!

The sword light blinked, and he wielded it dozens of times.

The body of Tianluo Saint was slashed into pieces like tofu.

A mind power saint was killed.

Zhang Ruochen reached out his palm and grabbed Huangtian Crown Princess, who was sitting on the ground with her legs crossed. He used her as a shield and yelled, “Stop!”

Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint had to retreat their mind power and controlled the techniques they had just wielded as

they were afraid that they might hurt Huangtian Crown Princess.

Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint had better mind power than Tianluo Saint, which gave Zhang Ruochen lots of pressure. He had to hold Huangtian Crown Princess captive to intimidate those two immortal vampire saints.

Chen Yi Saint sneered, “Do you really think you can save your life by capturing Crown Princess, our lady? You’re too naïve.”

“Are you saying that you can kill me before I kill your Huangtian Crown Princess?” Zhang Ruochen smiled.

“We’re not that strong yet, but you don’t stand a chance against our grand master.”

Chen Yi Saint and Chen Xi Saint stepped back in two directions and saluted the space. “Greetings, grand master.”

Chapter 1200 - Sir Mu Qian

Chapter 1200: Sir Mu Qian

Translator: Larbre Studio Editor: Larbre Studio

A red beam of electric light streaked through the sky. Countless dense electric currents solidified in the sky. The grassland between the mountains was turned to ash.

Even with Zhang Ruochen's spiritual mindset, he still felt depressed at that moment. It felt like the sky was about to fall down.

His face was shockingly pale.

Crackle, crackle.

Thousands of beams of electricity converged. A tall and thin elder appeared between Saint Chen Yi and Chen Xi. The elder's hair was all white and hung down to his knees. He was frail with jutting bones, but he wore a brilliant golden robe.

There were many eye-catching sun prints on his robe. Upon closer inspection, the sun prints were actually spinning. Each print seemed like a world.

This was Sir Mu Qian.

Saint Chen Yi and Chen Xi bowed once again and said in unison, "Greetings, Master."

Sir Mu Qian looked very spirited. He held a crystal scepter and stared at Zhang Ruochen with hawkish eyes. "The Buddha's sarira from eight hundred years ago is with you, correct?"

His voice was indifferent, but each word was like a hammer pounding into Zhang Ruochen. When he finished the sentence, Zhang Ruochen had already taken 19 steps back. Blood flowed from his lips.

Sir Mu Qian was a very strong Spiritual Power cultivator. To him, the thing that he wanted the most was the Buddha's

sarira. If he could have it, his Spiritual Power would improve vastly.

At his level, each improvement would cause extreme changes. His abilities would improve greatly too.

Zhang Ruochen's expression was cold. He didn't reveal any fear. "Indeed. The Buddha's sarira is in my spatial ring, but I can destroy the ring with just a thought. Do you want to gamble on whether you're faster than me?"

Sir Mu Qian furrowed his brows. He was confident that he could kill Zhang Ruochen before he destroyed the spatial ring, but he didn't dare take the risk.

What if an accident happened?

It would be difficult to find a second Buddha's sarira.

"Junior," Sir Mu Qian said. "How about we negotiate?"

"Describe it," Zhang Ruochen said.

"Give the Buddha's sarira and the Empress to me and I will let you go. How about it?" Sir Mu Qian said powerfully.

Zhang Ruochen was convinced. "Do you think I'm an idiot?" he scoffed. "If I give you the sarira and Empress Huangtian, how can I still live?"

While speaking, Zhang Ruochen secretly activated his Holy Qi and moved it toward the scroll that Taishang Elder had given him. He prepared to activate it.

The Taishang Elder was the tenth emperor from back then. His scroll definitely wouldn't be anything ordinary. It might help Zhang Ruochen escape.

Saint Chen Yi huffed coldly. "Blasphemy! Master is Sir Mu Qian, the Golden-robed Elder of the Immortal Temple. He will definitely keep his word. If he says that he'll let you go, he will not go back on his word."

The Immortal Temple was the highest center of power of the Immortal Vampires. It ruled over the ten major tribes under the name of god. It could even choose the candidates for the tribes' heirs.

Of course, when the Blood Empress rose up 1,000 years ago, royal power strengthened. The Immortal Temple's influence over the ten tribes reduced a lot. However, it was still very frightening. The Golden-robed Elder had the highest status.

Suddenly, Sir Mu Qian's eyes looked to the west and his lips curled up. "Junior, you lost your last chance when you didn't give in just now."

Zhang Ruochen also sensed something. He looked to the west.

Huang Yanchen flew down on a saint sword. She was like a sword goddess.

"You shouldn't have come." Zhang Ruochen sighed.

Before Sir Mu Qian had arrived, Zhang Ruochen had already sent a message to Huang Yanchen, telling her not to come and to immediately retreat. However, Huang Yanchen had still followed over.

She looked to the other side. "Did you really think that I'd leave you and flee?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled wryly and didn't reply.

Saint Chen Xi laughed. "Oh, it's Huang Yanchen, Zhang Ruochen's fiancée and one of the nine human Heirs. It seems like Zhang Ruochen will be forced to give in now."

Just then, Saint Chen Xi reached forward. The wind of a whirlpool surged from his palms and trapped Huang Yanchen.

Saint Chen Xi sneered. "Zhang Ruochen, hurry and hand the sarira to my master's hands right now."

Zhang Ruochen's eyes turned cold. "Are you threatening me? I advise you against it. Otherwise, you'll die a tragic death."

Smiling, Saint Chen Xi said with disdain, "Do you think I can't crush your fiancée into a cloud of blood with just a finger?"

Huang Yanchen stood in the center of the whirlpool. Instead of panicking, she said confidently, "You think you can kill me?"

Boom!

The Heir Stamp flew out. Releasing bombastic Emperor Qi, it transformed into a golden cloud and shattered the whirlpool.

After reaching the Saint Realm, Huang Yanchen could release even more power from the Heir Stamp. Even Saint Chen Xi with her 52nd level Spiritual Power couldn't restrain her.

"I heard that the Heir Stamp is the strongest treasure that Empress Chi Yao created. Each one contains boundless might. Now that I see it, it is indeed extraordinary."

Saint Chen Xi was a bit shocked. She didn't think a mere lower-level Saint could escape from her restraints.

"The Heir Stamp can't unleash its true power when held in the hands of you, junior. I should bring it back to the Immortal Temple and let it become the anchoring treasure."

"You speak so proudly. Do you really think that it's easy to steal the Heir Stamp?" Huang Yanchen scoffed. She didn't fear Sir Mu Qian at all.

Sir Mu Qian was naturally upset. Usually, even the Immortal Vampire Saints would bow in respect when they saw him. Today, two juniors appeared in a row and dared to not respect or fear him.

"Is it not easy?"

Sir Qian Mu smiled. He also raised his withered fingers and formed a claw. He would make these two juniors beg for salvation.

Just then, an ancient voice sounded behind Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen. "Of course not. At least, you have to get past me first."

"Who is it?" Sir Qian Mu was slightly shocked. Someone had been hiding nearby and he hadn't even noticed.

How could this happen?

Could the man really fool his spiritual sensory?

A Confucius elder with hair that was half-white and half-black walked out slowly. It was Chu Siyuan, sect leader of the Art Sect.

Seeing him, Zhang Ruochen let out a breath. It's this old poor guy who loves to show off who's come to Tiantai State.

Chu Siyuan was bent on justice and thought Zhang Ruochen was going down the wrong path, so he wanted to bring him back to the right way. This truly annoyed Zhang Ruochen. However, this guy's abilities were immeasurable. He was definitely a top figure of the Confucius Way and may possibly defeat Sir Mu Qian.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Huang Yanchen and saw that she wasn't surprised at all. She seemed to know that Chu Siyuan had been nearby.

Sensing his eyes, Huang Yanchen batted her lashes and sent a message. "When I brought the Saint Lady's blood-print saint decree to Yunzhong City, Sect Leader Chu happened to be visiting. He also learned about the Black Market's headquarters and hurried over long ago. When you told me to leave, I immediately notified him and told him to come."

"I see." Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Chu Siyuan was prejudiced against Zhang Ruochen. Huffing, he said, "What did you think? If you aren't going against the Immortal Vampires, I would've taught you a lesson first."

In the Emperor Ming City, Zhang Ruochen had tricked Chu Siyuan. The man was still upset.

Zhang Ruochen shrugged and smiled. "Senior, let's face the enemies first and then talk about the past, alright?"

Chu Siyuan turned to face Sir Mu Qian with disdain in his eyes. "Golden-robed Elder of the Immortal Temple, why are you messing with two kids? Do you have the abilities to fight against me?"

Sir Mu Qian already guessed Chu Siyuan's identity. Fear filled his eyes, but he scoffed. "Oh, it's the Art Saint. You indeed have a strong aura."

Chu Siyuan said calmly, "I looked at the stars last night and predicted that you would come to Tiantai State. I was going to send a disciple against you, but he went to take care of Prince

Xia of the Huangtian Tribe instead. I was forced to come personally.”

Chu Siyuan frowned, thinking that Chu Siyuan was too cocky. He should just fight instead of wasting time talking. Plus, each sentence he said was complimenting himself and insulting the enemy. What if he lost later?

He would be so embarrassed.

Sir Mu Qian was even more furious, thinking that Chu Siyuan was crazy and arrogant for looking down on him.

Chu Siyuan obviously couldn't tell that everyone present was upset with him. He continued to drawl lazily. “I really didn't want to attack personally, but there was no other way. To be honest, my disciples are all throughout the world. There are at least three who can fight against you. Unfortunately, two of them aren't in Tiantai State.”

As he spoke, he even stuck up three fingers to show Sir Mu Qian. He seemed to be a big deal.